



BATTLE EMPEROR

BOOK 1

Ao tian Wu Hen

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Battle Emperor

(战皇)

by

Ao Tian Wu Hen

(傲天无痕)

Synopsis

Freak Xie Aoyu originally had no way of cultivating battle qi but with accidents, he got a mysterious godly pellet and he received a supreme emperor blade.

That changed his destiny and from then on, he felt the real meaning of life and he made original time-related battle skills, space-related battle skills and decisively battled ancient, huge clans and hundreds of continental clans in the Qi Ao continent.

Clouds formed with a flip of a hand and rain formed with another flip.

He left the strongest mark in tens of thousands of years of history and created glorious chapters about a tyrant's anger, blood shed for thousands of miles, the skies hissing from mad blades, and the allegiance acknowledgement of all times.

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Monk, Mirnouch @ [Noob Translation](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1: Freak Xie Aoyu

As the sun set in the west, Xie Aoyu laid on the ground of the Wolf Ivory Summit. His head was supported by both of his hands and he was holding a strand of soft grass in his mouth. He had one leg over the other as he looked at the burning clouds in the sky

“Pah!”

He spit out the grass in his mouth.

“Am I, Xie Aoyu, going to be useless all my life?” Xie Aoyu muttered to himself.

Bearing the halo of being the son of the #1 expert in Langya City, Xie Gan, Xie Aoyu received the attention of countless gazes since he was young. The moment he was born, there were experts of the Xie family who looked at his physique, or his innate cultivating talent.

The result was absolutely stunning.

His physique was good, his cultivating talent was high. It was a lot better than Xie Gan's. With that, the entire Xie family put their thoughts onto his body and made him the hope of the entire Xie family.

But the heavens did not follow what people wished.

When he was 7 years old, he started to cultivate. From then, Xie Aoyu experienced blow after blow. His cultivation was the most painful and the family used the most amount of medicine on him. However, when others cultivated battle qi in one year, what about him?

Up until today, he was 16 years old but he could not cultivate a single trace of battle qi.

Because of that, when he was 10 years old, Xie Han went everywhere in the Qi Ao continent and paid visits to famous masters with hope that they could find the root of Xie Aoyu's special physique.

The result was disappointing.

No matter who it was, be it the so-called first-rate, Emperor level expert in the entire continent or the most mystical medicine masters, all of them determined that Xie Aoyu's physique and cultivation talent were the best of the best. Even some Emperor level experts said that if he could cultivate battle qi, he should be able to reach the Emperor level.

But it was in vain. No matter which methods were used, Xie Aoyu had no way of cultivating battle qi.

With that, Xie Aoyu was called a "freak".

Did he really need to give up? Xie Aoyu was quite upset in his

heart. When he was young, he dreamt of being a person like this father, Xie Gan, who stood on the peak of the martial path. Even if he suffered from countless blows, he did not give up. He trained everyday. Crazy trained. His body was trained to the point where other strong warriors would be jealous of him, yet he did not have a trace of battle qi.

Looking at the descending sun, Xie Aoyu rose up and left with slight disappointment.

ding ding ding

Just as he walked to the halfway point of the Wolf Ivory Mountain, he heard the collision of weapons and yelling sounds were even mixed in.

Because he did not have battle qi, Xie Aoyu deeply knew that if the strength of a battling person was too high, their battle qi ripples could kill him. So, he quickly found a place to hide.

He dashed and hid behind a mountain rock.

Just as he hid, he heard a painful cry and Xie Aoyu raised his head to look. While a middle-aged man was running towards him, he was stabbed through the chest by a sword from behind and he heavily fell on the ground.

The person behind him was roughly panting and he ran while having injuries all over his body. He did not take his sword back.

He stretched his hand to search the man, seemingly trying to find something. As he rummaged around, suddenly, his face expressed joy as he took out a fine little box from the fallen man's pockets. It was just that it was covered with blood, "Haha, I finally found..."

poof

A sharp dagger stabbed into that person's chest. The fallen man said while vomiting blood, "Even...Even if I die...I...I will...pull you down with me."

bang

The man who had a dagger in his heart loosened his hand and the little box fell on the ground

The box opened. A dazzling, purple, golden, and green ball rolled out. It emitted strong fragrance and seeing that the two people already died, Xie Aoyu picked up the ball.

Even under the strong smell of blood from the two corpses, the ball still emitted strong fragrance. It covered all the smell around him.

"What a good smell." Xie Aoyu put it in front of nose and sniffed it.

When the 3-coloured ball touched his lips, it instantly melted and formed into clear, tiny stream and it entered his throat.

Xie Aoyu was greatly shocked. He quickly tried to throw it up. After all, he could not determine whether it was poisonous or not since there were many things that had poison and also that smelt good.

However, after throwing up for a while by sticking his fingers in his throat, it did not come out.

Also, he clearly felt that the stream diluted after it entered his throat. It formed into countless more streams and it flowed throughout his body, making him feel incomparable comfort. At the end, a stream gathered in the left area under his chest.

Xie Aoyu pushed his clothes aside to take a look, but everything was normal on the surface.

After moving around for a while, there was nothing wrong.

He checked the two corpses, but they had nothing on them. They didn't even have any storage equipment like Spatial Rings. The only thing that attracted his attention was on the left wrist of the two people, there was a pattern of a white tiger rising in the air. It was quite vivid and lifelike. At first glance, it really did look like it was real.

Xie Aoyu muttered a bit and left with questions. He did not want to stay there because he did not know if he had comrades that were going to come, so he just left the corpses alone.

After he entered the Langya City, a dozen or so people appeared in front of the two corpses.

One of them was wearing golden-coloured clothing. Without any expression, that male picked up the empty little box and said, “Search!”

The people behind him immediately started to search.

They searched for many times there and they almost overturned everything.

“Lord, there’s nothing.”

The facial muscles of the male who was golden-coloured clothed twitched, “Catch all the people and beasts nearby the Wolf Ivory Mountain. Search them all. If it cannot be found...” Speaking to that point, he suddenly paused, “If it cannot be found, don’t think of leaving here alive.”

Those people shivered and searched again.

The golden-coloured clothed male looked at the Langya City which was at a distance as a light breeze swept by. On his left wrist, there was also the pattern of a soaring white tiger, “I hope the lord won’t kill me because I have hope to rush towards the Emperor level.”

As they searched, the Xie Aoyu who already ate the 3-coloured ball entered Langya City.

After stepping into Langya City, Xie Aoyu felt uneasy everywhere.

If one were asked who was the most famous person in Langya City, without a doubt, it wasn't the #1 expert in Langya City, Xie Gan, nor the lord of the city, nor the absolute beauty and outstanding medicine master, Ziyan. It was the freak, Xie Aoyu.

He had incomparable talent, naturally wide meridian channels, virtually no impurities that prevented cultivation, yet he could not create battle qi. In addition to the halo of being the son of the #1 expert in Langya City, even if he did not want to be noticed by others, it was extremely difficult. So, when he walked on the road, Xie Aoyu always felt that people used strange gazes to look at him.

“Ahh, screw them. I, Xie Aoyu, am a man. Why would I care about the looks of others?” Xie Aoyu comforted himself in his heart.

But at the bottom of his heart, strong bitterness surged out.

He did not want to give up just like that.

“Isn't this our Xie family's infamous, well-known, super genius?” An eccentric voice came from behind.

Xie Aoyu frowned and ignored it. He continued forward.

A person quickly caught up to him and stopped in front of Xie Aoyu. He blocked his path while spreading his arms, “Big genius Xie, no need to go so fast. Did you not hear young master Zhe call you?”

Xie Aoyu hiddenly sighed. The first person who spoke was called Xie Zhe. He was the only son of one of the 4 elders in the Xie family, Xie Kun. He was always Xie Aoyu’s nemesis and it always seemed that he didn’t like to look at Xie Aoyu. The person who blocked his path was Xie Kun’s henchmen, or he could be counted as his dog. A distant relative of the Xie family called Xie Gang.

“Big genius Xie, why are you running away so fast? Why don’t you give us trash a chance to make favours for you?” Xie Zhe fakely smiled while walking in front of Xie Aoyu.

“What do you want.” Xie Aoyu coldly said.

Xie Zhe smiled and said, “It’s not much, but I’m lacking money recently. Big genius Xie, lend me some money.”

“Have none.” After Xie Aoyu said that, he took a step and wanted to leave.

“Mm?” A smear of coldness flashed into Xie Zhe’s eyes.

Xie Gang extended his arm to stop Xie Aoyu’s path, “Big genius

Xie, if you don't lend us any money, I'm afraid that you will be very uncomfortable!"

Xie Aoyu was enraged and he tightly clenched his fist.

"What. You want to fight? Ha! Big genius Xie, with just you, you really aren't even qualified to even touch us." Xie Zhe curled his lips while he said mockingly. He extended one finger, "Do you believe that I can jab a trash like you to death with just one finger? You, who can't even cultivate battle qi?"

The anger of the humiliated Xie Aoyu flared.

Chapter 2: Water Of The Holy Spirit

Looking at the angry face of Xie Aoyu, Xie Zhe and Xie Gang couldn't help but laugh.

Excluding Xie Aoyu, these two could be said to be among the weakest. They have been cultivating for 5 to 6 years but haven't gotten past the basic Elementary level. They rank among the lowest.

So these two, in order to feel superior, pick on the freak who was unable to cultivate battle chi, Xie Aoyu.

“Want to hit me? Come! Hit me! Right here.” Shouted Xie Zhe as he grabbed Xie Aoyu's fist and placed it in front of his nose.

Xie Aoyu clasped his fist tightly.

He felt all his strength flow into his fists.

“Hit me! Come on, hit me!” Xie Zhe taunted.

Xie Aoyu tried to tolerate it!

In the end, it was more than Xie Aoyu could tolerate.

“Xie Zhe, Xie Gang, What are you two doing?” At that moment, a clear and crisp voice rang out. A slim figure appeared in front of

the three.

She had flowing black hair, a slightly blushed oval face, beautiful eyes and a shapely nose. She was indeed beautiful.

After seeing this girl, the arrogant Xie Zhe and Xie Gang immediately lowered their heads... They couldn't afford to offend her. She had cultivated to the advanced Elementary level which was two realms higher than their cultivation.

"A pretty boy who can only rely on women. I can't wait for the opportunity to see her lecture you." Xie Gang whispered. Facing the girl with a smile, "Bing Wu, we were just messing around with Xie Aoyu. Haha, well I still have stuff to do. I'll be off."

"Hey! Did I say you can leave?" Bing Wu screamed like a firecracker whilst putting her hands on her waist.

Xie Aoyu was a typical male. He couldn't allow Bing Wu to protect him. He also believed that if he continued to practice, with physical strength alone, he could beat Xie Zhe and Xie Gang, who were only at the basic Elementary level.

As such, he waved off Bing Wu. "Forget about it, Bing Wu. You already know what kind of bastards these two are."

Looking at Bing Wu, he smiled and asked, "Why did you come?"

Looking at Xie Aoyu, her stern cold demeanor started to melt. Laughing she said "I can't just come to see you?" She then said

excitedly. “I came to tell you some good news!”

“What kind of news would cause you to be this happy?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“A high-ranking person is on the way here to accept me as an apprentice.” Bing Wu said happily.

Xie Aoyu asked, “Who?”

Bing Wu laughing said. “You... Lan... Ruo!”

“Butterfly Queen You Lan Ruo!” exclaimed Xie Aoyu.

Bing Wu excitedly nodded her head.

Although unbelievable, looking at Bing Wu’s appearance, there is no way it is a joke. So Xie Aoyu felt both bitter and happy. Bitter about himself but even more-so, happy for Bing Wu.

Who didn’t know about this marvelous woman of the Qi Ao continent? The one called Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo? This blessed young fireball, the 7-colors butterfly was none other than an Emperor level beast. She appeared over 10 years ago. When she first appeared she joined the 10 year Continental Youth competition. Beating all the competition with a sword in hand. [\[1\]](#)

Afterwards, You Lan Ruo went and challenged every expert in

the four corners. she traversed nearly the entire Qi Ao continent, challenging any expert under the age of 30. Even those who were 30 at the time she fought. She reached a level second only to the Emperor level, the Sage rank.

“Why would she come to this out of way place?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“From what the master said, she is looking for a few things that will help her cultivation.” Bing Wu excitedly said, “Master said, me staying here is a waste of talent. If she would be willing to teach me, then I could most definitely reach the Spirit level and not just be in the advanced Elementary level.

Amazed, Xie Aoyu said, “It appears that Bing Wu will soon become the 2nd Butterfly Queen. Heh!”

Bing Wu’s excitement faded and she said, “I asked master about your situation... He said that uncle already asked her and she can’t do anything about it.”

“This, I know.” Xie Aoyu laughed and thought, she is most definitely that Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo. Xie Qian asking You Lan Ruo to check on my situation would be a secret.

The two spoke as they returned to home.

They entered the household of the 6 elders.

Xie Aoyu’s father Xie Qian is a Xie elder. Some time ago, the city

of Lang Ye had 3 major clans. The Xie clan was one of them. When Xie Qian became an elder, he also destroyed the other two clans. So now, Lang Ye City only has one major clan remaining. But because he was solely interested in cultivating, he had no interest in claiming the clan head position... so he let his older [half-brother](#) be the clan head.

Upon entering the household, they were enveloped in faint aroma of herbs.

The happy-go-lucky Xie Aoyu suddenly became very solemn upon seeing his father in the bed. In his heart he had mixed feelings.

When he thinks about his father becoming comatose so young. The father who raised him, who in his younger years possessed incredible strength... who would think that after 3 years he would suddenly fall unconscious.

3 years ago, Xie Qian's body was like anybody else's, but then he fell into a coma.

“Dad.” Xie Aoyu looked at his father who appeared to be merely sleeping. Heart full of dissatisfaction. He hated himself. If he were capable of cultivating battle chi, then he would be able to cultivate a lot of strength. He could then scour the continent for someone to treat his father.

Whenever he thought this, Xie Aoyu's heart would tremble.

He secretly swore to himself, even if he can't cultivate battle chi, he would temper his body. He would train his body to be able to fight against those who could cultivate battle chi.

thump, thump, thump...

Hurried footsteps could be heard from outside.

Xie Aoyu and Bing Wu looked up and saw the clan leader Xie Lian fidgeting happily while entering from the outside. An excitement never seen on the clan head's face was shown.

"Ao Yu come here. Excellent." Xie Lian said.

"Uncle?" Xie Aoyu looked at his uncle face filled with wonder. He has never seen his uncle Xie Tian like this, due to being the clan head and needing to be poised and dignified.

Xie Lian with a quivering voice said, "Do you still remember what master Ziyan said could awaken your father?"

Xi Ao Yu nodded, "I remember. Master Ziyan said that the only way to awaken father is to give him the legendary Water of the Holy Spirit. There is no other way."

"Correct. And I received news just now. The 10 year Continental Youth Competition's awards have been announced, and among them is the Water of the Holy Spirit!" Xie Lian said.

“What?!”

Xie Aoyu suddenly got up.

He simple couldn't believe what he was hearing. The reward for winning the Continental Youth Competition is the Water of the Holy Spirit. It is one of the most miraculous objects in existence.

“It's absolutely certain. In accordance with the Continental Youth Competition regulations, in order to allow(entice) every young expert into the competition. It is commonplace to announce the rewards two years in advance. I was able to learn this from the castle. Haha. With this, my younger brother can finally wake up.” Xie Lian said excitedly.

Despite all that, Xie Aoyu wasn't happy. In fact, he was thoroughly disappointed because he couldn't cultivate battle chi.

“Ao Yu. Don't forget that our Bing Wu is going to be the Butterfly Queen's apprentice. She was also a champion of the competition once; and is now among one of the most popular and famous experts.

Bing Wu raising her fist said, “I will work hard to do it!”

Watching Bing Wu's determination, Xie Aoyu's heart was touched. If even Bing Wu can do it, Why can't he? He is a man!

Men shouldn't say they can't!

“Ao Yu. If I were to obtain the Water of the Holy Spirit, How do you plan to thank me?” Bing Wu asked the perplexed Xie Aoyu. She was trying to change his mood knowing he was considering his inability to cultivate battle chi.

Xie Aoyu reverting back to his normal happy-go-lucky mindset said, “Ah... then I will marry you.”

“Haha, well, I bear witness then.” Xie Lian said with a laugh.

Bing Wu blushed and stomped angrily then said, “I’m ignoring you both!” She then turned around and was heading outside. At the doorway, she turned her head and said, “I will go look for master and practice.”

Xie Tian smiled, “It’s been great news today. I will go get a drink. Ao Yu. How about you come and accompany me.”

“No. I want to stay and talk with father for a bit.” Xie Aoyu said.

Xie Tian said, “Okay.” Then left.

Xie Aoyu knelt by the bed, looking at his father’s peaceful face. He then vowed, “Father, your child swears he will definitely obtain the Water of the Holy Spirit!” After speaking he got up and left. He was heading towards Mt. Hou.

Whether it was because of Xie Qian's previous contributions or his relationship with the current clan head, Xie Qian was constantly looked after. Xie Aoyu did not have to worry when he wasn't around nor did he have to worry about how they treated his father.

Mt. Hou was the place where Xie Qian used to train.

The other Xie family members practiced in the martial-arts arena or in the cultivation room. But because Xie Qian was too strong, his strength exceeded the next strongest Xie member over 5 steps, whenever he cultivated battle chi, it was easy for him to influence the others.

so ever since Xie Qian went into a coma, the Hou mountain became a desolate place.

Xie Ao Yo came to the Hou mountain. He once again was unable to restrain himself. Screaming, "I, Xie Aoyu, will never give up! I WILL become an expert. I will surely become one!" Raging, Xie Aoyu punched a tree with his fist that was a meter thick.

Crack

The cracking sounds kept coming.

He looked up and was flabbergasted.

He destroyed the meter thick tree with a single punch from his fist.

[1] [TL: Honestly this paragraph had me scratching my head forever... I can't say the translation is even half right.. but it sorta makes sense this way... sorry in advance if its wrong. My biggest worry is calling her a demon... I can't tell if it is the case or not.]

[2] (same father, diff mothers)

Chapter 3: Inconceivable Change

Staring blankly at the large broken tree, Xie Aoyu couldn't believe it. He reached out and felt it to determine if it really had been broken.

Even doing that, he couldn't believe the result.

Although he trained his body, he was well aware that his current strength couldn't even surpass those basic Elementary levels of Xie Zhe. It much less couldn't destroy such a large tree so easily. He went in front of another tree.

This tree also had almost a meter of thickness.

Prior to punching, Xie Aoyu first thoroughly inspected the large tree. After determining that was intact and in excellent condition, he then punched. This punch also didn't contain all of his strength... at most it contained about half.

His fist shot out.

Bam

That tree shook violently.

Immediately after he looked at the spot where his fist impacted. That spot emitted a creaking sound then suddenly the tree snapped

as well. Xie Aoyu looked at his fist.

“How the heck? How the hell!?” Xie Aoyu was extremely surprised. “Could it be that tri-color ball?”

He carefully studied his memories.

Concerning what happened this afternoon. He first went to the Langya mountains. During his training there his strength was far from reaching this level of power. Furthermore since leaving the Langya mountains the only thing that changed was that tri-colored ball.

Both Xie Aoyu’s eyes grew big.

A torrent of happiness erupted.

Power, this is pure unadulterated physical power!

Xie Aoyu then ran to a large boulder that was about 500-600 jin. If it were like in the past, he would not be able to move it, only shift it a little.

He was filled with part hope and part doubt, and a tinge of worry.

He stretched out his hands towards the nearly 600 jin boulder and applied some force.

Gululu

That stone was unexpectedly being pushed by him and started to roll.

Xie Aoyu then chased after the boulder and grabbed it. Exerting himself, it resulted in him unexpectedly raising the boulder above his head! Furthermore, what startled him greatly was that it felt like he was only lifting several dozen jin of weight. ** With a situation like this how couldn't he be amazed. [\[1\]](#)

After his excitement faded, Xie Aoyu thought, "It had to be that tri-colored ball that gave me such strength."

Looking around.

He found a larger boulder over 700 jin that he could use to test his strength, so he went to it to perform some tests.

The result was that it was still easy to lift.

Xie Aoyu's eyes shone with excitement, "Maybe I should try the Thunder God Body Smelting technique again?"

Thinking about that Thunder God Body Smelting technique caused Xie Aoyu to be filled with excitement and some worry. The Thunder God Body Smelting technique was developed by a friend of Xie Qian. Nearing his death, he didn't want to take his skill to

grave and gave it to Xie Qian.

This body smelting technique developed by his friend could be said to be extremely effective. So, in the past, the Xie Family wanted to practice it. Except that the scroll was extremely hard to open and no one knew why. Finally, they learned that the scroll was made so that it would test if the individual was capable of cultivating in the secret method. and aside from Xie Qian, no one had been able to open it.

Xie Aoyu also tried to open it once, he failed.

But now, after discovering all the changes in his body, he naturally wanted to once again give it a test. So he went and entered the Xie family's battle Qi cultivation chamber.

Most of the Battle Qi cultivation methods in the cultivation chamber were obtained by Xie Qian. Some were obtained from killing people, others as gifts from other people, and even some by luck.

There were also very many Body Smelting Techniques included here.

The village Elder who was guarding the battle Qi cultivation chamber let Xie Aoyu pass unobstructed. In the past, Xie Aoyu often came here to choose a Body Smelting technique, so they are already used to seeing him here.

After entering the cultivation chamber, Xie Aoyu went straight to the body smelting technique counter.

Placed on it were countless scrolls.

Xie Aoyu went to the left side first row and grabbed the first scroll. That scroll was precisely that Thunder God Body Smelting scroll. Still, in his heart, Xie Aoyu was quite nervous.

Know that inside the scroll there was lightning.

If a person was not suitable to train, lightning would erupt from the scroll shocking that person's entire body. It was extremely painful. But thinking about the Continent Youth Competition's reward, and thinking about the changes that the tri-colored ball brought about, Xie Aoyu felt if he didn't give it another try then he really should give up in defeat. So he grabbed the scroll and pulled.

crackling...

A flash of lightning was emitted from the scroll.

Xie Aoyu had to squint and stared at the lightning, he could only watch it go straight into his arms. At the same time he felt a heat in the pit of his stomach where all the lightning was quickly coalescing.

When the feeling went away.

“So that’s it!” Xie Aoyu said happily.

originally it was just the tri-colored ball that entered his body. He felt it spread to every part of his body before finally settling in the pit of his stomach. But now there is also the lightning’s changes, once again proving the miraculous nature of the tri-colored ball.

Xie Aoyu opened the scroll.

And again 10 more bolts of lightning entered his body.

Furthermore, these bolts were as thick as a thumb and of a deep purple color. They were almost black and contained a dreadful amount of lightning.

But each one of these bolts of lightning all ended up in the pit of his stomach.

Xie Aoyu again spread open the scroll.

The first 5 words were... Thunder God Body Smelting Technique!

The contents of the scroll was incredible. Every posture was carefully explained, every problem that could arise was carefully addressed.

“I... want... to... train!” Xie Aoyu said each word separately while

clutching the scroll in hand.

He put the scroll on his chest and then left the cultivation chamber.

Returning again to the Hou mountain.

Xie Aoyu again spread the scroll open.

Who knew... that when he opened the scroll this time, it would once again emit these bolts of lightning! But compared to the previous time, these bolts of lightning were less severe.

Resulting in all these bolts once again joining up in the pit of his stomach.

“Could it be that the lightning emitted from this scroll is just another method of tempering the body? Furthermore isn’t it just being a test whether or not one can train too simple?” Xie Aoyu muttered.

He did not dwell on this, but instead consulted the various Thunder God Body Smelting Techniques.

Xie Aoyu read it all in one go and then exhaled deeply.

“Amazing! The Thunder God Body Smelting Technique is amazing! surprisingly, the final technique is the 100 Bolt

Explosion! No wonder~ no wonder it is called the Thunder God Body Smelting Technique.

The power of lightning... it's the kind that could kill a person!

The 100 Bolt Explosion is a bombardment of 100 bolts of lightning! What kind constitution does that take!?

This made Xie Aoyu even more steadfast in his desire to train.

He immediately went to cultivate.

The cultivation methods of the Thunder God Body Smelting Technique weren't too strange for beginners. All one had to do was enter a waterfall and under the torrent of falling water cultivate.

Foundation level cultivation is generally always in the midst of water.

According to the TGBST, cultivating in water will not only strengthen the body but it will also enhance one's flexibility. The body cultivation technique does not allow one's body to become stiff but need a certain level of flexibility. [\[2\]](#)

There is also a waterfall in the Hou Mountain.

Xie Aoyu went to the waterfall.

It is a very large waterfall. and it also is the primary source of water for Langya City. So as one can imagine the rate of flow of water was also extremely large. Despite this, Xie Aoyu stripped naked and went inside.

Right after entering the waterfall and bearing the torrent of water, despite the pressure being easily bearable, Xie Aoyu slipped. The rocks under the constant pressure of the waterfall had become smooth. With a splash, he fell into the water.

And because the current was extremely strong by the type his head broke the water he was already over a 100 meters away.

Xie Aoyu climbed out of the water and ran back to the falls and one again entered.

Splash

He once again fell into the water.

So Xie Aoyu just started the constant training and running back to the falls.

[1] [TL: I left out 差点闪着腰 as ** because I couldn't figure out what it meant... I don't think leaving it out removes anything from the story.]

[2] [TL: such a mouthful TGBST – Thunder God Body Smelting Technique]

Chapter 4: Xiao Bai

After spending 3 days time, Xie Aoyu could finally stand underneath the waterfall. On the 9th day, he finally reached the center and would bear the full brunt of the pounding waterfall.

boom boom boom

The water fell without end.

The constant torrent of water hitting Xie Aoyu's body was like a constant barrage of stones hitting his body. His back was full of red welts. It was a sign of his inability to endure it.

Hold on!

Xie Aoyu endured, going to the utmost.

He thought about his comatose father and his fading willpower firmed up. He clenched both fists and called up all the strength from his body and held steady against the strong pounding.

boom boom boom

3 more minutes passed.

Xie Aoyu felt like both his legs turned to mush, his back felt unbearable and his head was slightly swollen.

Yiya

A clear sounding animal call was heard.

Xie Aoyu turned his head and saw a White Spirit Beast heading in his direction. It held the appearance of contempt.

White Spirit Beasts are among the weakest types of demon beasts. They are of the basic Elementary level and they don't even use Battle Qi. They don't have any magic and only rely on their physical strength and claws.

And the appearance of this White Spirit Beast has been bolstering Xie Aoyu to continue on.

It first showed up 5 days ago when Xie Aoyu had finally just been able to stand on the stones to receive the waterfall's beating. But because he just started he wasn't able to bear the beating and that was when this little guy appeared.

The little guy resembled a lion cub mixed with a white tiger and because it is a low-ranking beast, Xie Aoyu didn't fear it. Furthermore, the little guy would cheer and pump its fists and laugh when Xie Aoyu slipped, similar to what a human would do. And as time went on, the White Spirit Beast started to show more and more human-like gestures.

When Xie Aoyu would endure for long periods of time, the beast

would show an expression of disdain. This action made Xie Aoyu angry and also made him laugh. Angry that this weak creature would look at him with disdain. He also laughed at this creature which supposedly had low intellect. The timid beast unexpectedly had a wide range of expression, which were quite vivid... it was really quite adorable.

“Xiao Bai, I will... endure... it...!” Xie Aoyu gnashed his teeth and fought against the limp and aching feeling, fought against the dreadful torrent. [\[1\]](#)

Xiao Bai was the name given by Xie Aoyu to the White Spirit Beast that was able to mimic many human expressions.

Yiya Xiao Bai curled its mouth giving an appearance of “I doubt it.”

Unexpectedly, the little guy was looking down on him!

Xie Aoyu's eyes flashed with a ruthless conviction. He relentlessly endured. Although he was only 15 years old, because he has constantly been ridiculed as a freak; as well as, his father being comatose for 3 years, compared to others his age he was much more mature. His drive to never give up and give in also kept rising year after year.

Precisely because of that strength, even with his inability to cultivate Qi for almost 10 years; he persisted in training. Generally speaking, an adult could not last 10 years of training without anything to show for it but this was Xie Aoyu's character.

Never admit defeat!

Hold on! Persist! Endure!

He kept repeating that in his mind, when the gradual increase in swelling, aches and pain quickly faded.

A very faint stream of warmth from his dantian appeared.

This warm stream was very small, about as thick as thread but it unceasingly flowed from the dantian circulating throughout the blood vessels.

Yiya

Xiao Bai's eyes opened wide in surprise. Staring at Xie Aoyu, it immediately placed its paw on its face, scared that Xie Aoyu would find out, and resumed its previous appearance.

“Qi!!!”

Screamed Xie Aoyu frantically.

He was actually able to cultivate qi!

Wild with joy, under the pounding of the waterfall, Xie Aoyu

once again fell into the water and emerged more than 100 meters away.

Haha “I have Qi now!” Xie Aoyu said loudly while laughing.

Xie Aoyu climbed out of the river and started dancing and jumping for no less than 5 minutes. Afterwards, facing the sky he was lying on the ground taking large gulps of air. His face was set in a permanent smile.

To Xie Aoyu, Battle Qi was a distant dream but today, his body was really able to cultivate it. What do people know about the pain of being insulted, mocked and ridiculed for nearly a decade or how depressing that is?

Xie Aoyu’s eyes flashed brightly.

“Father! I will succeed!” said Xie Aoyu with conviction as he turned over and sat down.

Calming down, Xie Aoyu started thinking about a problem of his.

How did he become able to cultivate Battle Qi?

If it said to be because of the Thunder God Body Smelting Technique, Xie Aoyu did not believe that to be the case. After all, the TGBST is a body smelting technique. It also happens to be one of the quickest body smelting techniques for cultivating Qi; and even if it could resolve the cause of him being unable to cultivate

Qi, the method would not be the simple method of enduring the impact of a waterfall.

So there is only one other reason... the tri-colored ball!

After fortuitously obtaining this tri-colored ball, from the start, it already brought him a great change in strength. It then, allowed him to open up the TGBST scroll and absorb its lightning; and now, it gave him the ability to cultivate Battle Qi?

Just what exactly is this tri-colored ball that he obtained?

Xie Aoyu thought about it for a while but didn't have a clue despite him and his father, Xie Qian, being extremely well-read – to solve his inability to cultivate Qi.

Xie Aoyu felt that with regards to this kind of knowledge he would be comparable even to a Literary Master.

But with regards to the tri-colored ball... he didn't have even an inkling.

“Could it be a medicine made by a Master Pharmacist?” Xie Aoyu immediately shook his head. Even though throughout the continent it is very rare to find a Master Pharmacist but in their Langye City, there happens to be one. She was none other than the famous beauty Master Zi Yan.

Furthermore, Master Zi Yan was always working to cure Xie

Qian.

As a result, Xie Aoyu had some understanding of the drugs used by the pharmacists. He had never heard of a medicine that could split up and spread like a river into every part of his body as well as have a portion split up and form in the pit of his stomach. Compared to normal elixirs, this was way too different.

Xie Aoyu couldn't find the answer despite reasoning through it.

Yiya Yiya... Xiao Bai pulled at Xie Aoyu's clothing, patting its stomach, giving a look of hunger.

Xie Aoyu gave a look of disdain. "Hah, I knew you came just to freeload something to eat and drink." He took out some prepared dried foods and gave it to Xiao Bai. "Eat."

Looking at the food it received from Xie Aoyu with annoyance, Xiao Bai promptly tossed it into the flowing river.

In the fast flowing river, the food was gone in an instant.

Yiya Xiao Bai's paws were at its waist giving a very unsatisfied expression.

Xie Aoyu was speechless. This little guy was really strange. Wasn't he suppose to be just a timid White Spirit Beast? Why does it seem like an indomitable King Tiger?

“Fine Fine. Since I’m very happy today, I won’t argue with you. I will go find us a couple of Fire rabbits to eat.” said Xie Aoyu while his hands were petting Xiao Bai’s ears. He then stood up and went into the forest.

Seeing Xie Aoyu leave, Xiao Bai was finally satisfied.

Very quickly, Xie Aoyu returned carrying two Fire Rabbits.

He, then, prepared a frame, and found some firewood. He took out matches and prepared to start the fire. Although battle Qi was prevalent in the Qi Ao Continent, the ability to cast spells was something only beasts could use. Human are unable to do so. [\[2\]](#)

Yiya

Xiao Bai pushed Xie Aoyu to the side and opened its mouth and breathed.

Hu...

Flames spewed from its mouth, igniting the firewood.

thump

Xie Aoyu fell ass first to the floor. He couldn’t believe what he

saw as he looked at Xiao Bai. Compared to when he first cultivated Qi, he was even more in shock. That was because a White Spirit beast is unable to use magic, they can only use their claws and fangs to fight, and furthermore, their claws are just normal claws. So much so, that people suggested that White Spirit beasts be classified as animals not beasts.

Thus it can be seen that White Spirit beasts are very weak.

But Xiao Bai can spit fire.

Unexpectedly, it can use fire magic.

Xie Aoyu vigorously rubbed his eyes. Yup! That is definitely fire... after some time, Xie Aoyu felt that today was definitely a wonderful, miraculous day.

Not only was he able to cultivate Battle Qi, Unexpectedly, Xiao Bai could also use magic.

Yiya Xiao Bai proudly looked at Xie Aoyu. It then did something that caused Xie Aoyu to be even more dumb-struck. Its paw pointed at the fire.

Hu...

A gust of wind blew, causing the fire to grow.

“Wind Magic!” Xie Aoyu was thoroughly stunned.

Xiao Bai smirked, and held his head high. Raising its small paw it made a pose. It clenched its fist and patted its arm. It was an appearance of “I’m strong.” [\[3\]](#)

Looking at Xiao Bai with this appearance, Xie Aoyu suddenly started laughing.

How can a White Spirit beast be this smart? A beast’s level of intelligence is related to its rank. Obviously Xiao Bai does not follow this rule.

So there is only one possibility. Xiao Bai is a variant!

[\[1\]](#) [TL: Xiao Bai means Little White; Xiao is generally used as a term of endearment for those younger than you.]

[\[2\]](#) [TL: I think the author meant something like [this](#) for the frame.]

[\[3\]](#) [TL: [Picture of above](#) Sorry for using this picture of all things this is what I was trying to describe.]

Chapter 5: Variant

“Xiao Bai, what other magic can you do?” Xie Aoyu asked.

Xiao Bai used its little paws to scratch its head. This action was copied almost exactly like how Xie Aoyu would do it. Its eyes wandering around aimlessly.

After a bit, Xiao Bai seemed to have thought of something.

Filled with anticipation, Xie Aoyu saw Xiao Bai point its paw at a rock.

Whiz

An ice arrow flew out and shattered the rock.

“It is water magic’s advanced form, Ice magic!” Xie Aoyu exclaimed.

In the paw of Xiao Bei, there was a flash of lightning.

“Lightning magic!”

Xiao Bai’s paws clapped the ground and issued forth an Earth Spike.

“Earth magic!”

Pointing its hand high, a ball of light flew out.

“Light magic!

Clawing an area, a stream of black flame emerged.

“Dark magic!”

Xie Aoyu called out each magic system as they appeared. His eyes were wide-opened. Who knew that this little guy could use magic from each of the seven major elements.

Beast knowing magic also have various differences and levels.

A majority of beasts have only mastered one element; it is very rare to find a beast who has mastered two elements and seeing one which has mastered 3 is even rarer. A beast capable of 4 elements would cause a sensation. While those capable of 5 elements are only seen in ancient books of magic and there has never been a record of seeing any capable of 6 elements. Yet Xiao Bai is capable of 7!

“Is there more?” Xie Aoyu asked.

Xiao Bai shook its head.

“Ah, then could you show me your magic at full-power?” Xie Aoyu said. Since it’s a variant beast, then it should have a certain level of attack power.

Yiya! Xiao Bai raised its head, appearing very powerful, it pointed its paw to a large tree.

Bang Bang Bang...

A stream of lightning flew out from its paws.

Xie Aoyu was wide-eyed, heart full of anticipation. If Xiao Bai could easily destroy this tree with lightning magic, then it most certainly isn’t a basic Elementary level beast.

boom!

The lightning attack that hit the tree... was a single bolt... about as thick as a thumb.

This bolt nimbly struck the tree.

Leaving only larger chunks of the tree intact.

cough

The originally enthusiastic Xie Aoyu almost choked on his own

saliva. He looked at Xiao Bai and gave a thumbs up and sincerely said, “Amazing, truly amazing!”

Xiao Bai then smirked.

This made Xie Aoyu laugh. Xiao Bai is truly a variant. Not only is it a variant able to use 7 different elements, but also in terms of power, there isn't even a need to mention it. No wonder this little guy just came and visited to free-load food to eat.

“Alright, now the food.” Xie Aoyu focused on the fire rabbit.

Sitting to the side observing Xie Aoyu's actions, Xiao Bai's mouth was watering.

From the Zizi of the dripping fats, to the mouth-watering smell, neither man nor beast could help but swallow saliva (in anticipation). So when they finally ate, they ate it clean to the bones.

Patting his tummy, Xie Aoyu said “Alright... you should be full, I should head back home now.”

Yiya

Xiao Bai clawed at Xie Aoyu's trousers, looking quite pitiful.

That pitiful appearance broke Xie Aoyu's heart. He smiled briefly

and shook his head, pulling Xiao Bai up hug and then setting it on his shoulder and said, “Alright, from now on, follow me and I will feed you lots of good food everyday.”

Yiya... Yiya... Xiao Bai stood on Xie Aoyu’s shoulder with an unsatisfied expression. As if the only thing I could do was eat food?

Xie Aoyu started patting Xiao Bai on his head.

Xiao Bai was not taller than 10-20 cm, his entire body was snow-white. When all bunched up, he looks like a tiny little furball. It was incredibly adorable and like other White Spirit beasts, he had the ability to capture the hearts of little boys and girls.

After arduous training for more than 10 days, Xie Aoyu wanted to tell his comatose father that he suddenly was able to produce Qi.

On the way home from Mt. Hou, Xie Aoyu came face to face with Xie Zhe and Xie Gang.

“Ai Yao If it isn’t our Xie family’s super genius. We haven’t seen you in 10 days and I was really missing you.” Xie Zhe said as smirk appeared on his face. “Isn’t this a white spirit beast? Haha. Our Xie’s super genius is really talented, he can even find this kind of trash, white spirit beast to play with as a pet.

Xie Aoyu glanced at him and thought, just wait until I get results from cultivating, both you idiots will get a taste of my strength. Too bad, I just started cultivating Qi, it’s not yet strong enough.

So he dodged them and moved past the two.

“I said Xie family super genius, you! Walking this fast what do you think you’re doing? We are all brothers here, how about you give us some face.” Xie Zhe said.

Xie Gang sneered, “Lil’ bro Zhe, just let him go, he’s just useless trash. Let’s go gamble.

“Yeah, This young master(I) will go gamble big. because even if we lose, we can still ‘borrow’ money from the super genius. Hahaha...” Xie Zhe said laughing loudly.

“Right right, The Xie super genius is just our little money bank.” Xie Gang heckled.

Xie Aoyu hid his anger, but seeing Xiao Bai’s glare moved him so he whispered, “Cast two fireballs... but don’t let them see you... ah, aim at their butts.”

Yiya!

Xiao Bai immediately called out as it started brandishing its paws and four fireballs appeared.

Despite Xiao Bai’s spells being very weak, they had one advantage, they were fast. In the blink of an eye, four fireballs hit

the butts of Xie Zhe and Xie Gang.

These two had no idea they would be hit by a surprise attack, much less one so weak.

Without being able to put up any guard, their pants were set aflame.

“Crap! fire! I’m on fire!” Xie Zhe called out.

The two screamed as they put out the fire.

Of course, Xiao Bai’s spells were really weak and the fire was quickly extinguished. But the pants of the two had several holes from the fire which exposed their butts.

“Damn it! Who dares!?” Xie Zhe howled.

“Which son-of-a-bitch dares?” Xie Gang covering the holes in his pants yelled.

The vicious look of the two swept past Xie Aoyu, not stopping at him at all... after all, magic is the ability of beasts, and his White Spirit beast can’t cast magic. As a result, they did not think at all that it would be Xiao Bai’s magic.

Serves them right!

Xie Aoyu snickered and carried Xiao Bai back to the Xie home.

Upon entering the room, He had all those attending his father, Xie Qian, leave the room. He then kneeled by his father, took his hand and said in a trembling voice, “Father. I have battle qi. Father, can you hear me? I, now, have qi. I have qi!”

Xie Qian, like before, was just laying there.

“Father! I now have battle qi! I will definitely train hard. I want to be the Continental Youth Tournament champion. I will use the Water of the Holy Spirit to cure you.” Xie Aoyu forcefully promised.

Sitting in the corner Xiao Bai’s face had a hint of helplessness.

It appeared like he understood what was happening.

This gesture lasted only a moment, so that Xie Aoyu could not see it.

After the long conversation with his comatose father, Xie Aoyu stood up and walked over to the wall on the left side of the room. He then pulled out three bricks from the wall and grabbed a scroll kept hidden within.

This scroll was obtained by his father 10 years earlier for Xie Aoyu to use... it is a fighting technique called Dragon Overlord Boxing.

Xie Qian narrowly escaped from death in order to obtain this technique. He had intended to give it to Xie Aoyu for his qi cultivation and brought it back, but unfortunately, Xie Aoyu couldn't generate qi. So they put the scroll in the wall for safekeeping, and it sat there for 10 whole years.

But now Xie Aoyu has qi and can practice the Dragon Overlord Boxing!

The thing about fighting techniques is that they have different attributes. For example, fire-based techniques. Should fire-attributed practitioners try them, they would be capable of putting out incredible amounts of power; but should water-attributed practitioners try it, they would be completely unable to succeed.

Dragon Overlord Boxing is an earth-based technique.

On the other hand, Xie Qian is a lightning-attributed practitioner, so he never trained in that technique. But he knew from birth that Xie Aoyu was earth, lightning and wood-attributed.

So it can be said that this Dragon Overlord Boxing technique was prepared by Xie Qian for Xie Aoyu.

Only after returning the bricks to their original positions did he look at the scroll.

After reading the Dragon Overlord Boxing scroll, Xie Aoyu was deeply lost in thought. Especially with regards to its power. Once a person were to reach the level of Emperor, it is said the power of his punch would be similar to the power of the Dragon Overlord. It is an extremely devastating technique. [\[1\]](#)

“What are you reading? Looking this serious.”

While completely absorbed in his reading, a lovely voice rang out by Xie Aoyu ear. At the same time a refreshing scent wafted across his face. Xie Aoyu raised his head to look and his mind blanked out.

The person who came was an enchanting mature woman. She had a lovely face, it was dazzling; even without make-up, it could capture the souls of those who gaze upon it.

It really was a very pretty face, both the corners of her eyes and her eye brows were raised, as if innately born with the ability to stir the soul. When other people looked at her, they assumed she was winking.

“Master Ziyan.” Xie Aoyu has already seen this woman untold times but every time he would still blank out, because honestly, she really is too lovely. Xie Aoyu didn’t doubt her looks could defeat a large army.

Furthermore, She is none other than the continent’s famous master level pharmacist Ziyan!

[1] [TL:They used 霸王 for the comparison... think of Hercules or something but a [Chinese version](#)...]

Chapter 6: Dragon Overlord Boxing

Ziyan was already more than 30 years old, but her skin was glittering and translucent (and glowing in the sunlight), pale and blemish-free. It seemed like she was just 25 or 26 years old. She was also a pharmacist of the master level and thus naturally had a particular affinity in maintaining her health (and looks). She did not look one bit over 30.

“Little man, what are you looking at? Let me see.” Ziyan said as she grabbed the scroll from his hands.

Maybe it was due to Ziyan’s speed, or his inattentiveness, but Xie Aoyu was unable to react at all and the scroll was already in her hands.

“It’s a fighting technique.” Xie Aoyu knew he couldn’t hide it so he just told the truth.

“Dragon Overlord Boxing?” Ziyan murmured. Surprise flashing on her captivating face. “Isn’t this the legendary Dragon Overlord Boxing, but somehow, you have it.”

Hearing the words of Ziyan, it seems that she has heard of the Dragon Overlord Boxing technique. So Xie Aoyu asked, “Master, do you know the history of this Dragon Overlord Boxing technique?”

“I’ve more than just heard of it.” Ziyan said and handed the scroll back to Xie Aoyu. She then unhappily said. “Oh. Right. I’ll warn you again. You can’t call me Master. Call me elder sister instead.

Hmph! Even if you don't fear calling me old, I fear you calling me old. Ok?"

"Ah, master... er... Elder sister, how about you tell me about the Dragon Overlord Boxing? I've read so many books that mention Dragon Overlord Boxing but none talk about its history." Receiving the evil eye from Ziyan, Xie Aoyu quickly corrected his words.

Ziyan let out a sigh and patted Xie Aoyu's head. "Ai I'm getting old. I can't match you young'ins anymore."

"Elder sister is so pretty that when people look, they think she is 10." Xie Aoyu complimented.

[Ziyan reached out and poked Xie Aoyu on the nose](#), "Well, aren't you a sweet talker." She then (hand)combed the bangs on her forehead and said "With regards to the Dragon Overlord Boxing technique, it really is famous and impressive. This is due to the fact that 1000 years ago, it was the unmatched fighting technique created by the absolute number one expert, Overlord Ye Chao Feng."

gasp

Xie Aoyu gasped.

He had seen Dragon Overlord Boxing in many books. They also held it in high esteem. It's just that none of them mentioned its

history. Xie Aoyu thought that the Dragon Overlord Boxing technique's origin would be really amazing. He just didn't think it would be THAT amazing.

Ye Chao Feng. The number 1 expert 1000 years ago.

When people talked about this man... It wasn't about him being the number one expert, nor him beating hundreds of clans and tribes or experts from all four corners, but about his contributions to fighting techniques.

Ye Chao Feng was a fighting technique maniac.

Of the fighting techniques seen today in the entire continent, almost 50% are related to his fighting techniques or were created by him.

It is said he had an innate love for researching and studying techniques, as well as creating them too. In his lifetime he had created somewhere between 8000 and 10000 techniques. Half of which people believe are top-level fighting techniques. And from these techniques, countless other techniques are produced.

“Dragon Overlord Boxing was Ye Chao Feng's creation during his final years. I can assume you understand what that means. Dragon Overlord Boxing is one of his finest works.” Ziyan said reverently. “The Dragon Overlord Boxing technique was uncovered 10 years ago in the Hengduan mountain range. It is said even Emperor level experts rushed over to obtain it, but in the end there was no trace of it. No one knew if it was already snatched away or destroyed.”

Her eyes swept across the scroll in Xie Aoyu's hand. "I never thought it would unexpectedly be obtained by your father. I presume that your father, for the sake of expanding the Xie family, once practiced and specialized in the art of theivery, specializing in collecting fighting techniques. He most probably utilized his skills to obtain it."

"How did you know?" said a surprised Xie Aoyu.

The pickpocket skill was Xie Qian's secret. Even the current clan head, Xie Lian, did not know about it. Only his son, Xie Aoyu knew... and that was because they didn't want to cause any problems for the Xie clan.

Ziyan smiled faintly but didn't answer the question. Instead she replied, "Why do you think I have, for the past 3 years, continuously treated your father?"

"Hehe, I always thought it was because my old man was too charming." Xie Aoyu said smirking.

"Your head is too big." Ziyan grumpily smacked Xie Aoyu's head. "Arrogant boy. It was because your father is my saviour. At that time, I was trapped in a surprise attack and the most critical moment... Your father saved me. Originally, he had discovered that those who attacked me had a high level fighting technique and wanted to steal it. In the end, he also saved me."

Xie Aoyu said, "It was probably because elder sister Ziyan is too pretty so they decided to attack you." She glanced at her body. Her

chest were two large mountain peaks, her waist was irresistibly slender, her ass was plump and well-developed, and her beautiful legs were long and slender. “This body, is something men can’t bear to leave alone... and it’s a pretty common occurrence.

“What about you?” Ziyan gave him a seductive wink with her beautiful eyes.

Although it was just a wink, this movement already had set Xie Aoyu’s heart ablaze. It unexpectedly produced an intense reaction.

“Ahh... umm... about that... didn’t elder sister still have to give my old man a check-up?” Xie Aoyu hurriedly changed the topic.

Ziyan glanced at the area between Xie Aoyu’s two legs. Chuckling, she said, “It looks like the little man grew up.”

These words embarrassed Xie Aoyu even more. But the look in her beautiful eyes cleared up and the words held no other ulterior meaning. This relieved him and at the same time gave him a sense of loss.

Ziyan started to check Xie Qian’s body. She said, “Although Dragon Overlord Boxing is just a fighting technique; it is one developed by Ye Chao Feng at his peak. Learning this technique won’t be a simple matter. You better not expect instant results. You should also not tell anyone else about it at all, otherwise, I fear that the Xie family would meet its destruction.

“Mhmm I know.” Xie Aoyu said.

After she finished her inspection, Ziyan smiled and said, “Your father’s body shows no change. I will leave you this medicine, remember to apply it like normal. Everyday spread the ointment above the dantian. This will preserve his qi and prevent it from disappearing.

“Thank you elder sister.” Said Xie Aoyu as he received the medicine.

In actuality, there is nothing wrong at all with Xie Qian’s body except for the coma. Instead his battle qi shows signs of dissipating. Ziyan spent these past years continuously medicating Xie Qian in order to preserve his qi. She also has been conducting research in order to cure him.

“Hehe, No need to be respectful like this with elder sister. Just saying elder sister is payment enough.” Ziyan smiled while rubbing the top of Xie Aoyu’s head as she turned around and left.

After seeing Ziyan off, Xie Aoyu started studying the Dragon Overlord Boxing technique. This time he was far more careful. He shut the door so that people can’t easily enter.

Even though Xie Aoyu had never before studied any fighting technique, he still understood quite a bit about them. He discovered from his careful research just now that even though the Dragon Overlord Boxing technique looks like a single fighting technique, in actuality, it consisted of many. It was a fusion of over

10 powerful techniques. Training in it would definitely be very hard.

Furthermore, in order to train in Dragon Overlord Boxing, one had to be in the lower advanced level.

To the newly Qi-endowed Xie Aoyu, this could be said to be very far away. Battle Qi could be ranked as: Elementary, Intermediate, Advanced, Spirit, Ascension, Cloud, Tuifan, Earth, Rainbow, Sage, Heavenly King, Ten Kings, Battle King, Battle Emperor. Each of these levels can then be subdivided into their lower, mid and upper levels.

Xie Aoyu hasn't even reached a cultivation level of lower Elementary.

But with regards to the Qi cultivation, he was 100% confident.

Having seen Dragon Overlord Boxing, Xie Aoyu who was originally planning to rest, once again was full of energy. He stood up and said, "Xiao Bai, let's go and continue to train!"

With that, he left the room. In the corner of the room there was a human-shaped shadow, from which Ziyan's body appeared from.

She looked at Xie Aoyu and mumbled to herself, "This little boy can now somehow produce Qi. He almost hid it from me. Strange... Even I couldn't solve his body's problem. Who helped him?" Soon after she shook her head, "Well whatever. I still have to prepare

for my fight with the Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo.”

Chapter 7: A Year Of Intense Training

After learning about the history of the Dragon Overlord Boxing technique, it wasn't hard for Xie Aoyu to imagine how much blood and sweat his father had expended to obtain it. It could be even said he braved the jaws of death for the Dragon Overlord Boxing technique.

Due to this love, Xie Aoyu trained even more crazily.

It seemed as if he didn't know what exhaustion was.

There was only one thing in his mind. That was... to train!

Whether it was for his father, or for himself, he couldn't give up. Even when it was most difficult, he still persevered, never giving up. Every predicament he came across, he faced bravely and fiercely.

Strictly practicing like this, in a flash, a year has already passed.

During that year, Xie Aoyu trained all day long. Ziyan and Bing Wu were among those who came to visit, however, regarding the specifics of his training, he told no one.

And with Bing Wu wanting to become the 2nd Butterfly Queen, she was also training hard. [\[1\]](#)

So the two didn't often get an opportunity to see each other.

Today, the sun was burning high up in the sky.

A unyielding Xie Aoyu stood inside the rapids. Regardless of how violent the rapids were his body stood firm. Both his arms were raised ahead of him in [horse stance](#). [2]

It looked like he was trying to stop the rapids.

At this moment, the Qi inside Xie Aoyu's body started collecting from every part of his body including all four limbs. It slowly gathered into his dantian following a regular path. Cycle after cycle, his body gradually built up an incredible amount of energy.

Afterwards, all that qi he stored started violently gushing out. Watching the water of the rapids, one would notice it was slowly separating. It actually stopped pounding on his body. The flow of water actually split to avoid his body. The water flowed to his left and right side forming an empty space around him about half a meter deep.

Xie Aoyu mustered the battle qi with everything he had.

All the battle qi returned to his dantian and one could see, inside his dantian the qi started to rotate. Its rotation speed kept speeding up and becoming more and more intense. Following the rotation of the qi in his dantian, the surrounding waters also started to rotate. It started to form a whirlpool. This whirlpool also kept growing

and getting faster and faster.

This was a display of Xie Aoyu's qi about to breakthrough into the lower Advanced level.

During a year of hard training, relying on extremely difficult training and his innate talent, from his qi's emergence to now, He was able to reach the peak upper Intermediate level.

If the members of the Xie family discovered that, they would be extremely surprised.

The Xie family was the only influential family in Langye City. Nearly 30% of the experts in Langye City are from the Xie family and the clan's cultivation speed record was held by Xie Qian.

In a year, he was able to reach the lower Intermediate level.

The record held by the 2nd place person was middle Beginner level in a year. The vast majority need a year or two to breakthrough a level. Xie Aoyu on the other hand, is about to breakthrough into the lower Advanced level in a year. Beating Xie Qian's record many times over.

In order for Xie Aoyu to breakthrough to the lower Advanced level, his qi started to rotate with insane speed forming a huge whirlpool. The qi whirlpool quickly spread out and reached the border of the surrounding water in the waterfall.

Not long after, the whirlpool reached the river bank.

Inside Xie Aoyu's body a sudden thundering sound occurred. His qi fluctuated violently. The amount kept increasing, until it reached double his original.

Boom!

At the same time he reached the lower Advanced rank, there was a sound of a large explosion as all surrounding waters exploded upwards forming a large hollow tube with Xie Aoyu standing in the middle.

By the time the water all crashed down, a drenched Xiao Bai emerged by the river bank.

Yiya Yiya... Xiao Bai called out making threatening gestures.

All the fur on his body was dripping wet and sticking to his sides. His appearance without a doubt was amusing.

Xie Aoyu walked out of the pool with a large smile on his face. He happily brought out a scroll, "I've finally reached the lower Advanced level and can finally train in the Dragon Overlord Boxing technique.

During the previous year, aside from training, Xie Aoyu also studied the Dragon Overlord Boxing technique while eating. He knew the technique was extremely complicated so prior to training

in it, he already started studying.

As a result of his study, Xie Aoyu discovered that even though this Dragon Overlord Boxing looks like a single fighting technique, It was actually a fusion of the potency of lightning, the explosiveness of fire, the pliability of water, the simplicity of earth and the speed of wind. One could say the advantages of each were completely fused together and the advantages of each element's top grade techniques all formed the technique.

It can be said to be a single fighting technique, not over 10 fighting styles of 5 elements. [\[3\]](#)

However in order to use it, one requires a sufficient amount of qi. The minimum amount needed to train is lower Advanced level. If one were to trade with it lower than that, they would only injure themselves.

He looked at the Dragon Overlord Boxing scroll again.

Xie Aoyu then put the scroll away and took a step back. He took a stance which was based on what the scroll described.

His qi rushed to both his arms as he interlocked his arms. He moved (brandished) his arms and body at the same time as based on the scroll.

Once putting the Dragon Overlord Boxing technique into practice, it was like king of the dinosaurs – the T-Rex, With

vigorous blows, and unmatched power, it gave out a oppressive feeling. [\[4\]](#)

Due to the movement of his arms, the pebbles and stones by the river bank flew about with his movements. They whizzed along as they rose and fell. Or made Bang Bang sounds as they hit the nearby rocks or trees.

Xie Aoyu occasionally jumped, or occasionally rotated his arms. They rose and fell, as if fluttering in the wind. His body was indistinct appearing as if it could knock down a small hill like a t-rex. [\[5\]](#)

As his fists shot forward, there were explosions.

Xie Aoyu felt proud that he had an acceptable mastery of Dragon Overlord Boxing. He roared and suddenly shot down from the sky, his fist aimed at the earth.

Bang!

His fist slammed down and the earth emitted a loud cry.

With his fist as the focal point, a crater spread out.

Roar

Dragon Overlord Boxing training by Xie Aoyu in the Hou mountain caused quite a disturbance. It also lured a mountain beast. This mountain beast was a Manli Bull beast. It is an Advanced lower level beast. [\[6\]](#)

Not only did the Manli Bull have incredible strength, it could also use Earth elemental magic.

As a lower Advanced level beast, it belonged to the inner circle of powerful monsters.

The originally sleeping beast, was awoken by the quake caused by Xie Aoyu's fists. Unable to contain its anger, it rushed out from the forest.

Xie Aoyu who recently broke through, and can now finally learn and use Dragon Overlord Boxing was still unable to contain his excitement. He raised his hand at the Manli Bull and taunted it with his finger.

Roar!!!

Xie Aoyu felt the hate of the Manli Bull in its continuous angry roars. It then smashed earth with its forehooves.

The inexhaustibly powerful Manli bull's smash caused a fissure to erupt heading away from its hooves as if trying to split the mountain into two.

Xie Aoyu smirked and shrugged. His face had a bored expression.

This infuriated the Manli Bull even more.

The bull was brutal beast. Its fierceness and cruelty was unmatched. Seeing Xie Aoyu countenance infuriated it even more. It's eyes glowed red and all the hair on its body stood up looking extremely ferocious.

Roar!

The violent Manli bull used its strength and smashed the earth.

This time it wasn't a simple physical attack but one that used the Earth elemental magic... Earth spike.

Numerous incredibly sharp Earth spikes erupted from the ground. They were aimed at piercing Xie Aoyu to injure him or even kill him.

“Thud!”

Xie Aoyu raised his foot and stomped the ground.

An incredible amount of energy spread out from under his foot.

Bang Bang Bang...

All the Earth spikes broke apart. Not a single one remained.

Smiling Xie Aoyu looked over to the Manli Bull, he raised his hand and waved his finger. Its meaning was painfully clear... 'Not good enough.'"

roar

The Manli Bull got even angrier.

The incredibly strong Manli Bull's greatest strength was in close-range combat. If its attack were to hit, it would render countless beasts and experts dead. Its hooves could crush boulders over 10 meters in size with ease.

Xie Aoyu's turned cold as a golden light appeared in his hands. A bang exploded forth.

Boom

The bright light was blinding.

Xie Aoyu stood proud and completely still. On the other hand, the acclaimed super-powerful Manli Bull was sent tumbling 7 to 8 meters back.

This was the Overlord's Emperor Art. [\[7\]](#)

Xie Aoyu walked forward and in 5 steps reached the front of the Manli Bull.

After getting up, the bull lowered its head and started charging. It used all the strength its body could muster to kill this human who dare provoke it.

“Die!”

Xie Aoyu threw his punch.

Wailing, the beast cried out in pain as it fell to the ground. The Manli Bull died.

Yiya Yiya Xiao Bai excitedly jumped about. Turning around he ran and started quickly collecting firewood; stacking them by the body of the Manli Bull.

Xie Aoyu had an air of annoyance. He thought Xiao Bai was happy that he defeated the Manli Bull, but instead it was happy that it could eat it.

They ate until they were completely full. Man and pet burping in satisfaction. They then headed home and upon reaching it saw a beautiful Bing Wu standing by the door waiting for them.

“What have you two been up to?” Bing Wu asked.

[1] [TL: I’m now not sure if You Lan Ruo is a name or part of the title]

[2] [TL: it actually said 双手平伸, 做出向前推举的姿势, which is something about being elected or chosen... as a posture... which is kinda confusing]

[3] [TL:This is beyond confusing 说是一种斗技, 不若说是五种属性的十几种斗技的好。]

[4] [TL: the [*] part is 龙中王者霸王龙般... which means something like

[5] [TL: He is also in the air at this point I think. 霸王龙 is t-rex?]

[6] [TL: 蛮力魔牛... the characters sound out as Manli.... but yeah...]

[7] [TL:这便是至尊霸皇诀]

Chapter 8: Lightning Spirit Holy Sword

Despite the two not seeing each other often during the previous year due to their training, the impact of child-slayingly-adorable Xiao Bai on Bing Wu was pretty significant.

Having not seen Bing Wu these days, Xie Aoyu discovered Bing Wu became even more beautiful. Her originally long beautiful hair was cut into a neat bob. The space of her forehead appeared bold and brave appearing even more heroic. Her clothes were well adorned, and weren't women's clothing. Making her already developed steamed buns appear even more delicate. [\[1\]](#)

A faint delicate scent blew swept across Xie Aoyu fascinating him.

“We ate a cow together.” said Xie Aoyu.

Laughing Bing Wu replied, “Ha, you only know how to brag. Do you think your stomachs can contain a whole cow?”

“I obviously can't but he can.” Xie Aoyu said while pointing to Xiao Bai who was just a dozen centimeters tall.

Yiya!

Xiao Bai proudly patted its stomach.

This action made Bing Wu laugh out loud. Grabbing Xiao Bai and

pulling him into a hug, she said, “Are you able to fit a whole cow in this little tummy? I think even if it were even just the cow’s ear, you wouldn’t be able to finish it.”

Xie Aoyu was depressed by this. He wanted to say they ate it, to pledge that Xiao Bei’s ability to eat is even more amazing than that of a dragon. The brute-force demon bull was over 2 meters tall and yet most of it was eaten by Xiao Bai while he only ate a small portion. Furthermore, Xiao Bai’s tummy never grew large which left Xie Aoyu perplexed.

Yiya Yiya Seeing Bing Wu not believing him, Xiao Bai immediately changed tact. He now acted like he was hungry because Xie Aoyu wouldn’t even give him food.

Xie Aoyu controlled his anger which almost went crazy. [\[2\]](#)

“Alright, it just happens that there is a good restaurant in the eastern area of the city. Let’s go eat there.” Said Bing Wu smiling.

Flashing a quick glare at the gluttonous Xiao Bai, Xie Aoyu said, “Bing Wu, How come you have time today? As far as I remember, in the past year, you’ve only had a chance to visit less than 10 times, and for no more than a quarter-hour before having to go.”

“It’s because I want to celebrate. Hehe.” Bing Wu said laughing. “Ao Yu. Did you know that in this last year, I managed to advance to upper Intermediate from lower Beginner. That’s 3 grades different. This is an even better record than that originally set by Uncle. [\[3\]](#)

“Incredible!” Xie Aoyu thought that the Butterfly Queen really was incredible.

Bing Wu spent 5-6 years to advance from lower Beginner to the upper Beginner rank, yet now she only took a year to get from upper Beginner to upper Intermediate. One should know that as the ranks get higher, the speed to advance slows down.

This speaks clearly about how amazing the Butterfly Queen You Lan Ruo is.

“Hehe. Master said my natural talents aren’t any less than hers and that winning the championship isn’t an impossibility.” Said Bing Wu excitedly. “Let me also tell you. Just yesterday, I even fought with a lower Advanced brute force demon bull! You wouldn’t know but we fought for over 3 hours before I lost! Pretty Awesome Huh? Even master said I’m gifted.”

Brute force demon bull?

Xie Aoyu and Xiao Bai shared a glance. They had just eaten one.

And it was one that Xie Aoyu easily killed.

“Gifted! Gifted!” Xie Aoyu definitely could not say that he easily killed a brute force demon bull. It would definitely have an impact on Bing Wu. Let alone the topic of him being able to cultivate qi, which he has never told another person.

“Master also said that if I started receiving her instruction at the age of 7, I would have already reached the Ascension stage by now. She also has decided to dedicate herself wholly in my progression. I bet it’s to foster me into a second Butterfly Queen.” Said Bing Wu as she excitedly waved about her fists. [\[4\]](#)

Xie Aoyu trollingly said, “So, can I be called the Butterfly Emperor?”

“Butterfly Emperor? There’s a Butterfly Emperor...Oh! Stinky Ao Yu! You’re making fun of me! Just see how I’ll set you straight.” Bing Wu then suddenly realized that the Emperor(King?) and Queen(Empress?) are a couple. Her heart started rapidly beating, and her face quickly turned red. Fearing Xie Aoyu would see her she started moving about and made threatening gestures.

“Young Lady, you should sit tight and do nothing. Just let me kill him, ok?” An ice-cold voice was heard from ahead.

The two looked up and discovered that they had entered a secluded alley. The alley didn’t have a single pedestrian except for the 17-18 year old youth in front of them. In the youth’s hand was a shiny purple long sword. His bloodlust-filled eyes started at Xie Aoyu.

This man had a familiar look. Xie Aoyu cautiously asked, “Who are you?”

“Te Luo Si!” Replied the young man.

Xie Aoyu and Bing Wu gasped at the same time.

“You’re one of the remnants from the Ao Te Si clans” Said Xie Aoyu in an imposing manner. [\[5\]](#)

“Remnant?” Said Te Luo Si as his muscles on his face twitched. He gave Xie Aoyu a dark glare and savagely said. “My clan Ao Te Si used to be one the 3 big clans in Langye city. It was your damned scoundrel of a father. He unexpectedly annihilated my clan. If it weren’t for the fact that I ran quickly, I would have long been dead. But now... Humph... your death deserving bastard of a father had been in a coma for the last 3 years. I will just kill you instead for the revenge of my clan.”

Xie Aoyu sneered, “Really Funny. At that time your Ao Te Si family had thought my father had left and wouldn’t return. They had decided to take advantage of the situation and exterminate the Xie clan in one fell swoop. How could my father not exterminate your clan. Your family invited destruction. Don’t blame other people.”

“Don’t blame other people... Well said. Well said.” In Te Luo Si’s hand appeared a sword. [*] “Now if you Xie Aoyu, this trash who can’t cultivate qi were to die by my hand... well... that also can’t be blamed on other people.” Smiling grimly he then said, “I’ll also tell you before you die. I didn’t just come here to kill you. I will also kill all the other younger generation kids of the Xie clan. I will completely exterminate you all. I’ve already killed 3 others. You will be the 4th. I will make the Xie clan pay for their actions.

Hahaha...” [\[6\]](#)

“Quickly run Ao Yu. I will block him.” Bing Wu suddenly advanced.

Originally Xie Aoyu was already planning to attack, but the change in the situation caught him in a daze. He just realized that with regards to his ability to now produce qi, Bing Wu still didn’t know.

Not getting a chance to tell her, he heard Te Luo Si laugh grimly and started swinging his sword in a chop.

While the blade was being swung.

Where the sword swept past, a cold wind whistled past and despite the sun burning overhead, people could only feel a bone-chilling cold as if one fell into the nether world.

Bing Wu huffed and gracefully took out a dagger to block the attack.

Kacha!

The dagger was immediately broken in two.

“Careful!” Xie Aoyu saw it clearly. Taking a hold of Bing Wu, he was able to avoid her getting a savage chop to her chest. This

caused her to stagger and hit Xie Aoyu's chest but she was able to avoid the deathblow.

However where the sword brush past one could see a half meter deep recess in the ground.

Xie Aoyu started at the sword in Te Luo Si's hand and said, "That is your Ao Te Si clan's holy weapon. The Lightning... Spirit... Holy... Sword."

[1] [TL:Sorry about the somewhat trolling translation... it's both what was put and this is the last line I translated]

[2] [TL: No clue about the line above... 把个谢傲宇气的差点抓狂。]

[3] [TL:I think the author screwed up and meant upper beginner]

[4] [TL: Beginner = 1st || Ascension = 5th]

[5] [TL: I used remnant for 余孽... it has a negative connotation]

[6] [TL: the [*] was 闪过一抹冷光.. which was talking about the sword flashing coldly?]

Chapter 9: Fury

Swish!

Te Luo Si held the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword up. The cold sword twinkled purple as if emanating from a fierce purple lightning dragon.

“You have good eyes. This is my Ao Te Si clan’s treasure... the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword!” Te Luo Si said proudly. “During that time when your father, Xie Qian, killed my clan, without a doubt he wanted to obtain this Holy weapon; fortunately, he didn’t get the chance. Instead, now you will lose your life to the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword!”

Weapons also have different ranks.

The ranks commonly known by people are common grade, high-grade, top grade, sage grade, holy grade, and emperor grade which is the highest.

The higher the grade of a weapon, the stronger and more destructive it is.

Among the various types of weapons, the main type is the sword. Yet among them, there are very very few swords of the emperor grade. There also isn’t very holy grade swords. In the entire city of Langye, there is only one holy grade weapon and that is the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword.

It has the lightning property as well!

Xie Aoyu eye's contracted, taking on a cold light.

He is of the earth, lightning, and wood properties and before his eyes is a lightning property sword. Not only that, it is of the holy grade. It is easy to guess what is going through Xie Aoyu's mind.

"Nice sword. I want it." Xie Aoyu said with a smile.

Him speaking like this startled Te Luo Si. Bing Wu simply wasn't his match, compared to his cultivation hers was much lower; he also has the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword. If Te Luo Si wanted to kill Bing Wu it would be as easy as falling off a log(easy as pie). Yet, unexpectedly, Xie Aoyu is acting like this.

Could it be that he can cultivate Qi?

No way, Not possible. I(Te Luo Si) was continuously observing in secret. He definitely cannot cultivate Qi. He is certainly stalling and trying to think of a way to escape. Te Luo Si sneered. "You want it? Too bad you won't live to have it." He once again brandished the sword.

When the sword swung, a purple light flashed.

Holy grade weapons just have this kind of benefit.

That is, even without using too much Qi, it can still have astonishing destructive power.

“I will deal with him.” Xie Aoyu said as he gently pushed Bing Wu away.

Bing Wu who was thinking of attacking again felt an overwhelming power. Her body was like a piece of cotton as it flew back 5-6 meters.

On the otherhand Xie Aoyu lightly stepped to the left to dodge.

In such a fashion he dodged the attack.

Can it be?!

Bing Wu's maiden heart frantically beated. The idea in her mind excited her. A pair of beautiful eyes were firmly set on Xie Aoyu.

Te Luo Si also found it to be a small problem. He suddenly stepped and exploded forward, charging straight for Xie Aoyu while swinging his Lightning Spirit Holy Sword down.

“Careful!” Bing Wu still feeling anxious called out.

Seeing the swing of the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, as well as its dense cold air Xie Aoyu couldn't help but call out his desire,

“That sword, I definitely want it.”

Hearing this almost bent Te Luo Si's nose, he struck down vigorously.

Xie Aoyu understood clearly. This is a fight to the death, not a simple contest. The best method would be to kill his enemy in a single hit so he hid the Overlord Dragon Boxing technique while he looked for an opportunity.

Confronting the ferocious Te Luo Si, his body flashed.

Like a ghost he weaved about through Te Luo Si's frenzied attack.

If one said Te Luo Si was the raging ocean, with stormy waves covering the sky, then Xie Aoyu was a small boat amidst those waves following the winds yet never being overturned nor flooded.

Swish Swish Swish...

Te Luo Si struck continuously over 10 times.

The purple sword flashed, filling the area with its after image. Te Luo Si had already determined that Xie Aoyu could cultivate Qi and that he wasn't weak, so he was even more ferocious.

The sword was swung in a never-ending assault.

During this time, Xie Aoyu just dodged. At the same time, he was critically examining the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword. Its length and design were both very pleasing. The only thing that wasn't was the fact that its user wasn't him.

“Lightning Wave!”

Seeing that he wouldn't succeed, Te Luo Si started to worry. This place was the Langye City and since many years ago it had already become the Xie Clan's. With so many of them around it wouldn't be hard to discover him.

So he used a sure-kill move.

Just that, when he started to use the sure-kill move, Xie Aoyu started attacking with his fist. He didn't have time to use the sure-kill move. The peerless overbearing attacks of the Dragon Overlord Boxing started.

Bang!

When he punched his fist, a huge fist's shadow appeared in the air. [\[1\]](#)

The shadow that appeared, despite indistinct, seemed as if a violent dragon... as if the silhouette of the Overlord Dragon. It seemed like the fist was a dragon egg containing the Overlord Dragon.

The suddenness made Te Luo Si unable to react.

Xie Aoyu used all his strength in this killer blow and as a result he hit his attack first.

Death came.

That fearful blow struck across Te Luo Si's chest.

puff...

This punch actually pierced Te Luo Si's chest. A huge hole appeared and the internal organs and blood crashed out of his body. Te Luo Si stared, wide-eyed at Xie Aoyu, unable to believe what happened as he slowly fell down.

The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword also fell to the ground.

Xie Aoyu walked forward, and picked up the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword. "A good sword heh!"

He ran his finger across the body of the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword. Immediately a dang dang sound was emitted. The sword quivered, as if a very cold chilly wind blew across one's face.

"Ao Yu, You... You..." Bing Wu was completely stunned.

Xie Aoyu then stored the Lightning Spirit Holy sword, as he took on a cruel appearance and said, “I am an expert.”

Chuckle!

The shocked Bing Wu couldn't help but laugh out loud. She pounced onto Xie Aoyu chest, happily saying, “You really can cultivate Qi. Awesome! Awesome!”

Her delicate body had long ago developed. Hugging Xie Aoyu like this while jumping about caused the heavenly refuge on her chest to rub Xie Aoyu's chest. Which in turn gave Xie Aoyu an intense male reaction.

Ah!

Bing Wu felt an uncomfortable bump in her lower region, looking down, she immediately let out a scream.

“Hehe, I'm also a man.” Xie Aoyu laughing dryly said.

“Letcher.” Bing Wu said as her hand shot out and hit him. She then turned around and ran.

“If its broken, then what are you going to do?” Xie Aoyu said as he rubbed his crotch.

This caused the embarrassed Bing Wu to run even faster.

Xie Aoyu looked at Te Luo Si's corpse, mumbling to himself, "Even with this stinking smell, I was still aroused by that little girl Bing Wu. Men are sure enough men."

He then took the interspacial ring from the finger of Te Luo Si.

The binding force on the ring was gone so he checked what items were inside the ring. There were some fighting techniques, unfortunately he didn't have the chance to really read them.

He cleaned the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword and then turned to leave. At this point, he thought like he saw a shadow, as if someone ran away.

Xie Aoyu was perturbed. His ability to use Qi cannot be known because the one who poisoned Xie Qian still hasn't been discovered. If the killer learns about his ability then he will also be in danger. Xie Aoyu immediately chased and called out, "Xiao Bai burn Te Luo Si's corpse."

Using Qi, his speed was incredibly fast.

Besides the time with Bing Wu, when they were headed to the new restaurant to eat food and took the shortcut. The path had very few people in it and no one blocked him so he quickly caught up.

"Xie Gang!" Once he saw the person he recognized who it was.

It really is Xie Zhe's hunting dog, Xie Gang.

Xie Gang seeing that Xie Aoyu discovered him, immediately started running for his life.

With him running this fast, obviously he already saw me killing Te Luo Si. Xie Aoyu's mind was made up. He already thought about the crux of the issue.

If Xie Gang didn't see it, he would definitely try to bully me not run away. He would definitely find trouble.

At the same time another question arose in Xie Aoyu's mind.

Since this place is extremely remote, what are the chances would Xie Gang be here and coincidentally see Te Luo Si come to kill him? A thought flashed through Xie Aoyu's mind.

This past year, even though he had continuously trained hard, he was still aware of the happenings that occurred in his Xie Clan. That is that someone has been murdering those among his peers in the clan. To the point that even Xie Lian came out and ordered him to not go out lightly.

Seeing Xie Gang this time, he noticed a trend.

Those who were murdered in the Xie Clan, all seemed to be

people who more or less had grievances with Xie Zhe and Xie Gang.

This train of thought raised Xie Aoyu's blood lust.

He threw the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword.

whoosh!

The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword emitted a sharp sound as it sailed through the air.

Xie Gang who was running for his life heard the sound and turned his head to look. Scared out of his mind, he quickly dodged to the left. However, the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword scraped the left side of his rib cage.

A bloody cut appeared with blood freely flowing. Blood and flesh changing roles. [\[2\]](#)

Xie Gang screamed in pain.

In a flash, Xie Aoyu leapt over. He placed one foot Xie Gang stepping on him.

“Speak! Why are you here?” Xie Aoyu coldly asked as he grabbed the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword and placed it across Xie Gang's neck. The piercingly cold blade of the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword made Xie Gang shudder in fear.

“I, I...” Sweat dripped from Xie Gang’s forehead.

Xie Aoyu said coldly, “Are you guys allied with Te Luo Si? Secretly killing those brothers and sisters of the Xie Clan?”

“No.” Xie Gang screamed.

Swish!

Xie Aoyu’s hand twitched.

A scratch appeared on Xie Gang’s neck and blood started flowing.

“If you don’t speak, I will kill you right now. In any case people don’t know that I can cultivate Qi, so no one will suspect me.” Xie Aoyu said coldly. “If you speak, I can let you live.”

“If I speak you won’t kill me?.” Xie Gang said with a trembling voice.

The sword in Xie Aoyu’s hand flashed in front of Xie Gang. Scared he said, “I’ll speak, I’ll speak! If you don’t kill me, I will tell you who is poisoning the Sixth Elder.”

The Sixth Elder is Xie Aoyu’s father, Xie Qian.

[\[1\]](#) [TL: not sure about this one]

[\[2\]](#) [TL:I think its saying the flesh is now covered in blood as opposed to flesh covering the blood]

Chapter 10: Calm

These words shocked Xie Aoyu.

“Who is it?” Xie Aoyu said in a deep voice while bending down.

From within the through came a clap of thunder. Shocking Xie Gang and making a buzzing sound in his ears. Xie Gang and Xie Zhe are part of the failures*. These two have very limited talent, they are still only of the basic elementary realm and is the least bit comparable to someone like Xie Aoyu.

“It is... it’s the fourth elder Xie Kun.” Xie Gang said.

“Xie Kun!?” Xie Aoyu’s eyes widened. “How do you know?”

Xie Kun is Xie Zhe’s father and is also the fourth elder of the Xie clan. Furthermore, he is one of the two pharmacists of the Xie Clan. The other pharmacist was of the same generation as Xie Aoyu and just started learning the fundamentals so he really didn’t count as a pharmacist yet. So it could be said that Xie Kun has been the only pharmacist of the Xie clan.

The status of a pharmacist isn’t a simple one.

The occupation of a pharmacist is rather special and is counted as one of the more elite professions. In the Qi Ao continent, it is the most well-received profession. So despite Xie Kun’s strength being nothing special, because he is the sole pharmacist in the Xie Clan,

his position is still very high.

“It is... it is because Xie Zhe told me it once after we were drinking.” Xie Gang explained.

“Did he also say why Xie Kun did this?” Xie Aoyu said as anger erupted in his heart. He believed Xie Gang has no reason to have lied to him.

Ever since, despite Xie Zhe not being very amicable with him, he still had respect for Xie Kun. **Hearing their names, one can already figure it out. The name of Xie Aoyu’s father is Xie Qian while the name of Xie Zhe’s father is Xie Kun. Together they are known as the Xie clan’s Heaven and Earth, and they carry the dreams of the clan’s growth.** [\[1\]](#)

There was no way he would have thought it was Xie Kun who did it.

At the same time he thought about the strange problem and came up with a solution. That is in the past 3 year, there was no trace of the assailant. Who would have thought that the terrible fiend would have been one’s own. What are one’s own tendencies, that would be something Xie Kun would know. Also after Xie Kun acted, he has never done it again.

“I... I don’t know. Xie Zhe never said why.” Xie Gang said in a trembling voice.

Xie Aoyu replied, “I will go ask Xie Zhe about this matter.” Then changing the subject, “Did you and Xie Zhe colluded with Te Luo Si and kill those Xie clan members whom you two had a problem with?”

Xie Gang fearfully gave Xie Aoyu a glance. “Yes, but, that was all Xie Zhe’s doing, I just... AHHHHH!”

Since he admitted, Xie Aoyu lowered the sword and drove into Xie Gang’s neck.

“AHHHH... AHHHHHHHHH...” Xie Gang tried to seal the wound on his neck. He wanted to ask why but words wouldn’t come out his mouth.

Xie Aoyu then coldly said, “I am like this to people who admit, much like the trash you are, that they are scumbags who are willing to even kill their own family. You don’t have any qualifications at all (to live?).

After killing Xie Gang, Xie Aoyu wasn’t the least bit happy, but instead very angry.

He wanted revenge.

But with regards to Xie Kun, he could only bottle up his hate and anger. Truth be told, Xie Kun’s fighting capabilities are ordinary, much like many people in their thirties and forties. He hasn’t even past the Advance level boundary and much like his son, belonged

to with the other refuse. But because he was a pharmacist, without even mentioning his prestige, and only due to the mere fact that he was a pharmacist, people would fear him.

A Pharmacist, isn't only capable of refining aid for people or creating spiritual pills, they are also capable of making poisons. Xie Aoyu also knows that Xie Kun can make poisons.

If he wanted to confront Xie Kun then obviously he would need a way to face his poisons.

Now, If Xie Aoyu were to go to the clan head Xie Lian, he should just give up... that is because Xie Lian and his father only share the same father, not mother and while their relationship turned out well, Xie Lian, being the clan head has to focus more on the Xie Clan as a whole.

The Xie Clan's only pharmacist. Would Xie Lian agree to kill him?

Moreover, Xie Qian isn't dead, he is just in a coma.

So in order to get revenge for his father, he could only rely on himself to act!

Xie Aoyu thoughts wandered to the pharmacist Ziyan, who is a Master level pharmacist. Ziyan's strength isn't weaker than Xie Kun's. If he can get guidance from Ziyan, then there is hope.

Having thought of this, Xie Aoyu ran towards Ziyan's domicile.

“Ao Yu, Why did you just now come? I've waited half a day for you already.” Having just left that remote place, He saw Bing Wu looking about.

Seeing Bing Wu with that eager expression, Xie Aoyu's ruthlessness and lack of awareness faded, even his anger calmed.

He discovered, inside there is still a lot of question that need to be answered.

He still can't just act anxiously.

He needs to calm down!

He definitely needs to calm down. He should definitely not act rashly. Xie Aoyu then continuously admonished himself. If he were to take risks, it is highly possible he would fail and die.

Having been ridiculed and sneered at for almost 10 years, he had early on already learned how to temper himself. Xie Aoyu was comparatively more mature and calm than others when encountering something unusual. He wasn't as prone to impulses.

“I saw an acquaintance.” Xie Aoyu said smiling. “Let's walk, and go eat. My treat.”

“I still can’t eat. Seeing Te Luo Si death, I still feel nauseated. Let’s not eat and go play instead. This year, aside from cultivating, the only other thing we did was cultivated. It’s so boring.” Bing Wu suggested. [\[2\]](#)

“Okay, I hear you.” Xie Aoyu was only thinking about letting himself calm down. He did not want his anger and hate to cloud his eyes.

As a result, the two youngsters went sight-seeing Changye City’s scenery.

Bing Wu’s optimism, self-confidence, and laughter allowed Xie Aoyu to gradually calm the flames of his anger with reason. He was then able to think of some issues, with the first being about Xie Kun and his poison.

If it was Xie Kun who poisoned his father, where was he able to obtain such a deadly poison?

That even a Master pharmacist like Ziyan, who even with such a long time, was unable to find an antidote. How did Xie Kun get such a poison?

And if someone else gave him that poison, then wouldn’t that mean he has an accomplice?

If it were something he made himself, then would he still have more of that high-grade poison?

Many more questions like these arose in Xie Aoyu's mind.

After parting company with Bing Wu, Xie Aoyu put into action his plan. This was to head to Ziyan's residence. He hopes she will be able to provide him with a solution.

Ziyan's residence was located in the middle of the city inside a tower.

When he arrived, Zi Yan was in the middle of researching a method for creating medicine.

"Young man, what interest do you have in finding me? Ziyan looked at Xie Aoyu with a bit of amazement. "Your father shouldn't be having any issues."

"There is nothing wrong with my father. the issue I came to elder sister Ziyan for is for myself." Xie Aoyu said.

Ziyan gave a lovely smile, "You came looking for me? Don't tell me you have something sinister in mind?"

Despite seeing that lovely and arousing smile, for the first time, Xie Aoyu was not distracted. He calmly and plainly said, "Elder sister Ziyan, Can you tell me if I can become a pharmacist?"

"You want to become a pharmacist?" a stunned Ziyan asked.

“How did you suddenly come up with that idea? Is it because you want to be together with me?”

“Yeah, thats the idea.” Xie Aoyu laughed.

Ziyan put down the stuff she was carrying and said, “If one wanted to become a pharmacist, it is required one have two affinities, the first is the fire and the second is the nature. You should already know that... and although you already have the nature affinity you don’t have the fire affinity, so you can’t become a pharmacist.

“Is it possible that there is no other way?” Xie Aoyu asked.

Ziyan hesitantly said, “There is a way.”

The originally sullen Xie Aoyu rejoiced hearing those words. “How?”

“Becoming a pharmacist isn’t possible but you have the nature element. You can still practice medicine via the... Spirit... Finger.” Ziyan said.

[1] [TL: Qian can carry the meaning of Heaven and Kun carries the meaning of Earth. Together (Qiankun) it means Heaven and Earth or universe, or in my assumption the use in this case is something like a pillar or foundation.]

[2] [TL:yes, it is both cultivate]

Chapter 11: Medical Spirit Finger

“Medical Spirit Finger? The legendary skill that is said to be able to cure 10,000 poisons with a single finger?*” Xie Aoyu said with amazement. [\[1\]](#)

Ziyan said while laughing, “It doesn’t show, but you are well-read, you even know about the medical spirit finger.”

“I saw it in a book before. The medical spirit finger technique was invented three thousand years ago by a medical saint Yun Dingtian. At that time he had lost to a poison saint. So after 10 years of intensive study he was finally able to create the medical spirit finger technique. In another exchange with the poison saint with just the use of a single finger, he was able to get rid of all the deadly poison.” Said Xie Aoyu.

“What you said is absolutely correct.” Ziyan nodded.

Seeing Ziyan reply in this manner had Xie Aoyu confused.

There are many wanting to learn the medical spirit finger technique however, it was the medical saint’s top skill, said to be able to cure any poison with the use of a single finger. A miracle skill that could dissolve any poison with the use of a single finger.

although this medical spirit finger is known to exist, however with regards to its cultivation method, where would there be a person who knew that.

Seeing Xie Aoyu perplexed face, Ziyan couldn't help but laugh. "I happen to have the method to cultivate the medical spirit finger. However training in it is painfully hard. It can even be considered torture. If you are unable to endure not only will you be hurt, but you will also lose the ability to use the finger... So...."

"I want to practice!" Xie Aoyu said firmly.

"Are you sure? I have to remind you. Ever since the medical saint until now, there hasn't been a second person who was able to successfully master it. And of those who tried to learn it, their finger is already useless." Ziyan said seriously.

Inside Xie Aoyu's head the figure of Xie Qian flashed. For the sake of Xie Aoyu, Xie Qian risked his life for the Dragon Overlord Boxing technique. For Ao Yu, he travelled across the whole continent seeking to obtain a solution on how to cure Ao Yu's inability to cultivate qi. He went through many hardships for Xie Aoyu. So Xie Aoyu quietly said, "I want to practice."

Underneath the calm appearance, Ziyan felt an unflinching confidence from Xie Aoyu.

"Alright, since you want to practice, I will then personally help you practice." Ziyan said.

"Many thanks elder sister Ziyan." Xie Aoyu rejoiced. If he could practice the medical spirit finger technique then that means he can get his revenge. This made Xie Aoyu incredibly happy. "Would you

like for little brother to give you a kiss as thanks?”

Ziyan’s pretty eyes widened. She tapped her finger on Xie Aoyu’s forehead. Unhappily saying, “Spoiled brat. You still dare cheapen your older sister? humph! Earlier you had a different atmosphere and it made me feel positive about this, but now you dare take liberties with your elder sis?”

“Hehe, Shouldn’t I give thanks to you, elder sis?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“If you can practice the medical spirit finger technique, that would be the biggest thanks you can give your elder sister.” Ziyan said seriously. “Brat, I will once more remind you. The medical spirit finger technique isn’t as easy as you think to learn.”

Xie Aoyu said, “I will definitely succeed!”

Seeing Xie Aoyu continuing like this, Ziyan didn’t need to say anymore. She then immediately started to prepare what was needed to learn the medical spirit finger technique.

After an hour had passed, Ziyan completed her preparations.

“In order to master the medical spirit finger, there are two major problems. The first one is with regards to entering the fundamental stage. In order to enter the fundamental stage, one needs to be baptized by a Divergent Flame. This is an incredibly painful process. You should believe that a divergent flame is highly incomparable to a normal flame. The second issue, and probably

the most difficult is that you need to collect various exotic plants and herbs. This single point can be considered extremely difficult because who knows how many rare plants you would need to be able to complete your medical spirit finger. As far as I know, There is a practitioner of the medical spirit finger in the mainland continent who despite being fostered by three of the foremost families is still unable to collect sufficient rare plants and is unable to obtain mastery.” Ziyan explained.

Xie Aoyu said, “Divergent Flame? Elder sis can produce a divergent flame?”

“Of course! If I didn’t have a divergent Flame, then I would forever be trapped at the lowest levels of an alchemist.” Ziyan proudly said with a smile, “My divergent flame is the extremely high level Shadow Demon Spirit Fire.”

“Shadow demon spirit fire?!” Xie Aoyu cried out.

“You also know about this?” Ziyan asked.

Nodding his head, Xie Aoyu answered, “I once read it in a book. It gave an explanation about divergent flames. Although divergent flames don’t have different ranks, there is still big differences in their strengths. It said that the strongest of divergent flames could burn down a whole mountain forest with a single spark. The shadow demon spirit fire can be placed as the top fifth divergent flame and among those, it is very similar.

Ziyan clicked her tongue in wonder and said, “Many said you

were scholarly, now I really believe them.”

Xie Aoyu had a forced smile. He was well-read due to the fact that read all kinds of books in order to try and remove his special physical ailment. As a result his knowledge of the natural world was extremely rich.

“Not having a divergent flame means you can’t become a high level alchemist? Does that mean without a divergent flame there is no way to refine high level medicine?” Xie Aoyu asked. This actually was one of the questions he was concerned about.

“Definitely. As the level of the medicine increases, the needed divergent flame also increases. In this way the success rate can still be higher. Much like the refinement of the poison in your father, the divergent flame, I fear, is much greater than even my shadow demon spirit fire.” Said Ziyan.

It looks like that poison was given to Xie Kun by someone else.

Since another person gave it to him, he most likely does not have any more. After all, to refine that kind of poison, not only does one need an incredibly strong divergent flame, one also needs incredibly high quality ingredients. Xie Aoyu didn’t think someone would just arbitrarily give this kind of poison to Xie Kun.

This gave Xie Aoyu an increase in his confidence to obtain revenge.

“Oh yeah, If you were to compare the ability of the Xie Clan’s fourth elder. At what point would the medical spirit finger be able to compete with him?” Xie Aoyu asked another important question of his concerns.

Ziyan didn’t know Xie Aoyu’s train of thought. With a faint smile she answered, “Your clan’s fourth elder.. hmm. He is likely at the fundamentals phase. Not only does he not have the ability to produce a divergent fire, his skills with regards to producing various pills is meager. If you were to just have the fundamentals of the medical spirit finger skill, you would defeat him.”

“At what point would the skill be considered at the fundamental level?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“Your finger would change into a light gold color. That would be the indication that you have entered the fundamental level. Beyond the fundamental level, if it were to become a solid gold color, that would indicate you are at the peak level. And if it were to fully change back to normal, you would have mastered it.” Ziyan explained. “Also to enter the fundamental level, we need to temper your finger using a divergent flame. For each level you would need a stronger and stronger flame. Also for the fundamental level, if you were unable to obtain that, you would lose the ability to use that finger. Don’t forget in order to completely master it, you would still need to collect a large number of herbs in order to absorb their essence.

Smiling, Xie Aoyu brought out his left hand’s pinky.

He is right-handed. No matter what he does, be it even fighting,

he normally uses his right hand, not really paying attention to his left hand. Also, this finger is the hardest for people to notice.

“Are you certain?” Ziyang asked one final time.

“Yes!”

Xie Aoyu answered with determination.

Seeing him like this, Ziyang didn't ask any more questions. She brought out some crushed herbs, 3 different medical lotions and medical powder and mixed and spread them on Xie Aoyu's finger.

It gave off a slight chill, to Xie Aoyu, it felt very comfortable. He knew, that in fact this divergent flame was only a small factor. What would really allow him to enter the fundamental stage are these medicines and even more fearful was who knew how many top grade items he would need.

After evenly spreading the ointment, Ziyang said, “I will now begin.”

Xie Aoyu hardened his resolve and gave a small nod.

Being burned by a divergent flame is very painful.

On the edge of Ziyang's finger a black flame emerged. It had emerged from her finger and pulsed, much like a dance from a

dancing girl.

The shadow demon spirit flames' emergence immediately caused the temperature to shoot up.

Ziyan slowly brought the shadow demon spirit flame closer to Xie Aoyu's finger. "If you can endure it, I will slowly increase the temperature."

After speaking, Ziyan brought up the shadow demon spirit flame.

As soon as the shadow demon spirit flame touched his finger, it immediately made the ointment's placed on his finger sizzle. Quickly the a warm current spread up from his finger, through his arms, across his chest, until finally settling in a spot in his brain.

"Does it hurt?" Ziyan asked cautiously. "If you want to quit right now, you still can."

Xie Aoyu looked at Ziyan weirdly and said, "I don't feel it." [\[2\]](#)

[\[1\]](#) [TL: 问何谓药神, 但看一指的传奇神技药神指吗? goes in *... it goes on about it being some finger skill or something]

[\[2\]](#) [TL: As in it doesn't hurt; not that he doesn't feel anything.]

Chapter 12

“What? What did you say?!” Ziyang almost leapt into the air.

Taking into account all of her experiences, she should be calm even if the heavens fell, but hearing Xie Aoyu’s words, she almost bounced up.

The flames from Shadow Demon Spirit Fire, a divergent flame that could be ranked within the top 5, unexpectedly had no effect.

What kind of joke is this!

“There’s no feeling.” Xie Aoyu understood, it was the work of the tri-colored ball, but this time he didn’t know that this method would lead to failing to practice Medical Spirit Finger. [\[1\]](#)

“Is there really no feeling? Punk, don’t pretend to be strong.” Ziyang said.

Xie Aoyu laughed and said, “Do you think I look like I’m pretending to be strong?”

If you don’t, then I do!” Ziyang eyes widened, “It’s me pretending to be strong, my God!”

“Ah?”

Xie Aoyu was stunned by Ziyan's foul language. [\[2\]](#)

“What are you looking at, never seen a pretty lady with a dirty mouth?” Ziyan said as she glared. She strongly said, “Even if a pretty lady says some foul language, it's because of you, you little freak! Even bathed in my shadow demon spirit fire and there's still no feeling, what a freak! I definitely need to study it.”

“Alright, do you want me to also take off all of my clothes?” Xie Aoyu laughed as he said.

“Little punk, you dare to try and take advantage of me.” Ziyan increased the strength of the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire.

But Xie Aoyu's reaction was still the same—not even the slightest feeling.

He only felt a little bit of heat coming from his fingers, entering into his left chest. It seemed as if it was all being gathered and absorbed by the tri-colored ball.

The potion and alchemist pills began to dissolve, gradually circulating into Xie Aoyu's fingers.

In fact, these things were being dissolved by the tri-colored ball but not absorbed and were stored in Xie Aoyu's finger instead, causing his finger to feel heavier.

At the same time, Ziyan gradually increased the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire, she carefully observed Xie Aoyu. It seemed there really

was no feeling. This made Ziyan sigh as she said, “Looks like you really can become the second practioner of Medical Spirit Finger.”

“Isn’t Medical Spirit Finger supposed to have even more difficult obstacles?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“Anyway,” Ziyan waved, “As long this obstacle is passed, you just need enough time to go to the Heng Duan Mountains. That place has countless exotic plants and herbs. I’ll think of a way to acquire some treasures, there’s still a lot of hope.”

Xie Aoyu thanked her saying, “Thank you very much elder sister Ziyan.”

Ziyan laughed and said, “No need to thank me. To be able to personally create a Medical Spirit Finger practioner, I, Ziyan will have more than enough to leave my name in history. To me, how could this reason not be a lifetime achievement?”

As the two of them laughed, the medicines had already made their way into Xie Aoyu’s finger.

“Alright, we’ll stop here for today. Come back the day after tomorrow. Remember to come at least once every two days.” Ziyan told him.

“If I do something else, will it be affected?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“Nope, you can do whatever. As long as you don’t cut that finger

off, it'll be fine." Ziyan said.

That was good, Xie Aoyu still wanted to cultivate.

Even wilder cultivation!

Fourth elder Xie Kun's real strength was perhaps very lacking, but it had already reached middle advanced level. He needed to cultivate Medical Spirit Finger unceasingly and also cultivate his qi.

True strength was essential!

After saying goodbye to Ziyan, Xie Aoyu returned to the Xie house. He planned to continue cultivating. Now he knew who had harmed Xie Gan, provoking Xie Aoyu to cultivate frenzily.

"Ao Yu!"

He had just gotten home when family head Xie Lian suddenly entered.

"Uncle, what's wrong?" Xie Aoyu asked.

Xie Lian's face was very ugly, "Ao Yu, do you still remember what I told you about the situation of someone killing family members?"

“I remember.” Once he heard this Xie Aoyu knew it the matter would have to do with Xie Gang. He stood still and listened.

Just now, someone found Xie Gang’s corpse!” Xie Lian’s two hands were behind his back as he paced across the room back and forth, “I specifically came here to tell you, until the killer is caught, do not go outside.”

Xie Aoyu could see Xie Lian’s concern for him. Because Xie family members had died, Xie Lian’s condition looked terrible, but he had rushed over to tell Xie Aoyu about the situation himself. This action warmed Xie Aoyu’s heart.

Xie Aoyu even had an urge to tell Xie Lian the truth.

In the end, he held back though.

“Uncle, do you know if my father and fourth elder had any ill will towards each other?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“Why would you suddenly ask this?” Xie Lian was startled.

Xie Aoyu bitterly smiled and said, “You’ve probably already heard, Xie Zhe has never been friendly to me. Ever since my father went into the coma, in the past three years, he’s practically been torturing me for fun.”

“That is...” Xie Lian frowned.

When Xie Aoyu saw this, he knew there was something wrong, “Uncle, please just tell me. At least let me understand why, rather than keeping me ignorant while being bullied.”

Xie Lian sighed and regretfully said “It’s my fault, once Xie Gan fell into the coma, I didn’t watch over you enough and let that Xie Zhe jerk bully you.”

“I don’t blame uncle.” Xie Aoyu didn’t feel reproachful, but instead was very grateful. He could see how well Xie Lian had treated him these past three years.

“Ah, the reason Xie Kun’s and your father’s grudge is because of the Ao Te Si family.” Xie Lian sank into old memories, “That year, your father and Xie Kun were our Xie family’s pillars—one fighting genius, one talented alchemist. They were each other’s supporters, causing the Xie family’s power to grow. Their eventual fallout was due to a divergent flame.”

After hearing Xie Lian’s words, Xie Aoyu finally understood why. That year the Ao Te Si family had discovered a divergent flame, but the Ao Te Si family didn’t have an alchemist so they wanted to keep quiet about the matter. They didn’t think that their rival already knew, and also didn’t know where Xie Kun received the news. Xie Kun then went to find the person who had found the flame.

In the end, before it was found, because Xie Gan knew the Ao Te Si family wanted to fight with the Xie family, they made the first

move, massacring the Ao Te Si family, beheading the only people who knew where the divergent flame was, and thus causing Xie Kun's hatred of Xie Gan.

“The alchemist occupation is special because if you want be a high-ranking alchemist, even master level or sage level, you need two things. One is a high level medicine refining technique, and the other is a divergent flame. Originally, the Divergent Flame was within reach, but your father extinguished that hope. Naturally Xie Kun came to hate your father, and that's why since then the two have never spoken. However, your father didn't know about the situation. Once he heard about the news, he immediately came back which is why they don't turn away from each other every time they see each other. It was only after your father's coma that Xie Kun finally put aside his hatred and started to look for a treatment method.” Xie Lian said.

Put aside his hatred?

Looking for a treatment method?

Xie Aoyu cursed Xie Kun's despicableness from his heart. Clearly he was the one that caused it, this despicable person. I will definitely make you pay for your actions.

“I don't think that's for certain. Maybe he's the one who caused it.” Said Xie Aoyu.

“Impossible. Absolutely impossible,” Xie Lian refused to believe.

Xie Aoyu said, “If it was him, what will uncle do?”

“That is...” Xie Lian shook his head, “But it’s definitely not him. He’s our Xie family’s top alchemist.”

Xie Aoyu didn’t ask again. He understood Xie Lian’s reasoning, of course he was very clear that Xie Lian’s actions were for the whole Xie family. It seemed like he could only count on himself.

[\[1\]](#) (TN: Seems like if he can’t feel the pain, there’s no effect and he doesn’t learn the technique)

[\[2\]](#) (TN: I diluted that “My God” earlier to a more kid-friendly phrase)

Chapter 13

Knowing the story behind Xie Gan and Xie Kun's grudge further added proof that Xie Kun was the culprit. This made Xie Aoyu wildly cultivate, even when he was exhausted, he refused to rest.

He remembered that he had also suffered constant ridicule from Xie Kun's son for the past three years.

Before, every time he had thought of Xie Kun, there had also been a feeling of respect and thankfulness towards him.

All these thoughts were driving Xie Aoyu crazy.

"Not good, if I don't vent a little, I'm going to go crazy." Xie Aoyu leapt up from the ground, and then woke up the sleeping Xiao Bai. "C'mon, let's go over to Xie Kun's place to play!"

As soon as he walked out of sixth elder's house , he discovered that the Xie home had already become a heavily guarded fortress.

Xie Aoyu began to walk around randomly, and after looking carefully, discovered a less guarded area. The truth was, Te Luo Si only killed those of his generation. That fact had already revealed that Te Luo Si was lacking in strength, without any way of fighting with the older generation. Naturally they wouldn't worry too much about him intruding to attack.

Finding this opportunity, Xie Aoyu slipped into the fourth elder's

house.

In the past, Xie Aoyu had come here more than once, and could be considered to be familiar with the place. Ao Yu was very skilled at sneaking around and soon arrived in the house's backyard.

This was the place that Xie Kun grew his herbs.

Once he had entered, there was a refreshing aroma wafted through the air.

There were flowers and herbs of all sorts of colors.

Then, behind these plants are Xie Kun and his son's residence. It was currently late at night, the moon was obscured, sometimes visible, other times not, and the residence was brightened by lights and shadows could be seen moving inside it.

Relying on his familiarity with the father and son, Xie Aoyu immediately knew that it was Xie Kun and Xie Zhe.

Xie Aoyu stealthily crept in towards that direction.

Reaching here, he made a flying leap and reached the roof, took off some tiles, and peered in. As he did so, he heard a loud slap on a face.

“Pa!”

Xie Kun slapped Xie Zhe very hard.

“Idiot. You actually worked with Te Luo Si to kill family members.” Xie Kun lowered his voice fearing others might hear; however, his face was full of rage and emitted killing intent.

“That can’t be blamed on me though, who told them to bully me all day, humiliate me, call me useless scrap. Otherwise I wouldn’t have...” Xie Zhe tried to excuse himself, but seeing Xie Kun raise his hand again, he quickly shut his mouth.

Xie Kun’s face was livid as he paced back and forth across the room.

Seeing the father son couple arguing, Xie Aoyu the feeling in his heart could be called happy. He told Xiao Bai to stay down and prepare to create a fire at any time.

“What’s the story with Xie Gang?” Xie Kun coldly said.

“Even I don’t know about that. I only let Xie Gang go to Te Luo Si to contact him. Who knew that Te Luo Si would kill him. That idiot Xie Gang definitely annoyed Te Luo Si.” Xie Zhe said.

Xie Kun squinted his eyes together and stared at Xie Zhe. He discovered that his son was really ruthless. That Xie Gang was his sworn brother, but as soon as Xie Gang had died, not only did he not feel remorse, but was already insulting the dead.

“Father, you, don’t look at me like that.” Xie Zhe began to worry for his life due to the frightening aura Xie Kun emitted.

Shaking his head, Xie Kun said, “You are so ruthless. If you weren’t my son, I’d kill you right now.”

Xie Zhe was terrified as a shiver ran down his spine, but he muttered, “If you’re so strong, you would have killed Xie Gan instead of sending him into a coma.”

“What did you say?” Xie Kun suddenly stepped forward, grabbed Xie Zhe by the collar, raising off the floor, “How do you know about this matter? Speak!”

Xie Aoyu who was still on the rooftop immediately pricked up his ears.

Xie Zhe grabbed Xie Kun’s hand and trembled as he said, “Father, I’m your son! Please don’t kill me! I heard it by chance! I’m telling the truth!”

Xie Kun’s face muscles twitched and twisted into a hideous face, fiercely swung his hand, throwing Xie Zhe onto the ground, “This matter, do not let anyone else know, otherwise...”

“I won’t say anything, I definitely won’t talk.” Xie Zhe yelled.

But it seemed a little strange to Xie Aoyu.

Because he felt like Xie Kun actually wanted to kill Xie Zhe.

“Remember, if this matter becomes known, your death will be very miserable. If it’s like that, it would be better if I gave a pleasant one now.” Xie Kun’s face was livid.

“Father, could it be...” Xie Zhe asked.

Xie Kun coldly said, “I don’t have a divergent flame, and I don’t have any special recipes, how could I refine a poison that even Master Ziyan can’t cure. It was given to me by someone else.” He said in a breath, “You go back and rest. Remember this, from now on, unless I give you permission, do not go outside.”

Xie Zhe wanted to ask for clarification, but seeing Xie Kun’s angry face, he closed his mouth again and quietly returned to his room.

“Unleash the flames!” Xie Aoyu yelled down to below after seeing this situation.

Long since finished with preparations, Xiao Bai immediately began to extravagantly wave it claws around.

In an instant, the skies were filled flying fireballs.

Individually, each one of these fireballs was weak, but by the number of them was amazing.

“Hong hong hong...”

The flowers and herbs were ignited on fire and burned fiercely.

Xie Aoyu picked up Xiao Bai and began running away, knowing that the Xie family members would notice, especially since they were currently in high alert.

“Thief! Stop!”

Xie Kun saw Xie Aoyu’s outline in a glance and cried out, and then he leapt to follow.

Once he had thrown Xiao Bai out, in order to avoid being seen, after all, in the Xie Family, the only person with a white spirit beast is him. At the same time he understood, since he was being pursued by Xie Kun, if poison was used, his life would really be in danger.

Then he ripped off a piece cloth to cover his face, took out the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, and fiercely slashed.

Under the moonlight, the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword left a trail of purple light in the sky.

During the sharp whistling sound before the first had found its mark, Xie Kun had already pulled out a cane knife.

“Kacha!”

The cane knife was cut in half.

Xie Kun was knocked away by the blow.

Xie Aoyu had cut the knife into two in an instant, giving Xie Kun no way to continue chasing. He then turned and leapt out of Xie Kun’s residence, and melted into the night.

Only after he had reached a safe spot did Xie Aoyu let out a breath of air, with the blackness of night as his insurance.

At the same time, he understood Xie Kun’s real fighting capabilities. He really was useless scrap, already few decades old person, but still only a middle advanced level.

If he hadn’t been an alchemist, Xie Aoyu would have used the thunder spirit knives and Dragon Overlord Boxing to already kill him.

But, hearing Xie Kun and Xie Zhe’s angry argument, his heart felt a breeze of pleasantness.

After securing his safety, he immediately began to pretend that

he had just seen the light from the fire, and blended in with the others as they went into the fourth elder's home. Seeing that raging temperamental Xie Kun's pain-stakingly grown plants were burned to nothing, his heart felt very happy.

As for the flowers that could help him with the Medical Spirit Finger, it didn't really matter.

Medical Spirit required herbs that were of the highest quality. These were all common ones.

You two, father and son, just watch and wait until I've successfully cultivated the Medical Spirit Finger, and then I will definitely take care of you both personally, Xie Aoyu secretly vowed.

After venting, Xie Aoyu finally felt relaxed.

After finally releasing the built-up frustration, he then returned to his own home, made the servants leave, and said to the unconscious Xie Gan, "Father, I know the identity of the person who poisoned you. Today I burned the plants that he pain-stakingly grew. Wait until I've cultivated the Medical Spirit Finger, then I'll get revenge!"

The following days, Xie Aoyu began to cultivate in a frenzy.

Other than the every other day when he would go to Ziyan to practice Medical Spirit Finger, he spent at the mountain crazily

cultivating his qi, gradually he found something was strange.

It was Ziyang's Shadow Demon Spirit Fire!

Chapter 14

Originally, Xie Aoyu had earth, thunder, and wood as his three attributes, when he found his qi, it was generally mixed with characteristics from all three, and when he used Dragon Overlord Boxing there were hints of the attributes in his attacks, but there would only be those three attributes, none of the others.

For example, Dragon Overlord Boxing had earth attributes.

When Xie Aoyu used Dragon Overlord Boxing, then the earth attribute would appear vigorously every time it was used, then the vigorous earth attributes were predominant.

Of course Dragon Overlord Boxing was a bit special; there were many characteristics of different fighting styles mixed into it. Right now Xie Aoyu was still far from being able to use the full power of Dragon Overlord Boxing, but since he was being accompanied by Ziyan's Shadow Demon Spirit Fire divergent flame to cultivate Medical Spirit Finger, he found out that he had gained the fire attribute.

It could only be said that it seemed like he had gotten it, because previously he had used an attribute testing crystal ball to test, and he hadn't had the fire attribute then, but that the other three kinds. However, when he used his qi, it really did feel like his qi had fire properties, specifically properties like the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire.

That was impossible.

Well, if it was real then it was real, if it was fake then it was fake.

“Xiao Bai, what do you think?” Xie Aoyu waved his sword around.

The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword emitted a light, and a slight swipe pulverizing a boulder into pieces, sending pieces of rock everywhere, and at the same the sword seemed to emit a slight sensation of burning.

“Yiya, yiya!” Xiao Bai heavily nodded, saying that there was indeed traces of fire.

Xie Aoyu rested the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword on his shoulders and laughed, “This is pretty weird. Maybe because big sis Ziyan has been helping me cultivate Medical Spirit Finger, I now gained the fire attribute as a result?”

But after thinking about it, Xie Aoyu felt like that was too incredible to be true.

Attributes were decided at birth. If there was any influence on it, the parents would have the biggest impact, then the environment that the woman was in during the pregnancy. As for a person changing attributes, that's not to say that it never happened before, Xie Aoyu had once read a book where it had happened, but it needed incredibly complicated stuff to go with it.

But now it happened to him because of the tri-colored ball.

This increased Xiao Ao Yu's interest in the tri-colored ball. What in the world was that thing?

It gave him enormous power.

Even disregarding Thunder God Smelting Body technique scroll's electricity.

It had allowed him to cultivate his qi.

Now he was emitting Shadow Demon Spirit Fire attributes. Every part was amazing, and it could be said that the tri-colored ball's miraculous power had completely changed Xie Aoyu's life.

Xie Aoyu went to the pond edge, reached his hand out towards the water, and clenched his fist.

Qi surged out, the water began to cling to itself and formed a small ball inside his hand. Xie Aoyu then slowly poured his qi into the small water ball.

Fire and water restrained each other.

Once qi entered in, without any effort from Xie Aoyu, it would naturally mixed homogeneously, but there were traces of flames that were once hidden that could not.

It was finally revealed.

“Yiya!” Xiao Bai’s eyes widened.

Seeing that flickering flame in the small water ball, its figure seemed exactly the same as Ziyan’s Shadow Demon Spirit Fire except the small flame seemed more illusory and seemed more unreal.

“It looks like this is Shadow Demon Spirit Fire primary stage.” Xie Aoyu muttered.

If he had gained Ziyan’s degree of mastery over Shadow Demon Spirit Fire, that would be way too scary. If you knew Ziyan, then you knew the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire could match against masters of Sage level and below.

Xie Aoyu shook his hand and threw out the small water ball.

At the same time, his qi completely went into the pond’s surface.

“Boom!”

A fiery shadow suddenly emerged.

In an instant, the pond’s water had become a waterfall and the depth increased by one meter, demonstrating the flame’s

terrifying power.

Obviously, this fire was far from the original Shadow Demon Spirit Fire, but its power was beyond any other ordinary flames.

The situation made Xie Aoyu come up with a strange idea.

If he combined many different divergent flames with the tri-colored ball in his body, what would happen? Would even Shadow Demon Spirit Fire, a formidable divergent flame, be able to hold a candle to it? [\[1\]](#)

Once this idea flashed in his mind, Xie Aoyu didn't think too much about it. After all, divergent flames were very rare. To be able to see one is already not bad.

“Your constitution really is weird.”

A clear, cold voice came from behind Xie Aoyu without warning, scaring him. No one should have known he was here cultivating his qi.

Quickly turning his body, Xie Aoyu kept alert as he looked behind him.

He caught a glimpse of Bing Wu.

“Heehee, this is my master.” Bing Wu pointed to the woman

beside her.

Xie Aoyu turned his head to look and saw the woman at Bing Wu's side. She was very tall, with skin as white as snow, wearing an unsoiled silk qipao which exaggerated her womanly curves. A gentle breeze blew, gently making her skirt flutter, just like an angel. Her beautiful eyes were like autumn water, moving like gentle waves. [\[2\]](#)

Without even trying, she could reject people who had come from thousands of miles away with her indifference alone. So this was the continent's amazing woman, Butterfly Queen You Lan Ruo. [\[3\]](#)

“Nice to see you again Senior.” Xie Aoyu saluted.

You Lan Ruo indifferently nodded her head, “Your father once sent someone to look for me concerning your special abilities. I studied it for a little while, but failed to get any results. Can you tell me how you can cultivate qi now?”

“Junior doesn't know either.” Xie Aoyu realized that he couldn't speak about the tri-colored ball. It was his biggest secret, “Junior cultivated Thunder God Smelting Body technique. Maybe it has to do with that.”

He also understood that if he wanted the amazing You Lan Ruo to believe him, he needed a convincing reason, and that one reason was the Thunder God Smelting Body technique.

After all, the Thunder God Smelting Body technique was famous across the continent as an Earth Level technique and one of the top body refining techniques.

“Thunder God Smelting Body technique?” You Lan Ruo knit her eyebrows.

“Junior’s thought process was like this: other than this, junior can’t think of anything else that changed before junior was able to cultivate qi.” Xie Aoyu answered, carrying a strange feeling that You Lan Ruo didn’t believe him.

You Lan Ruo lightly nodded her head, “You’ve been cultivating Medical Spirit Finger?”

Xie Aoyu was startled, and said, “Senior, how did you know?”

“I have a friend who practiced it before. Your left pinky is obviously a little different.” You Lan Ruo said, “And you have Shadow Demon Spirit Fire!”

His left pinky was only a bit thicker than his right pinky. If one didn’t look carefully, it wasn’t possible to tell the difference, but You Lan Ruo had clearly demonstrated that she could tell they weren’t the same.

She was really observant.

But he had also noticed that You Lan Ruo had really noticed the

Shadow Demon Spirit Fire. [\[4\]](#)

“That probably has to do with my constitution. Elder sister Ziyan has been helping me cultivate Medical Spirit Finger. I don’t know why, but my body now has some traces of Shadow Demon Spirit Fire.” Xie Aoyu said.

You Lan Ruo’s eyes emitted a golden light that swept across Xie Aoyu, examining him.

Xie Aoyu’s heart went wild for a few beats.

It was the rumored Illusion Breaking Eye. [\[5\]](#)

This was not a lower Emperor eye technique, but was an advanced eye technique that was extremely powerful, capable of seeing through all illusions and revealing the reality.

Could it see through the ti-colored ball?

Xie Aoyu was a little worried.

The sharp golden light rested on Xie Aoyu’s chest area for a moment, then swept past. You Lan Ruo flatly said, “Your constitution is pretty interesting.”

Letting out a breath of air, Xie Aoyu quickly changed the topic,

choosing not to continue talking about his constitution, he asked, “Senior, after coming here, do you have any advice?”

You Lan Ruo said, “I plan to take Bing Wu away for training and wanted to let her say goodbye. Other than that, I just wanted to see the divergent flame in you. A few days ago, I accidentally discovered a divergent flame in a cave next to Howling Wolf Mountain. Maybe you can take a look, see if you can accept it.”

[1] (TN: Haha, get it? Pun. I added it in there. It’s my pun. The original has no pun and but a similar meaning.)

[2] (TN: I couldn’t really translate this description very well. Text: 她娇躯高挑，肤色雪白，一袭结拜不染的真丝袖袍，勾勒出女人秀美的曲线，清风吹拂，香裙飘荡，宛若天仙，一双美眸宛若秋水，眸光闪动，波光潋滟。)

[3] (TN: Just know that’s she’s pretty and seems like she has a cold personality.)

[4] (TN: As in she had first noticed the SDSF then saw that his pinkies were different)

[5] (TN: 破妄之眼 got a better translation? Suggestions welcome.)

Chapter 15

“Bing Wu’s going to leave?” Xie Aoyu looked at Bing Wu.

You Lan Ruo began to rise into the air without moving a muscle and flew straight to the top of the waterfall to enjoy the scenery. Her floaty manner was like a fairy’s.

There was an unspeakable elegance.

Xie Aoyu looked on jealously. One day, he would also reach that level.

“Ao Yu.” Bing Wu’s pretty face was full of sadness.

“Where are you going to train?” Xie Aoyu asked softly.

“To the Heng Duan Mountain Range.” Bing Wu crouched down and sat next to the pond, “Teacher said that the Heng Duan Mountain Range is full of spirit beasts and also masters. It’s the best place to cultivate and reach my full potential in order to better place in the Continent Youth Competition.”

Heng Duan Mountain Range was Qi Ao continent’s largest mountain range.

Its distance from Langya City was not too far and one could reach it in only ten or so days, which is why there were so many

mercenaries in Langya City.

In fact, Xie Aoyu had also thought about going before.

He wanted to advance his strength quickly. Only cultivating at home was unrealistic. He needed someone to train with, and only enduring harsh training could he realize his potential.

So he decided: after he had finished his business with Xie Kun and Xie Zhe, he would go to the Heng Duan Mountain Range to train. This was practically the desire of every person who wanted to participate in the Continent Youth Competition and seize first place among his peers. There was even a chance to meet a future opponent in the competition there. And thus he decided to go.

“That’s also good, if the amazing Butterfly Queen herself is teaching you, I believe Bing Wu will definitely be the champion of the competition. I’ll prepare myself for the wedding.” Xie Aoyu quipped.

“Stupid Ao Yu.” Bing Wu’s pretty face blushed red as she replied angrily.

That soft and beautiful face looked even more charming, Bing Wu was already become mature, the slightest facial expression could cause ripples in a person’s heart.

Xie Aoyu also sat at the pond’s edge.

The two of them sat side by side.

The water cast a beautiful reflection.

“Ao Yu, have you really gained a divergent flame?” Bing Wu asked.

Xie Aoyu laughed and said, “How could it be that easy? You’re unclear about the matter. To have a divergent flame, first you need to be compatible with the fire attribute; otherwise, I think your teacher would have gone to get the divergent flame at Howling Wolf Mountain. I don’t have the fire attribute, but I have a Shadow Demon Spirit Fire prototype, probably due to my constitution. That’s why your teacher would tell me to go try it.”

“Ah, I’ve been to the location of the divergent flame. It’s very powerful. Teacher originally planned to let her Spirit Beast pet, a Wind-Fire Meteor Rainbow Butterfly, retrieve it, but because the Wind-Fire Meteor Rainbow Butterfly already had strong flames, it rejected the divergent flame; otherwise, with that divergent flame, the Wind-Fire Meteor Rainbow Butterfly could have advanced another level.” Bing Wu said.

“And that’s why I’m going to just test my luck.” Xie Aoyu shrugged. He planned on obtaining the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire prototype, but it raised his fighting power a bit and had already made him happy. After ten years of being mocked and taunted, he had become a different person. “Oh yeah, what divergent flame was it?”

Bing Wu replied, “It’s the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame.” [\[1\]](#)

So it was that kind of divergent flame, Xie Aoyu thought.

Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame is an outstanding type of divergent flame. There was a big gap between it compared to Ziyang’s Shadow Demon Spirit Fire, but Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame had an odd characteristic, which is that it could mature.

All divergent flames had prototypes forming processes.

Once formed, they would not change, but Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame was different. After it had transformed, it would still have the ability to mature further. This potential was found in magma.

If it had been formed in the magma, the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame prototype could most likely be swallowed. Any following advancements by the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame would greatly increase its power.

“Bing Wu.”

A quiet voice came from behind them.

Butterfly Queen You Lan Ruo appeared behind them like a ghost.

“I have to go.” Bing Wu said.

“Remember, safety first.” Xie Aoyu quietly said, “Who knows, maybe we’ll see each other again soon.”

Bing Wu bit her lips and nodded her head, her eyes became tender, and then suddenly leaned forward, hastily saying, “I’m going to miss you.” Then she turned away and ran.

You Lan Ruo took Bing Wu into the sky and flew off into the distance.

Staring intensely at the two figures disappearing into horizon, it was only once they were completely gone that Xie Aoyu looked away.

Even though the beauty had left, her smell still lingered.

Due to their frequent cultivation, he and Bing Wu hadn’t met that often recently, but now that she was gone, Xie Aoyu felt a sense of loss, as if something was missing.

Xie Aoyu looked towards the water fall, the pond, the rapids, and the forest.

A breeze passed through.

The sense of loneliness increased further.

“Maybe I should hurry my actions and forge my own path a bit earlier.” Xie Aoyu muttered to himself. He put away the Light Spirit Holy Sword back into its sheath. “Xiao Bai, let’s go, we’re going to go see the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame.”

“Yiya!”

Xiao Bai came out of the middle of the waterfall.

One man and one animal left the foot of the mountain, heading away from Langya City and straight for Howling Wolf mountain.

Howling Wolf Mountain was located south of Langya city. The mountain itself was not too tall, but it was the highest peak south of Langya city. The mountain was covered in lush forests and filled with spirit beasts.

Xie Aoyu had gone to the Howling Wolf Mountains many times, but never discovered the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame. Even now, if Bing Wu’s teacher hadn’t told him, he still wouldn’t have known about it and most likely would never have had a chance of finding it. Now, even though he knew the location of where the cave’s entrance was, it still took him half a day to find it.

It was a very common-looking cave.

In fact, you could tell that many people had come through here before, but no one had known that inside this cave there was a divergent flame. After Xie Aoyu arrived at about ten meters away

from the entrance of the cave, he used his hand to measure from the bottom of his foot to his waist, felt for a protruding rock and then twisted it gently.

“Creak...”

In front of him, the wall began to move by itself.

This was a mechanism.

“For the Ao Te Si family to have discovered this place, it must have been an accident.” When Xie Aoyu heard You Lan Ruo talk about this place’s divergent flame, he had already judged that it was the one the Ao Te Si family had discovered years before.

After all, it was impossible for divergent flames to be born within a thousand miles of each other.

That was to say, since Howling Wolf Mountain had a divergent flame, then within a thousand miles of Howling Wolf Mountain, you would not be able to find a second divergent flame. even if the all the conditions to create a divergent flame were prepared, there was still no way to materialize one. Someone either had to obtain the divergent flame or it had to be extinguished in order to form a new divergent flame.

Thinking about it, Xie Aoyu suddenly laughed.

The Ao Te Si clan had discovered a divergent flame, which led to

Xie Gan and Xie Kun’s estrangement, then Xie Gan had been poisoned by Xie Kun, and now that divergent flame was right in front of him.

Everything had come full circle. The world really was full of unexpected things. [\[2\]](#)

Xie Aoyu strode into the cave, at the same time pulling out the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword and readying it. Xiao Bai emitted a ball of light to light up the path, and then the two of them went forward.

[\[1\]](#) (TN: 地肺心炎 suggestions for the name? I suck at names. Most of the other names I stole from the previous translator. Hope he/she doesn’t mind o.o)

[\[2\]](#) (TN: Not sure how to translate数年的轮回)

Chapter 16

The entrance had obvious traces of people having come here before. The stairs went down one step at a time, and had a total depth of about sixty meters. The insides were more disappointing the further one went in. It felt cool inside rather than burning hot.

Xie Aoyu couldn't help but be amazed.

This was the divergent flame's characteristic. It could change its temperature to any degree, which is why it was hard for people to find it by just sensing high temperatures.

After going forty meters, Xie Aoyu's face suddenly changed.

It became extremely ugly.

“Yiya!”

Xiao Bai's mood drastically. His hair stood up and his eyes widened and stared at the inside.

Twenty meters below, there was a very broad area. The area's walls were covered in burn marks, and in the center there mass of intensely burning flames. This fire was only about half a meter tall. The fire's center was milky white.

It was the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame.

And next to the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame was a spirit beast that was currently circling the fire, its eyes staring greedily, thinking of a way to get the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame.

The spirit beast was at least two meters, its entire body covered in black fur, a head like a dragon with two sharp horns, a pair of blue eyes that shone fiercely with light, a crocodile tail that swung back and forth, and the most striking part was its tail split into three parts, each forming hook shapes, looking like it actually had three tails. [\[1\]](#)

“Three-tailed scorpion drake!” Xie Aoyu almost groaned out loud.

At that same time, his heart flooded with anger.

An anger directed towards Butterfly Queen You Lan Ruo!

The three-tailed scorpion drake was a spirit beast, an adult three-tailed scorpion drake was usually at the tuifan level. None could oppose that rank in Langya City, other than his father Xie Gan.

But in here was a three-tailed scorpion drake, which You Lan Ruo had apparently forgotten to tell him about it.

And it was very apparent that when You Lan Ruo had brought Bing Wu before, she had driven away the three-tailed scorpion, but didn't kill it. Thinking again, the entrance had a mechanism. Xie

Aoyu guessed that You Lan Ruo had put the three-tailed scorpion in here before she left.

Why would she do that?

The idea flashed through Xie Aoyu's mind.

He didn't have too much time to think though because the three-tailed scorpion drake had unleashed an earth-shattering roar, and began its terrible charge up.

Behind the shiny exterior, there was an ugly heart.

You Lan Ruo!

Xie Aoyu's heart surged with unquenchable hatred. If I don't die, I'll repay you tenfold for this!

"Let's go!" Xie Aoyu stretched out his hand for Xiao Bai to grab, and used his strength to fling Xiao Bai out of the way. He didn't want his cute little animal to be eaten along with him.

The three-tailed scorpion drake's speed was unbelievable.

While still far away, it opened its mouth and spat out a fireball.

Dragon Overlord Boxing!

Xie Aoyu punched fiercely from a distance.

This punch contained all of his strength, light formed around the fist, surrounding it for about half a meter, and in the inside it transmitted the roar of a Dragon Overlord.

Dragon Overlord, the king of dragons, and dragons were the among the top of beasts.

It could be said that the Dragon Overlord was the supreme king of beasts.

Hearing the roar, the three-tailed scorpion drake was clearly surprised.

“Boom!”

The fireball was destroyed by Dragon Overlord Boxing, and showed its clear superiority by continuing on and hitting the three-tailed scorpion drake without losing power, sending it flying down.

Xie Aoyu then seized this opportunity to find a way to get away.

“ROOOAAAARRRRR!!!”

The three-tailed scorpion drake lifted up its head and roared,

filled with anger. It had been beaten down by a tiny human. How could it tolerate that?

While angrily roaring and raging three-tailed scorpion drake, began running up again.

At the same time, tons of fireballs suddenly came out of its body, and flew out as if it was raining. [\[2\]](#)

Xie Aoyu then covered his body in qi to protect himself and kept running for the exit, his only thought was to use the mechanism to close the door.

“Bang bang bang...”

The fireballs continually struck Xie Aoyu’s back, forcing him to clench his teeth in pain, barely able to withstand the pain, his entire body tottering, unable to continue at his pace.

The three-tailed scorpion drake violently exploded forward, leaping up at least twenty meters, soaring towards Xie Aoyu, its blood-red mouth wide open, its sharp teeth bared, gleaming with cold light, its claws hidden sharpness exposed as it stretched out, gleaming with light.

After being hit by fireballs to the point of spitting blood, Xie Aoyu seemed to have been dazed, staring as the three-tailed scorpion drake leapt to kill and didn’t make a move.

“Hiss....”

The three-tailed scorpion drake issued a bloodthirsty sound.

It was at exactly the moment the three-tailed scorpion drake landed, approximately two meters away from Xie Aoyu, Xie Aoyu eyes emitted a cold light.

“Ka!”

The treasured sword made a small sound.

It turned out that when Xie Aoyu had seen the three-tailed scorpion drake, he knew he'd suffer. Because of the three-tailed scorpion drake's level, there was almost no chance of him escaping; thus, he thought of this strategy. Keeping the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword in its scabbard, he pretended to try to escape.

The reason was the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword.

Because it was a holy weapon.

Using both hands to hold the knife, gathering all of his body's strength, all of its qi, Xie Aoyu's spirit energy was all fused into the sword to produce his strongest slash.

“Shua!”

The sword's light split the heavens.

Like a falling meteor, the galaxy flowing out, it was a dazzling strike.

“Roar!”

The three-tailed scorpion drake roared, it was a tuifan level spirit beast with a high level of intelligence. It naturally could tell that this sword was dangerous and could definitely kill it.

As quickly as it could, the three-tailed scorpion drake suddenly lowered its head.

“Kacha!”

A sound rang out. The three tailed scorpion drake's horns were cut in half, displaying the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword's sharpness, but Xie Aoyu was spitting out blood from the recoil and then flew back.

Directly running to the exit.

“Roar!!!”

The three-tailed scorpion drake was unbelievably angry.

Xie Aoyu had no time to be upset that his strongest slash didn't work, frantically running for the exit. As long as he could get out of there, he would survive.

“Boom boom boom...”

He had just sprung up as he saw above him there was fireball coming. It fell right in front of the entrance, exploding with fire, and another ten fireballs landed on his back.

“Thump!”

Xie Aoyu fell to the ground.

It was over.

Xie Aoyu cried a little inside. He understood that trick had been the three-tailed scorpion drake's plan, and that it had been carefully calculated. If he couldn't seriously injure the three-tailed scorpion then he would not have a chance.

His heart was full of fear.

To think that he had suffered ten years of ridicule, endured ten years of pain, finally changing after great effort, and had found the person who had harmed Xie Gan. He just couldn't understand why Butterfly Queen You Lan Ruo wanted to kill him.

Why?

He thought of Butterfly Queen You Lan Ruo, that floating, immortal-like, graceful beauty, but inside she was very ugly. He swore to himself: If I, Xie Aoyu, don't die, I'll pay this back tenfold!

[3]

[1] (TN: I think I didn't fully understand the splitting part.)

[2] (TN: Hallelujah, it's raining fireballs.)

[3] (TN: Of course MC dies here so he'll never get revenge. Don't worry guys. After next chapter this story will be over. JK.)

Chapter 17

The heart still hadn't given up, but there was nothing left to try.

Xie Aoyu watched the three-tailed scorpion drake leap to kill, staring into those murderous eyes, staring at the sharp claws, he really had no hope.

He thought of his bitter experiences.

Xie Aoyu's heart began to race again. Even if he died, he would go down in a blaze of glory and definitely never stop fighting because I am Xie Aoyu!

His long ten years of dissatisfaction exploded out.

Xie Aoyu howled, desperately slashing the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword at the three-tailed scorpion drake's neck, viciously stabbing there, intending to perish together.

“Roar!”

The three-tailed scorpion drake roared, opening its mouth intending to spit out flames.

It was at this critical moment, the previously thrown Xiao Bai suddenly appeared from behind Xie Aoyu, its pair of pitch black eyes from emitted fiery light.

As if it was a large white fire flashing in front of its eyes.

“Roar...”

The roaring three-tailed scorpion drake seeing the situation had a hint of fear flash across its face, in the air the large body shook violently.

The fear reached down to its soul.

In just this moment of horror, the three-tailed scorpion drake lost its balance, suddenly falling to the ground. By the time he realized it, the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword had already stabbed through its neck, emerging through its head.

“Thump!”

Xie Aoyu had poured everything into the strike, his entire body fell to the floor as he plopped down on his bottom. Staring at that three-tailed scorpion drake’s disbelieving wide eyes, he didn’t dare to believe what he was seeing.

He had actually killed a Tuifan level spirit beast. [\[1\]](#)

It seemed like a dream.

Xie Aoyu forcefully pinched his thigh. The pain raced up. Indeed he had to believe that he had really killed a three-tailed scorpion drake.

The white fire in Xiao Bai's eyes extinguished.

It returned from its fearful appearance, burrowed into Xie Aoyu's arms, shivering, letting out a small "Yiya" sound, as if what had happened had nothing to do with him.

After three whole minutes, Xie Aoyu finally calmed down.

In order to kill the three-headed scorpion drake, he had gone through a lot of difficulty, and had come out lucky. Under normal circumstances, he probably wouldn't have even hit the three-tailed scorpion drake with his lightning holy sword before being sprayed by fire and killed.

But the three-tailed scorpion drake hadn't done that.

Xie Aoyu couldn't understand. He looked at his surroundings but didn't see anyone else or anything, making it even stranger. Anyway, the three-tailed scorpion drake's death didn't change the way he felt about You Lan Ruo.

The reason for him becoming so desperate was Butterfly Queen You Lan Ruo!

"Why would she do that? Did I do something to her? It was our

first time meeting, and yet she sent me to this trap.” Xie Aoyu said clenching his teeth.

Not only that, knowing his relationship with Bing Wu, that they were childhood friends, You Lan Ruo still wanted to kill him. Could it be that she didn’t care how Bing Wu would react?

But seeing as Bing Wu didn’t know about the existence of the three-tailed scorpion drake, it was most likely that You Lan Ruo didn’t want Bing Wu to know.

What was the purpose?

While Xie Aoyu was thinking, Xiao Bai glanced at Xie Aoyu’s chest position, and its eyes began to develop the same light that it had when looking at the three-tailed scorpion drake.

It was like it was guarding Xie Aoyu.

Xie Aoyu looked down at the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame, but didn’t go for it; instead, he went to the cave entrance to feel the breeze. He sat his butt down on the ground, picked up a branch, and wrote the word “Calm” on the ground.

But his heart could not calm down.

You Lan Ruo wasn’t Xie Kun, Xie Zhe’s dad. She was publicly recognized on the continent as potentially in ten years becoming

the first Surpassing Level master on the continent. [\[2\]](#)

Logically speaking, there was no way for him to hurt her.

So then why did she try to hurt him.

He couldn't understand.

He became angrier. Before he had thought she was a graceful beauty but now that image was gone. Those images were totally shattered and were replaced with the feeling of hate.

Shua shua shua.

Xie Aoyu wrote out another twenty or so “Calm”s before he finally cooled down. He let out a breath of air. Even calmly analyzing the situation didn't help at all, and he still don't have an answer.

In reality, he was heavens apart from You Lan Ruo—and maybe even Bing Wu. Perhaps, even if he practiced his whole life, he still wouldn't have caught up to her.

He turned around to look at the door-opening mechanism.

Even if you beat him to death, Xie Aoyu refused to believe the three-tailed scorpion drake would be able to get in there by itself. Also, there's no way that there would be a tuifan level spirit beast

in the vicinity of Langya City. Even if there was, even if by a miracle that it coincidentally found this place and accidentally opened the mechanism, how could it have closed the mechanism?

It was clear that the mechanism could only be closed from the outside.

Thus, if Xie Aoyu wanted to not think that You Lan Ruo wanted to kill him, there was possibilities to explore.

Finally, Xie Aoyu wrote the word “Patience” on the ground.

Without even speaking of You Lan Ruo’s strength, as long as Bing Wu was with her, Xie Aoyu would just have to be patient.

Xie Aoyu took a deep breath, stood up, erased the words on the ground, and then returned to the entrance. Looking at the burning Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame, the corners of Xie Aoyu’s mouth turned into a sneer, “Ah, You Lan Ruo, You Lan Ruo, you probably never would have even dreamed that I didn’t die.”

He pulled out the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword that was still stuck in the three-tailed scorpion drake’s body.

Covered in fresh blood, the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword seemed even colder and incomparable. The fresh blood trickled down the blade and dripped onto the ground. Eventually the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword returned to its original spotless appearance.

So this was a holy weapon.

Xie Aoyu placed the three-tailed scorpion drake's body inside his space ring. Then bringing Xiao Bai, he climbed back down.

They had just reached the last step when the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame suddenly went "Hong", becoming a large fire and burning fiercely.

The hot flames began to dance wildly.

The extremely high temperatures made Xie Aoyu feel unspeakable hotness.

Xie Aoyu had to retreat. At that hot temperature, even if they weren't close, Xie Aoyu guessed that even his clothes would ignite.

How could he handle this?

Xie Aoyu discovered he had come across a problem.

"I still haven't thought of everything." Xie Aoyu bitterly smiled.

The reason why he had come to get the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame was because he had gotten the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire prototype; otherwise, he never would have even considered coming here.

After all, he didn't have the fire attribute.

Xie Aoyu calmed down, stuck out his left pinky, then slowly crept forward. This was how he had originally obtained the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire.

He slowly drew closer, step by step.

The Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame was still burning fiercely.

As he slowly drew closer, the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame began to slowly retreat.

This change was a pleasant surprise for Xie Aoyu. His confidence rose a bit, but he was still careful. After encountering the three-tailed scorpion drake, he had become much more cautious.

As Xie Aoyu went forward, the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame went back.

Step by step.

Finally, from Xie Aoyu's constant pressure, the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame returned to the original form that Xie Aoyu had seen when he first came in, as a much smaller and humbler flame.

"Inhale..."

Xie Aoyu took a big breath and placed his finger on top of it.

[1] (TN: MC is advanced level, so there's about a four level difference, not including the sublevels of each level.)

[2] (TN: 超级 you guys have a better translation? Previous translation didn't have this in the rankings.)

Chapter 18

He had just put his finger on top of it when Xie Aoyu felt that there was some sort of cold flow coming out of his chest. He was delighted on the inside. There was hope!

But this happiness only lasted for a second before turning into disappointment because out of his pinky emerged an unbelievable fire.

Shadow Demon Spirit Fire!

When it came out, the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame immediately began to retreat. Even if it was only the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire's prototype, it was the difference between them was still too much. It was among the top five amongst the numerous divergent flames.

In contrast, the Earth Pulmonary Flame was indeed pretty good, but it was incomparable to the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire.

It was repelled by the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire.

Xie Aoyu was a disappointed and on the verge of giving up. It seemed as if it was impossible after all. But he refused to accept that and decided to use his other hand.

“Hu...”

The Earth Pulmonary Flame flared up again, and then shrunk again.

On Xie Aoyu's palm there was a layer of weak fire. It seemed as if the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire was about to be extinguished but it still almost killed the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame.

"It really is powerful. Why didn't it come out before to take care of the three-tailed scorpion drake?" Xie Aoyu angrily said.

After trying multiple times, Xie Aoyu finally gave up.

Seeing the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame right in front of him but still being unable to obtain it, Xie Aoyu was feeling depressed.

"Yiya." Xiao Bai, while remaining behind Xie Aoyu, extended his head to peek at the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame.

"Oh yeah. Xiao Bai, you try..." Before Xie Aoyu had finished speaking, Xiao Bai scurried away like a mouse, he slid away out of sight.

Xie Aoyu shook his head helplessly.

This Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame was too strong. For someone of Xiao Bai's level, it would be too difficult to obtain.

Never mind. It seemed giving up was the only thing to do now.

Xie Aoyu stood up, got ready to leave, and had already turned towards the exit when suddenly something flashed by him. Someone had run in from the outside, saw the divergent flame, and excitedly yelled, “I finally found it!”

He was so excited that he failed to notice Xie Aoyu.

Xie Aoyu stepped to the side, placing the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame behind him and positioned himself in front of the person’s eyes.

“Oh, there’s some here. I... Young Master Ao Yu ?” Blurted out the person who now saw Xie Aoyu clearly.

Xie Aoyu carefully studied the person. It seemed like an ordinary person, probably around twenty-four or five years old, very skinny, his face’s color was a little yellow, and seemed to lack proper nutrition.

“You seem familiar. Who are you?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“I’m Ge Er.” The person had tears streaming down his face, “Does young master Ao Yu still remember me? Back in the day, if it wasn’t for you, I would have been beaten to death.” [\[1\]](#)

Ge Er?

Xie Aoyu felt the name sounded familiar. It took a few moments before he remembered the story from two years ago. At that time, he had saved a man named Ge Er.

“You’re the person that Xie Zhe nearly killed, Ge Er?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“That was me. That was me. I can’t believe young master still remembers me.” Ge Er emotionally responded.

Waving his hand, Xie Aoyu laughed and said, “You don’t need to thank me. At that time, when I saved you, it was purely to make life difficult for Xie Zhe.”

“But if there had been no young master, Ge Er’s life would have been gone. Moreover, Ge Er’s parents were both rescued by sixth elder.” Ge Er gratefully spoke.

Xie Aoyu said, “Speaking of which, you dared to fight with Xie Zhe. I really admire you.”

Ge Er’s expression became ugly, “I didn’t want to fight with him but wanted to kill him.” He suddenly looked up towards Xie Aoyu, “Because I knew that it was his dad, Xie Kun, who had poisoned sixth elder. I couldn’t kill fourth elder, so I wanted to die with him.

“What?!” Xie Aoyu widened his eyes, quickly walking up to Ge Er, “How did you know?”

“Young master, I didn’t tell you...” Ge Er said in a small voice.

Seeing Ge Er’s appearance, Xie Aoyu felt very warm.

How could he not have known, when his body had not way of cultivating qi, even if he told himself there was a way, this Ge Er would have a method.

Xie Aoyu’s heart was moved.

“I understand.” Xie Aoyu patted Ge Er’s head, “Seeing your face’s complexion is so bad, you’ve probably been starving for a while. Ah, come, eat something first.”

He handed some rations to Ge Er.

Ge Er refused to take Xie Aoyu’s portion, but hungrily ate the food, and at the same time he disclosed how he discovered what had happened to Xie Kun.

Originally Ge Er’s parents had passed away a few years prior.

One time when he had been visiting his parents’ graves, he coincidentally saw Xie Kun and a mysterious person meet together, and there he overheard the plan to harm Xie Gan. By the time he had frantically run back, Xie Kun had already completed the act.

At that time, he wanted to kill Xie Kun, but he had never

cultivated any qi. How could he be an opponent. Xie Kun also carried poison on him, thus, Ge Er looked for an opportunity to kill Xie Zhe. He hadn't thought that Xie Zhe would have the devil's luck. Not only did he not die, he also almost killed Ge Er, but fortunately they were spotted by Xie Aoyu.

Since Xie Aoyu and Xie Zhe were rivals, Ge Er was rescued from being besieged.

But Ge Er still wanted to kill Xie Zhe, which was something the Xie family would not allow, thus he was expelled from the Xie family, forever forbidden from even taking half a step back in.

“I wanted to tell young master, but I thought if it was like that, it could come back and get young master killed, so I didn't say anything. My heart's desire was to get revenge for sixth elder. One day while I was in the vicinity of Howling Wolf Mountain wandering around to look for food, I bumped into Te Luo Si who had brought some people to look for who knows what.” Ge Er said.

Xie Aoyu's eyebrows leapt, “You said Te Luo Si? Ao Te Si clan's Te Luo Si?”

“That's him. That year he hadn't died. In fact, there were seven or eight of Ao Te Si clan's people who hadn't died. I secretly followed them and discovered that year the Ao Te Si clan elders had mobilized everyone, frantically trying to cut down sixth elder, wanting to take him down with them. Using this method to attract the other Xie family elders, it allowed for seven or eight of Ao Te Si clan's children to escape. Once they had gotten away, they frantically cultivated to get revenge while also searching for the

divergent flame.” Ge Er pointed at the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame, “This was the one the Ao Te Si clansmen discovered first, but they hadn’t left a map of its general location. Te Luo Si only knew that it was near the Howling Wolf Mountain. They carefully searched for years but hadn’t found it. I, I have fire and wood attribute, so, so...”

“Fire and wood attribute? You have duo fire and wood attribute?” Xie Aoyu was pleasantly surprised.

Ge Er nodded his head.

“Haha...”

Xie Aoyu burst out laughing.

He had originally thought that after killing Xie Kun for revenge, it would be a heavy blow for the Xie family. Having an alchemist in the family was too critical.

But Ge Er appeared, letting him feel like his problems had been solved.

“Young master, after getting the divergent flame and getting revenge for sixth elder, I had planned...” Ge Er excitedly said.

“Ge Er, I believe you!” Xie Aoyu patted Ge Er on the shoulder. Yes, to this kind of person who had dedicated his life to father son, what could he suspect? “ Since you have the potential to become an alchemist, then I will assist you in becoming a divergent flame-

using alchemist!” He pointed at the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame, “This is yours now!”

He brought Ge Er in front of the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame.

It seemed like the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame was still a little scared of Xie Aoyu as it slightly shook.

“Oh yea, Ge Er, do you know get the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“I know. Previously I read a lot of alchemist-related books.” Ge Er said as he pulled out a blood-red medicine, a potion bottle, and a bunch of other odd looking things, “This is all stuff needed for a fire and wood attribute alchemist that I stole from Te Luo Si.”

Xie Aoyu patted Ge Er’s shoulder, he could tell that after Ge Er had left the Xie family, everything he had done was for the sake of getting revenge for father.

He knew swallowing a divergent flame was very painful, so he walked out of the cave.

And so it happened, right after he had gotten out, he heard a roaring sound, the piercing screams showed how much how Ge Er was going through.

The uncontrollable screaming lasted for a full ten minutes.

“Boom boom boom..”

There was a burst of explosions that followed.

The earth rumbled and the mountain shook, a waft of the smell of smoke came from inside and rolled out, which made the trace of Shadow Demon Spirit Fire prototype in Xie Aoyu’s body begin moving, forcing the high temperatures to stay away.

“Ah!”

After the cuckoo crying blood like roar, the world became quiet again. [\[2\]](#)

Xie Au Yu quickly returned to the cave.

From far away he could see Ge Er lying flat on his back on the floor, his body twitching uncontrollably, the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame slowly diffusing out of him.

Was it a failure?

Xie Aoyu quickly crouched down and picked up Ge Er. The moment his two hands touched Ge Er, the tri-colored ball in his chest suddenly began to tremble.

[\[1\]](#) (TN: The name Ge Er is up for renaming. Just suggest something. If it seems reasonable, I'm willing to change it.)

[\[2\]](#) (TN: This didn't make much sense... Chinese idiom?)

Chapter 19

A trace of coolness passed by, Xie Aoyu didn't even have time to be surprised before it disappeared, and the spasming Ge Er who had been in a coma slowly opened his eyes.

“You're okay now.” Xie Aoyu softly spoke.

When it came to willpower, Xie Aoyu asked himself, if he said he was second, then no one would come to be first. He had gone through many experiences and close to death, having gone through many difficulties. This was because since he was 7 he had been walking down this path.

That had been developed by himself since childhood.

But the Ge Er before his eyes had moved his heart, it was even more admirable.

Ge Er's body was physically unfit. After leaving the Xie Family for two years, he was always hungry and thirsty, never full, until his face had become pale and thin. Under these circumstances, he had still persevered to absorb the divergent flame.

Ge Er's strong willpower was very clear.

“Young Master.” Ge Er turned his body and sat up.

“Test it out and see if you can control the divergent flame.” Xie Aoyu laughed.

Ge Er heavily nodded his head, closed his eyes and began searching inside himself. His face gradually revealed a hint of ecstasy. Suddenly he opened his eyes and pointed his finger at a spot.

“Xiu!”

A sharp sound whistled out.

A flame flew out.

In the ground of the belly of this rock-hard mountain, the flame bored a hole at least one meter deep. Then flame then burst into light and returned into Ge Er’s body.

“It’s a success, young master! I succeeded!” Ge Er happily yelled.

Xie Aoyu laughed and said, “You succeeded. After getting this Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame, you have the possibility of becoming Langya City’s greatest alchemist.”

“I’ll definitely try my best!” Ge Er was very excited.

“Then I, Xie Aoyu, formally invite you to join the Xie family in order to become a family elder. Do you accept?” Xie Aoyu could

only do this because he was a Xie.

As for the position of becoming an elder, that couldn't be given away freely.

Since Ge Er gained the divergent flame, he had the ability to be an alchemist. Whether it was in a big city or within the big clans, he would be very welcome. Although the big clans had plenty of alchemists, alchemists that could use divergent flames were very rare.

“Young master, I, I...” Ge Er began to have tears well up in his eyes.

Xie Aoyu said, “Relax. I'll personally take care of Xie Kun and Xie Zhe father and son. I believe uncle will allow you to replace Xie Kun.”

“Thump!”

Ge Er's knee fell to the ground; his right hand placed on his left chest, and clearly spoke: “Ge Er will swear his lifelong allegiance to young master Xie Aoyu. This oath I shall keep until death!”

This was the heaviest oath.

Even if Ge Er hadn't made this oath, Xie Aoyu would never suspect him. He reached out his hand and pulled Ge Er up, laughing, “From now on, Xie Family will be counting on us.”

As the two conversed, they began to head out.

Before they had reached the exit, they heard a loud scream from outside.

“It’s here! It’s here! Everyone come look, inside this cave is another entrance that we didn’t see before. The divergent flame is definitely in here.”

“Everyone hurry up.”

The sound of footsteps came closer.

Ge Er’s face color changed slightly, “Young master, they are the Ao Te Si clan’s remnants. Other than Te Luo Si who is missing for some reason, the rest are all here.”

“Te Luo Si was killed by me.” Xie Aoyu pulled out the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword.

Ge Er carried a surprised expression as Xie Aoyu began to head towards the exit. He suddenly discovered that the person who had once been ridiculed for being useless and unable to cultivate qi, who could only endure—this young man had grown up.

Ge Er quickly followed.

They arrived at the exit and looked out.

“1, 2, 3... eight people.” Xie Aoyu counted.

“The one in the front is Man Te, he’s Te Luo Si’s brother, lower advanced level. Behind him is Ke Lu, an alchemist. They’re here to search for the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame.” Ge Er explained. [\[1\]](#)

Relying on Xie Aoyu’s eyesight.

He discovered, these eight Ao Te Si clan remnants, the strongest was actually the one called Ke Lu, the alchemist. He was an upper advanced level practitioner. The rest were all intermediate level.

By an initial estimate, under fair circumstances, Xie Aoyu shouldn’t have a chance of beating these eight people.

“Ge Er, control your divergent flame and attack that Ke Lu.” Xie Aoyu whispered.

Ge Er nodded his head imperceptibly, sneakily readying the divergent flame.

However, he had just attained the divergent flame. Manipulating the flames were far from easy, and also, Ke Lu and the others were quickly coming closer, making him more frantic.

The more worried he was, the more he lacked the ability to

control it.

“Don’t worry. Slowly ready it.” Xie Aoyu laughed.

The warm laughter made Ge Er’s frantic heart calm down. It was just when Ke Lu and the others were about four or five meters from the cave entrance that Ge Er let out a big breath.

Xie Aoyu gave him a slight nod.

Suddenly out of the darkness, Ge Er’s finger pointed out.

“Xiu!”

The Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame let out a sharp whistling noise, like a rocket exploding out, it was instantly headed towards Ke Lu who was in the front.

The unexpected attack gave Ke Lu a surprise, making him instinctively dodge to the side.

“Ah!” “Ah!”

Two screams came from behind.

Two of the young Ao Te Si clan people who had been with him were instantly killed.

And in this moment, Xie Aoyu, like a leopard, “whooshed” by, charging out of the cave, the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword cutting through the air and leaving behind a trail of purple light.

The sword and person together made for a powerful force.

“The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword!” When Ke Lu saw the sword he blurted out, but he had already arrived at the peak of the advanced level. If compared to Xie Aoyu’s lower advanced level, he was still two tiers above him.

In this crisis, he suddenly turned around.

“Puff!”

A cold light passed by, and blood red splashed out.

An arm flew away from its body, the shocking pain made Ke Lu give out an inhuman scream. The body that had lost its balance began to fall to the left.

“Kill!”

Man Te and the others seeing the situation frantically tried to fight back.

Without bothering to look at their kung fu, Xie Aoyu’s left hand

made a fist and forcefully threw out a punch.

Dragon Overlord Boxing!

Among these eight people, the only one that could threaten Xie Aoyu was Ke Lu. Only by taking care of Ke Lu first could he have the opportunity to get rid of everyone else.

Thus Xie Aoyu needed to kill Ke Lu.

As the fist flew out, the light surged around, the wind whistled, created a whirlwind of flying small pieces of rocks, hitting Man Te and the others in one fluid motion. Ke Lu then raised his left hand to fight back.

Since he couldn't immediately use his full qi, he at most had thirty percent of his power.

“Kacha!”

How could thirty percent of his qi compare with Xie Aoyu's full strength. His body was blasted to pieces by one punch of Dragon Overlord Boxing. Man Te and the others let out a scream.

Killing Ke Lu allowed Xie Aoyu to hearten up a little. He yelled out, his sword followed his person, and in the middle of the slicing cold light, a rain of blood flew out through the wind.

Another two people were chopped up.

Suddenly out of the eight people, only three were left.

“Man Te!” Xie Aoyu walked towards the panic-stricken Man Te while carrying the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, other than the two that had been stopped by Ge Er’s Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame.

Man Te squinted his eyes, “You’re that useless scrap freak Xie Aoyu?”

“Correct.” Xie Aoyu slowly lifted the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, “Te Luo Si has already died to my hands. Right now he really wants to remember you. I’ll help you and your family by giving you all a ride to him.”

Before Man Te could say anything, Xie Aoyu already sliced down for the kill.

The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword fiercely slashed.

In the cold light, Xie Aoyu’s person seemed to disappear, and only the holy sword could be seen.

Man Te was dominated by Xie Aoyu’s single-minded drive, he brought up his cane knife to block.

“Kacha!”

How could that sort of cane knife block Xie Aoyu’s kung fu.

Also, their qi’s couldn’t be compared.

Once the sword came down, the cane knife snapped, Xie Aoyu’s strength exploded out, and both man and knife were cut into two.

“Hong hong...” [\[2\]](#)

He heard an explosion come from behind him. The remaining two people had been killed by Ge Er.

Xie Aoyu returned the sword to its sheath. He looked around and discovered that Ke Lu had a space ring. After he found it, he broke open the seal. Without even looking, he tossed it to Ge Er.

He was very clear. Ke Lu was an alchemist. His stuff was most useful for Ge Er.

Taking the space ring, looking inside it had medicines and other things, Ge Er cried out excitedly.

“We...” Xie Aoyu suddenly felt a sharp pain in his chest. His butt fell to the floor.

“Young master!”

Ge Er became scared, he quickly ran over.

Xie Aoyu put out his hand to stop Ge Er. He then sat down with his legs crossed, looking within his body and discovered that inside his chest, the stream that the tri-colored ball had dissolved had gradually formed into another tri-colored ball. Also at that moment, the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire, had a mix of white and red flames within it.

His heart raced—that red and white flame was the color of the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame.

The two divergent flame prototypes did separate into two but had mixed into one. Both were integrated into the tri-colored ball’s purple halo.

[1] (TN: 曼特(Ke Lu) and 曼特 (Man Te) are up for naming. Anyone got better suggestions?)

[2] (TN: Oui oui, French baguette...croissant)

Chapter 20

The two fires mixed together, aggregated to the center of the tri-colored ball's purple halo. At the same time there was a variation, suddenly fusing together, creating a "pa pa pa" sound.

And at that time the three-colored ball began spinning.

Xie Aoyu saw this with clarity, along with the tri-colored ball spinning, small streams of cool air flowed out from his stomach to the rest of his body, as if clearing his body of impurities.

After the cool stream had finished flowing, Xie Aoyu's fighting qi began bundling up.

All of the qi was then forcibly oppressed to his abdomen by the stream.

Even Xie Aoyu had no way to control it. This sort of change was far beyond Xie Aoyu's expectations. He never imagined that he would be deprived control of his own fighting qi.

All of the went to the abdominal region.

The stream also slowly penetrated inside.

After that, Xie Aoyu felt that his qi was following some sort of rules within his abdominal region as it began to swim, starting slowly then increasing speed up to a certain point.

Once the speed had reached its peak, Xie Aoyu was surprised to find that his qi had surged. He had reached about intermediate advanced level.

No way?

The tri-colored ball could also help me enhance qi? Xie Aoyu's heart was shocked.

Soon after he calmed down, he immediately discovered the secret. It was the tri-colored ball's moving. It moved like a car. It needed oil, and that tri-colored ball's moving was actually the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire and the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame, the two divergent flame prototypes were sucked into the tri-colored ball's purple halo.

And now, the two divergent fires were merging.

His qi was also growing stronger.

Time went on this way for a while.

Geer was anxious and tensely watched the surroundings, deathly afraid that someone was alive and would come make trouble. As for Xiao Bai, he found a good spot and then laid down and started sleeping.

After who knows how long, Xie Aoyu found that his body had a surge of fluctuation.

“Boom!”

From within his abdominal region came a boom sound.

After that oppression, the feeling of suddenly breaking free was very comfortable. It returned to a natural feeling. There was an inexpressible feeling. The suddenly increased qi returned to his control and quickly returned to where it came from.

He had entered the intermediate advanced level.

Along with his breakthrough, the two divergent flame prototypes had fused together, mostly turning into a purple color. What made Xie Aoyu even more surprised was that it wasn't fire anymore... It was lightning. [\[1\]](#)

“How is this possible?” Xie Aoyu's mouth dropped.

“Young master, you woke up.” Geer came to attention.

Xie Aoyu nodded his head. He didn't ignore him, but he was examining within the tri-colored ball's center's purple halo that there was a faint trace of electric light. [\[2\]](#)

It was indeed electric light.

It wasn't fire anymore.

Xie Aoyu discovered that this tri-colored ball was beyond comprehension. He had never heard of what happened after successfully integrating a divergent flame, but there was something that could be concluded.

When fire was added with fire, it was still going to be fire. It just might get stronger or weaker.

But now it had become lightning.

It was obviously the work of the tri-colored ball.

Whether you are fire or lightning, as long as I can use you, it's all good, Xie Aoyu thought to himself. He wanted to try weakly using the lightning, only to find that it was completely cut off.

The lightning was uncontrollable!

"What is this." Xie Aoyu discontentedly murmured. He had originally thought that he could control the lightning, not even once thinking that it wouldn't be possible.

No matter how Xie Aoyu tried to control it, whether using spirit power or qi, none of it worked for controlling it. There wasn't even a way of getting close to the tri-colored ball. It seemed like his left chest had become a restricted area.

Xie Aoyu reluctantly gave up.

Right now he understood, if he wanted to control himself, he needed to fully understand the tri-colored ball, where its power came from and what uses it had. He needed to make things clear.

“Young master.” Geer spoke in a low voice.

Xie Aoyu stood up and laughed: “There’s no problem now. Let’s go. First I’ll find a place for you to stay. Until I’ve taken of Xie Kun, you’d best not appear. Calmly cultivate in the meantime.”

Geer didn’t have any objections.

The two left Howling Wolf Mountain and returned to Langya City.

While they were walking, Xie Aoyu said: “Geer, when you were following the Te Luo Si people, how many people were there total? Are there still any left?”

“Including Te Luo Si, there was a total of nine people. After two years, it was always just them nine.” Geer reported. He suddenly remembered, “Oh yeah, young master, recently the Xie family’s eighth young master’s death was caused by Te Luo Si. Xie Zhe and Xie Gang were the collaborators.”

“This much I already know.” Xie Aoyu nodded.

They entered Langya City. Xie Aoyu found a place to stay for his guest and let Geer stay there to cultivate. He specifically drove the point that he wasn't to go out easily.

Only after this did he dare to go to Ziyan's place.

Today was another day to cultivate the Medical Spirit Finger.

When Xie Aoyu arrived, Ziyan was currently preparing the things required for cultivating the Medical Spirit Finger.

“You're here. Wait a little while. I'll be ready soon.” Ziyan said.

Seeing Ziyan's skilled work, Xie Aoyu couldn't help but ask: “Elder Sister Ziyan, you travelled across the continent, what's your opinion on the famous Butterfly Queen You Lan Ruo?”

This question made Ziyan pause slightly.

She measured up Xie Aoyu with her eyes until Xie Aoyu was looked at enough until he felt uncomfortable, and then said, “You have some improper thoughts about her don't you?”

“Am I so see-through?” Xie Aoyu rubbed his nose.

“You have the potential to be one of the greatest sexual harassers.” Ziyan’s charming cheeks had a large smile, the light in her beautiful eyes rippled. She was an indescribably charming person.

Xie Aoyu bitterly laughed and shook his head.

After completing the things that she was working on and personally smeared it on Xie Aoyu’s left pinky, Ziyan once again used her Shadow Demon Spirit Fire to train.

This time, Xie Aoyu still felt a bit of the soft warmth enter into his left chest area, but it was all absorbed by the tri-colored ball.

After going through it, Xie Aoyu discovered, the warm stream’s air flow became the two divergent flames curiously transformed lightning fuel.

“Why did you suddenly want to know about You Lan Ruo?” Ziyan asked.

Listening to her tone, it didn’t seem like the two ladies were on friendly terms, Xie Aoyu noted silently, and said out loud “Since Bing Wu took her as her teacher, I wanted to know more about her a little.”

“Before you said Bing Wu found a teacher, you were talking about You Lan Ruo.” Ziyan lip curled, “If it wasn’t for researching a way to cure your father’s sickness, thus fearing I wouldn’t have

time to teacher her, I would have taken Bing Wu as my disciple. I didn't think that in the end she'd be snatched away by that woman first."

"I've heard that elder sister Ziyan was among the only few on the continent that could match up against You Lan Ruo. I had also always thought that elder sister was primarily an alchemist and not too good at martial arts." Xie Aoyu said with surprise.

Ziyan smiled and said: "That's because for alchemists need a certain achievement. As long as they go out, they will find masters that need medicine, so not matter the circumstance, there's no need for me to fight." She swung her beautiful hair, proudly saying: "Did you know, that this year, outside of Langya City, You Lan Ruo fought against each other for one day and one night."

Xie Aoyu asked: "What was the result?"

[1] (TN: This ball is a super-cheat :o)

[2] (TN: Should I translate 电光 as electric light or more like sparks?)

Chapter 21

Expectantly looking at Ziyan, this sort of duel between two masters, to Xie Aoyu, still generated a lot attraction, and even some regret that he didn't get to see it.

When two masters faced off, there would always be a learning experience.

Ziyan touchily said: "It was tie again."

"Again?" Xie Aoyu got caught up on that word. Apparently, the fight between Ziyan and You Lan Ruo already wasn't something that had only occurred once or twice.

"Me and her have exchanged blows thirteen times and every time we tie. We've never determined a winner, and we've even come to a tacit understanding that every year we'll fight at least once." On Ziyan's finger, the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire increased in size.

Thirteen times. That meant thirteen years.

Xie Aoyu smacked his lips together, "I see that Elder Sister Ziyan doesn't seem have a very aggressive personality. In my opinion, it should be You Lan Ruo who is the one who starts the fight.

"Otherwise, me and her had the same idea, it's just that after acquiring the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire, I developed an interest in alchemy. That's why I started studying refining techniques." Ziyan

smiled and replied, “Since then, I thought I wouldn’t have anything more to do with You Lan Ruo. I didn’t think that she was the type to have such a stubborn personality. After she’s determined in something, in order for her to change, it’s extremely difficult. From her point of view, if she doesn’t beat me, then even if she becomes the number one under the heavens, it has no meaning.

Hearing about her stubbornness made Xie Aoyu feel a little crazy.

At the same time he understood the reason why You Lan Ruo had such success. It was apparent that her attitude towards martial arts was extremely stubborn. She was one of the the so-called fighting maniac.

Crazy towards fighting.

For this kind of person, once they were focused on something, they would endlessly chase after it. Seeing Ziyan’s circumstances made Xie Aoyu feel unhappy. If You Lan Ruo wanted to kill him, then changing her mind wasn’t going to happen.

He even suspected, if not for Bing Wu, You Lan Ruo would have personally killed him.

Bing Wu?

Xie Aoyu was suddenly startled. He had suddenly thought of an important question. Before Bing Wu had told You Lan Ruo about

his secrets, and about his physical status.

At that time, You Lan Ruo didn't seem to have any hostility towards him.

Could it be that only after meeting him that the desire to kill sprouted?

Listening to this, it seemed to be nonsensical, but if it was the truth, then whether it was Bing Wu who told You Lan Ruo or if it had been earlier when Xie Gan had been looked to You Lan Ruo for help, You Lan Ruo must have known about him long ago. However, she had never even thought of making a move against him before. Also, during this past year or so, him and Bing Wu hadn't had much contact. If she didn't want Bing Wu to see it, she could have personally killed him. There was no need to use the three-tailed scorpion drake placed near the divergent flame.

Thus that meant that You Lan Ruo only desired to kill him after meeting him.

But when they left, there was no time, or taking Bing Wu into account, was the reason why there would be the plan of using the tree-tailed scorpion drake to kill him.

Xie Aoyu felt cold.

When he had met You Lan Ruo, he hadn't seen You Lan Ruo acting suspiciously. Also, that fairy-like grace gave him a deep

impression.

But who would have thought, that was when she had secretly gone to do her dirty work.

Xie Aoyu thought of the time when he and Bing Wu were talking, he hadn't paid any particular attention to You Lan Ruo. Although the time they spent talking wasn't that much, but for You Lan Ruo who had that kind of power, hurrying to Howling Wolf Mountain and devising a way to kill him, was entirely doable, because she was at the Emperor Level and her Spirit Beast pet, Wind-Fire Meteor Rainbow Butterfly.

The wind-fire meteor rainbow butterfly was not only super strong and had attained the strongest emperor level, more importantly was...wind system.

Wind system helped increase speed.

But why did she want to make a move against him?

Xie Aoyu had an urge to curse, but his instincts told him that the You Lan Ruo who was so far above, like a bird overlooking all the land, would definitely not do things randomly.

There had to be some cause.

And for this reason she had to give up her identity. She had given up the close student-teacher relationship with Bing Wu, and had

acted on her own. But Xie Aoyu really couldn't think of a reason why You Lan Ruo have this killing intent.

He carefully recalled his meeting with You Lan Ruo.

Bit by bit, carefully reviewing.

"You've gone dumb." Ziyan stretched her finger out and poked Xie Aoyu's forehead.

"Uh, nothing really. I'm just a little bit envious." Xie Aoyu said.

Ziyan laughed: "Envyng You Lan Ruo?"

Nodding his head, Xie Aoyu said, "Yeah. It seems like the second she was born she already had the Emperor Level Wind-Fire Meteor Rainbow Butterfly as a spirit beast pet. At that time she could run around freely on the continent, without a care in the world. If I had an Emperor Level spirit beast pet, wouldn't that be great."

As he spoke, he really didn't even see Xiao Bai.

When Xiao Bai heard of the Wind-Fire Meteor Rainbow Butterfly, a dismissive expression leaked out on his face, but he fixed his face quickly, and no one else noticed.

That's because of her identity. An Emperor Level spirit beast doesn't only have lots of battle strength but their intelligence is

also very high. Because You Lan Ruo is very stubborn, she's never used the Wind-Fire Meteor Rainbow Butterfly. If she did, I wouldn't even have a chance." Ziyan said.

"What's her identity?" Xie Aoyu also felt that only someone strong could, when they weren't strong, contract an Emperor Level spirit beast as a partner.

He didn't believe the so-called chivalry stories which said that if you were a hero, then no matter a top-class spirit beast would recognize you as master, unless that spirit beast had a special reason.

Ziyan laughed and said, "Her background is frightening. You're better off not knowing; otherwise, the Xie family might be exterminated.

But I'm doomed to have grudges with You Lan Ruo.

Xie Aoyu silently sighed, if it was really like what Ziyan was saying, with You Lan Ruo's background, why would she treat him like that, he couldn't understand.

"Your inquiring about You Lan Ruo, does it have to do with some impure motives, ah?" Ziyan had a big grin on her face.

"How could that be. I'm only chasing after elder sister Ziyan." Xie Aoyu purposely indecently replied.

Ziyan's beautiful eyes blinked once, as if there was an electric discharge, "Really?"

A portion of evil fire immediately flooded out of Xie Aoyu's body. He quickly turned his away in order to lessen the embarrassment, otherwise it would be too humiliating. [\[1\]](#)

"Giggle..." His actions caused Ziyan to laugh.

Xie Aoyu quickly said: "I just want to climb up the branches with Bing Wu, then didn't I get left behind? Hey hey, maybe based on Xiao Bai's face, we could be related."

"Don't change the subject. I understand your character very well." Ziyan laughed, "Oh yeah, for the early stages of Medical Spirit Finger, by my judgement, only needs seven more times. Your finger will become a pale gold color once this early stage is passed. Next will be the biggest obstacle which is exotic flowers and herbs. I know your Xie family's circumstances, so I have decided that I will personally go to the mountain range to pick a few.

"Elder sister Ziyan, tell me how can I possibly thank you?" Xie Aoyu's heart quietly said.

Heng Duan Mountain Range was a dangerous place, and the exotic flowers and herbs that he needed were very high up, always deep within Heng Duan Mountain Range, where it was even more dangerous.

Looking at Ziyan, then thinking about You Lan Ruo.

Both were world-class beauties, both were the continent's top women, so why was the gap so big?

“Ya!”

A cry interrupted Xie Aoyu's train of thought.

He quickly looked down, and saw only that the tip of his left hand's pinky began to emit a golden glow.

It was very weak. If you didn't look closely, you couldn't tell the difference.

Xie Aoyu's heart began to beat rapidly. Victory was so close, but he was a little worried. He watched nervously.

Ziyan wasn't an exception.

She slowly moved the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire, from the tip of the pinky moving inwards, and the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire followed. The pale golden color spread with it.

In the end, Xie Aoyu's pinky had turned to that pale golden color.

Because his skin was yellow, and the color had only just changed, it wasn't very obvious. If you didn't look closely, you wouldn't see any difference.

“Incredible. Your Medical Spirit Finger cultivation speed was faster than I had imagined by a month.” Ziyang cried out in surprise.

“Elder sister Ziyang, was it a success?” Xie Aoyu asked.

Ziyang smiled and nodded her head, then pulled out another bottle and gave it to Xie Aoyu.

“What's this?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“Color changing powder.” Ziyang said, “Your Medical Spirit Finger just entered the door. Wait a while and the color will become deeper. If you let the people who know about the existence of Medical Spirit Finger see it, they will definitely come after you.”

Cultivating Medical Spirit Finger required an enormous amount of exotic flowers and herbs, in order to have a good chance of succeeding. If other people saw the Medical Spirit Finger, even if you didn't have it, they definitely wouldn't believe it. [\[2\]](#)

Xie Aoyu only now knew, cultivating Medical Spirit Finger was also dangerous.

The danger was external.

“Alright. Next, your Medical Spirit Finger needs some strong drugs of Heaven and Earth Spirit Essence to bolster it. I should also go honor my commitments. Tomorrow I will set out for the Heng Duan mountain range to find the Heaven and Earth Spirit Essence.” Ziyan pulled out a bottle. Inside it was filled with pills, “These pills can help prevent your father’s qi from dissipating for a year.

Xie Aoyu accepted it gratefully, and emotionally said: “Thank you elder sister Ziyan.”

Ziyan smiled, “I need to pack my stuff, and you should go back.”

Leaving Ziyan’s home, Xie Aoyu looked up at the blue sky and muttered to himself: “It’s time to get to work!”

[1] (TN: Can’t be sure, but I think he just farted. 一股邪火立刻从Xie Aoyu的体内泛用起来)

[2] (TN: Author typo here or I suck at translating. Or both.)

Chapter 22

The success of achieving the initial stage of Medical Spirit Finger made Xie Aoyu have no more ideas of just enduring.

He was going to make his move!

On the way home, as Xie Aoyu was thinking about ways to make his move, he glimpsed Xie Zhe appearing from inside out of a corner. Seeing this situation, he decided that he would first act against Xie Zhe.

Xie Zhe had ridiculed him for years. Although it made him angry, they were still brothers, he never thought about killing him. But Xie Zhe had actually enlisted the help of the Ao Te Si clan in order to harm the Xie family. This made Xie Aoyu want to kill Xie Zhe. This kind of scum needed to shed blood in order to atone.

He followed from behind.

Just like this, these two people, one in front, one in back, went past a few streets, gradually going from the lively streets and entering into more secluded areas.

The houses were short in height, and abandoned manors were everywhere.

He wasn't planning on meeting with Te Luo Si and the others right? Did he think those people were still alive? Xie Aoyu laughed

coldly on the inside, secretly following. This was the best. If he acted here, there was no need to fear being discovered.

From far away, Xie Aoyu saw Xie Zhe arrive at a house that was much more luxurious than the small houses around it. Xie Zhe carefully looked around, and after making sure no one else was around, knocked on the door.

“Who is it?” From inside came a woman’s voice.

Xie Zhe whispered: “It’s me.”

The door was opened.

“Young master Zhe, you’ve arrived. Your slave have missed you so much.” Out of the house came a twenty or so year old, scantily dressed woman. Seeing Xie Zhe, her eyes lit up, whiningly said.

“Hehe, I bet you missed me, baby.” Xie Zhe reached out his hand on her breasts and pinched them.

The woman charmingly smiled: “Young master Zhe is so naughty.”

Seeing this woman, Xie Aoyu suddenly had the urge to laugh.

This woman, he had seen before, because she was a prostitute, name Chun Lan. Afterwards she had been spotted by Xie Gang, but

he hadn't the money to obtain her, so he had bullied the money about of Xie Aoyu.

It's just that Xie Aoyu hadn't imagined, these two sworn brothers, Xie Zhe was actually playing with Xie Gang's woman. If Xie Gang had known, he probably would've leapt out of the dirt.

Xie Aoyu went to the house's back. He first let Xiao Bai go in to check around.

After waiting a while, only after he heard Xiao Bai's voice did Xie Aoyu leap over the wall and into the yard.

Xie Aoyu stealthily arrived outside the window, and secretly looked in. He wanted to act, but in once glance, he almost cursed out loud. This pair of boy and girl were really fast.

The second they had entered the room, they had already begun to mess around in the living room.

Their clothes were torn, gasping out loud.

For a moment, the man's heavy breathing, the woman's sound, one after the other, made the inexperienced with man-woman relations man Xie Aoyu blush red in his face to his hears. His heart beat quickly. He began to involuntarily watch.

“Yiya!”

Xiao Bai dragged on Xie Aoyu's pant leg, indicating he wanted to watch too.

"Wait till you've grown older and we'll talk." Xie Aoyu crouched down, no longer watching, but instead tried hard to calm down.

"Yiya, yiya..." Xiao Bai unhappily began to shout.

Xie Aoyu laughed and said: "You're not convinced? If you have ability then go get a female beast for me to see. You're the type to only watch, never to actually get any action."

Xiao Bai began going crazy.

At this time, from inside the house came a rapid sound.

Xie Zhe was about to finish.

Originally wanting to tease Xiao Bai more, Xie Aoyu's face suddenly flashed an evil grinning expression. He slowly stood up to see Xie Zhe shouting frantically, thrusting with all his strength. [\[1\]](#)

Right when Xie Zhe was about to release that final sound, Xie Aoyu loudly shouted out: "Xie Zhe!"

If it had been anyone else's voice, then there wouldn't have been

any point, but Xie Aoyu had learned how to imitate Xie Gang's voice, and at this time, who could tell the difference between the sounds.

“Ah!”

Two screams suddenly came out of the room.

“Who, who's calling for me?” Xie Zhe cried out in horror.

The woman also frantically began to collect her clothes from the ground and looked around in terror.

Knowing that Xie Gang was already dead, this situation, they both knew, but suddenly hearing “Xie Gang's” voice, how could they not be scared.

Xie Zhe ah, Xie Zhe. You're screwed this time, Xie Aoyu madly laughed. He slowly walked into the room, suddenly pushing open the door.

“Bam!”

The door was opened.

Xie Aoyu appeared inside the house.

At that time, Xie Zhe and Chun Lan were both putting on their clothes, looking around fearfully. Hearing the door open, they screamed in reflex. They looked up in terror.

“Xie Aoyu?!” Xie Zhe saw the person, first he was startled, but then uttered a non-human cry.

Xie Aoyu said with a big grin on his face, “It’s me.”

“You want me to kill you!” Xie Zhe was really mad. He was guessing that he had been tricked by Xie Aoyu’s fake Xie Gang voice and been scared by it.

The angry Xie Zhe viciously rushed forward.

Xie Aoyu lifted up a leg and kicked out.

“Bang!”

That Xie Zhe in one kick was sent tumbling and rolling on the floor. Not only was he lower elementary level, but Xie Aoyu was an intermediate Advanced level. The two sides were just one grade’s difference. The gap was too big.

“You dare kick me.” Xie Zhe was sick with fury, he didn’t even consider why Xie Aoyu could kick him. He charged up again.

Xie Aoyu slapped him with the back of his hand.

“Pa!”

Xie Zhe was seen spinning around in the same spot three times, and then sat down on his butt.

This time Xie Zhe was slapped awake. Clutching his left cheek, he stared at Xie Aoyu, for a moment, his mind totally blank, looking dumbfounded. [\[2\]](#)

“Pa!”

Xie Aoyu backhanded slapped him again.

This slap knocked out Xie Zhe’s teeth, sending them flying, extracting cries from Xie Zhe.

“Xie Zhe, when you hit me, when you humiliated me, did you ever think of today?” Xie Aoyu coldly said, “When you joined with Te Luo Si, murdering your own family’s brothers, did you ever think of today?”

Xie Zhe was startled and replied: “You, how did you know?”

Xie Aoyu pulled out the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword and put it on the table.

“You, you killed Te Luo Si?” Xie Zhe screamed.

“I didn’t only kill Te Luo Se. I also killed Ke Lu, Man Te , and the rest of the Ao Te Si clan’s remnants. That includes your sworn brother Xie Gang!” Xie Aoyu coldly said.

“Ah!”

Chun Lan let out a scream, her body went into shock, and she fainted onto the ground.

Xie Zhe was completely dumbfounded.

[1] (TN: Man, this chapter has not been kid friendly at all. Haha, just kidding kids. They’re just wrestling. Remember that Xie Zhe’s weak and can’t even beat up a random lady. Yeah that’s it. This chapter has been totally kid-friendly. PG appropriate)

[2] (TN: Left face cheek, not the other one.)

Chapter 23

The shocking situation made Xie Zhe understand that he was finished.

He knew that even if pleaded with Xie Aoyu, it still wouldn't happen, because he himself had normally treated Xie Aoyu poorly, and even committed the sin of working with Te Luo Si and the others to murder Xie family brothers. Xie Aoyu would never let him go.

“Xie Aoyu, don't get too happy so soon. If you kill me, you won't be able to live.” Xie Zhe loudly said.

Xie Aoyu touchily smiled, “Did you think that your father Xie Kun would get revenge for you? Ah ah, Xie Zhe, ah Xie Zhe. Yelling at me to point out this, you must be very stupid. I've already dared to make a move, then of course I have a way of taking care of Xie Kun. Even if he doesn't come to find me, I will personally go there to kill him!”

“Just by yourself? Haha, my dad is an alchemist!” Xie Zhe didn't believe.

Destroying Xie Zhe was Xie Aoyu's greatest pleasure.

Seeing Xie Zhe's face full of confidence, Xie Aoyu smilingly said: “Who do you say is stronger? Master Ziyan or Xie Kun?”

“Of course it’s master Ziyan.” Xie Zhe looked distracted but still replied.

“That’s right. These days, I’ve been going to master Ziyan’s to cultivate, and master Ziyan told me, with my strength, I already don’t need to worry about Xie Kun’s poison.” Xie Aoyu stuck out his left pinky and shook it a bit.

This time Xie Zhe really didn’t have a path of retreat.

His two eyes were staring blankly as he sat down on his butt.

Xie Aoyu laughed out loud, in Xie Zhe’s moment of desperation, Xiao Bai suddenly let out a sharp cry. The sound was like a needle piercing the eardrum.

“Yiya!!!”

After being with Xiao Bai for so long, Xie Aoyu could long since understand Xiao Bai’s words, because Xiao Bai was a variation of spirit beast pet, he not only learned human expression, but also was learning how to speak. Although he was unable to pronounce things, but some things were similar. He knew this meant “be careful.”

A surge of danger came from the right.

Xie Aoyu didn’t even think and lifted up his hand towards the right and sent out a Dragon Overlord Punch.

“Boom!”

Amidst the loud noise, a figure flew out.

Clothes ripped, her breasts hanging out, the person was surprisingly Chun Lan.

Seeing this, Xie Zhe tried to get up to run.

“Yiya!”

Xiao Bai’s little claws while dancing, streams of lightning poured out, heavily striking Xie Zhe’s body. Although the electricity strength wasn’t strong, it was enough to paralyze a person.

Xie Zhe miserably screamed and fell to the ground again.

Xie Aoyu kicked Xie Zhe in the stomach, sending him into a wall, making him faint on the spot. Xie Aoyu picked up the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword and stood in front of Chun Lan.

“Speak, who are you!” Xie Aoyu coldly said.

He almost got his boat flipped. He hadn’t thought that this Chun Lan was actually a practitioner, and she wasn’t that weak either. Her strength was around upper intermediate level.

But this woman came from a brothel, and was the one Xie Gang was enamored with. Now she was also with Xie Zhe. This series of events immediately came to mind, immediately making Xie Aoyu feel like this Chun Lan wasn't so simple.

Seeing certain death, Chun Lan wiped the blood off her mouth, leaned against the wall, "You're holding my family's Lightning Spirit Holy Sword. Who do you think I am?"

"You're also an Ao Te Si family member!" Xie Aoyu facial expression altered slightly.

Chun Lan said: "That's right. My name is Lina." [\[1\]](#)

"Lina? Lina?" Xie Aoyu carefully recalled, "You're the daughter of the Ao Te Si clan's head Lina. Originally you were planned to marry into our Xie family. I didn't imagine that you were hidden so well. Unfortunately, you shouldn't have acted against me, otherwise you wouldn't have been exposed."

"How would that be. I saw you acting against Xie Zhe. Would you leave me behind?" Lina coldly laughed.

Her words were correct.

Xie Aoyu will definitely kill the witnesses.

Anyway they'll die. In that logic, you might as well try your luck. That way you might still keep your life. That's why Lina acted. It was inevitable.

"I really didn't think that your Ao Te Si clan had so many members who managed to escape, ah." Xie Aoyu flipped his hand and stuck the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword into the ground. The holy sword rocked back and forth, emitting a cold light.

Seeing her own family's treasured sword in the enemy's hands, Lina's eyes became fierce, "Xie Aoyu, don't get too excited. If I tell you the truth, if you did kill Te Luo Si and the others, you still haven't extinguished our Ao Te Si clan's people yet. From morning to evening, my brother Kui Luo will come sooner or later to avenge me."

Xie Aoyu's lips curled, feeling very disdainful.

Right now he wasn't the same person that he was before.

"It would be best if all of your Ao Te Si clan's remnants came together. That way they would still have a chance." Xie Aoyu proudly said.

"Xie Aoyu, don't play this game with me. Don't you just want to know how Ao Te Si clan members escaped? If you want to know, I can tell you." Lina taunted, "Ao Te Si clan only had us 11 brothers and sisters escape. Just me and Kui Luo have been acting behind the scenes. In order to prevent you from discovering, in order to contact Te Luo Si we used secret letters."

Lina was so honest, making Xie Aoyu not dare to believe.

The Ao Te Si clan people who had escape were always planning nothing less than extinguishing the Xie family for revenge. Why would they tell me?

“Do you think I’ll believe you?” Xie Aoyu said.

“Believe or don’t, that’s your problem. Anyway, Kui Luo has already found a practioner to teach him. After a few years, he’ll return a lot stronger and will wipe your Xie Family out, getting our revenge!” Lina laughed out loudly.

So they had found a famous teacher. Xie Aoyu couldn’t remember Kui Luo’s name. He coldly said: “I’ll ask you right now, why did you have contact with Xie Gang, Xie Zhe. What’s the purpose?”

“Because I wanted to control Xie Kun. He’s your Xie family’s one alchemist. If I control him, obtain the poison’s in his possession, then I could have poisoned all of you Xie family!” Lina gnashed her teeth.

Sinisterly using poison.

Xie Aoyu didn’t ask any further. He beat her into unconsciousness. He began to search the house. [\[2\]](#)

In the end, inside Lina's closet he found a space ring, and pulled out all of the things inside. Xie Aoyu immediately felt his expression become slack-jawed.

Inside was some gold coins, some letters, and there were even some fighting scrolls.

He opened the letters to look at them.

It was indeed a correspondence with Te Luo Si about a plan to control Xie Kun, but not all of the plans were complete. In the middle was a letter which concerned Kui Luo.

The contents were about how Kui Luo became a student of a famous Rainbow level master Di Ao.

“Rainbow level ah, that's even higher than father's level. No wonder Lina was so self-confident.” Xie Aoyu looked through the rest of the letters and discovered a list.

The list's names were that many, but there were a few that Xie Aoyu knew the Xie family was responsible for.

Now Xie Aoyu knew why Lina had been so honest. All of her matters had been recorded here. Even if she didn't talk, you could see through these letters everything you wanted to know.

Among the letters, Xie Zhe and Xie Gang were also mentioned, including how to work with them, there even two people that gave them some information about the Xie family's children and when they went out alone.

This was evidence!

Then he began to flip through the fighting skills.

“Pa!”

Xie Aoyu slammed the table, scaring Xiao Bai. He angrily said: “Aren't these my Xie family's fighting skills. These ought to be dead Xie Zhe and Xie Gang. You two idiots.”

He continued to look through the fighting skill scrolls.

Some parts were copied, but some were originals. In fact, at least half of them were Xie family fighting techniques. Many of them were high level techniques.

Flipping back and forth, Xie Aoyu discovered, there were also other fighting skills.

According to the words within the scrolls, there were actually some that came from mercenaries who had passed by here and left the scrolls behind. Thinking about it, Lina probably had done something to get them.

Xie Aoyu looked at one fighting skill after another.

Finally he found a fighting skill he was attracted to.

This fighting skills was called...Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop! [\[3\]](#)

And also, this was the original manuscript, not a copy. This fighting skill, from Xie Aoyu's perspective, the level wasn't low, and if it was the original manuscript, then it could only be assumed that the original owner had already been done in by Lina.

[\[1\]](#) (TN: Suggestions on name? 琳娜)

[\[2\]](#) (TN: Couldn't tell if it was permanent unconsciousness or not. Wait till next chapter I guess. Or if she's never mentioned again as alive, assume dead.)

[\[3\]](#) (TN: Mercy. Make the naming stop . 赤电雷爆斩)

Chapter 24

Xie Aoyu had the earth, thunder, and wood attributes. Concerning the earth attribute, he possessed a very strong fighting skill...Overlord Dragon Boxing. It alone would require him studying eight to ten years. The Xie family also had plenty of thunder and wood attribute fighting skills, but ones that could make him actually practice them, there wasn't even one.

But this Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop produced a strong interest within him.

It was as if it had been prepared especially for the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword.

In the end after Xie Aoyu had seen this, he read it for about an hour. With his talent, he had fully understood the Lightning Exploding Chop. He could probably even use it immediately right now.

He kept looking through the other scrolls until Lina awoke from her unconsciousness with a groan. The sound made him alert. He hastily placed the Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop alone inside his space ring.

After knocking Lina unconscious again, he placed her and Xie Zhe into some sacks, and told Xiao Bai to get Geer to take them to the foot of the mountain. After getting those two to the mountain, hide them there, and then have Geer wait for Xiao Bai to bring news, and then bring those two to the Xie family.

After that Xie Aoyu went home.

“Ao Yu, did something happen?” Xie Lian asked worriedly. Because multiple children of the Xie family had been killed, but there had been no clues, he was currently worried.

Xie Aoyu said: “Uncle, are you worried because Xie Liang and the others died?”

It was rare to see Xie Aoyu with such a serious expression. Xie Lian couldn't but honestly reply: “Yes.”

“I know who the culprit is.” Xie Aoyu said.

“What? You know? Who is it?” Xie Lian urgently asked.

Xie Aoyu lightly said: “Not only do I know who killed Xie Liang and the others, I also know who poisoned by father, causing him to be in a coma for the past three years.

Xie Lian opened his eyes up wide.

He suddenly discovered that Xie Aoyu was no longer the Xie Aoyu from before because he was still calm. Even after knowing who the culprit was, he still had a calm expression on his face.

Xie Aoyu also felt a little strange.

He was about to get revenge, but he wasn't happy at all, instead he felt very calm. Even he didn't think that his calmness was the suitable for right now.

But after carefully thinking, he understood.

It was because Xie Kun was not only the Xie family's elder, he was also connected to the matter with Xie Gan. He was Xie Aoyu's father's brother. Fundamentally speaking, among the Xie family, their blood relationship had been very close.

They were family.

Thus there was no excitement or anger; instead, there was a feeling of frustration.

"Who's the culprit, I can't say right now. I think uncle should bring over the entire Xie family then I'll say." Xie Aoyu said.

"Ao Yu, you say you know who the culprit is. Do you have proof?" Xie Lian said seriously.

Xie Aoyu nodded his head strongly.

"Alright, I'll gather a meeting." Xie Lian stared at Xie Aoyu for a while, chose to believe, and sent out a patriarch's summon.

“Uncle, at what time can everyone gather?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“It’ll probably need an hour.” Xie Lian replied.

Xie Aoyu turned around and began to walk, “I’ll be back in an hour.”

He returned to the sixth elder’s home.

Arriving in front of Xie Gan’s bed, Xie Aoyu kneeled in front of the bed, and gently said: “Father, since Xie Aoyu has started to cultivate qi, it seems as if I haven’t talked with you in forever. Let’s talk for a while.”

While talking, Xie Aoyu’s eyes began to form tears.

Past scenes flashed in surfaced before his eyes.

When he was younger, a scene of where his father was playing with him.

At the age of seven when he still couldn’t cultivate qi, father’s anxiety.

For him, he had traveled the continent, pleading with countless masters. Those sort of heartfelt actions until now had still made him feel sour inside.

Three years ago, the random coma. That had caused him to still not wake up and caused much suffering. These scenes went by one by one before Xie Aoyu. His tears didn't come down.

Because his father had said before, men do not cry easily.

Because he still had things to do, he wanted to win the Continent Youth Competition championship. He wanted to win the Water of the Holy Spirit in order to revive his father.

"It's already time." Xie Aoyu stood up, placed Xie Gan on his back. At this time, he seemed to have grown up and become a man with an indomitable spirit, "Father, Ao Yu will now get revenge for you!"

Xiao Bai at this time left the Xie house and went to the foot of the mountain.

Under the curious looks of others, Xie Aoyu left the house.

After going through a gate, in front of him was the main hall.

The inside of the main hall was overcrowded, all of the elders and Xie Aoyu's seniors, juniors, and Xie Aoyu's peers had all come.

They were all waiting for Xie Aoyu.

When everyone saw Xie Aoyu carrying Xie Gan, they were all

started.

Some people came to greet, but Xie Aoyu shook his head. He carried Xie Gan and went straight through the crowds, walked into the main hall, and in one glance spotted fourth elder Xie Kun sitting near the front.

“Uncle, where is my father’s seat?” Xie Aoyu said.

Since Xie Gan had been in a coma for three years, he long since no longer had a seat, but since Xie Gan had contributed so much to the Xie family, the person who was sitting in the clan’s first elder seat stood up, “Right here.”

“Thank you, first elder.” Xie Aoyu placed Xie Gan down.

The entire Xie family, gathered here were more than two hundred people, at this time were completely silent.

The atmosphere was very heavy.

“Xie Aoyu, what are you doing?” Fourth elder Xie Kun saw Xie Gan and felt a little awkward. Xie Lian had sent the command without stating the reason, but seeing Xie Gan appear made him incredibly awkward.

Xie Lian opened his mouth and said: “Ao Yu will reveal who was the person that killed Xie Lian and the others.”

The originally silent people began to immediately create a ruckus.

Many people were whispering.

Xie Liang and the others' deaths had caused the Xie family no small amount of disturbance. Up until now, the Xie family was still searching for the culprit, and some of the Xie family's children didn't even dare to go outside.

Xie Kun knew that Xie Zhe worked with Te Luo Si and the other Ao Te Si clan remnants. When he heard it, his heart began to beat uncontrollably.

At this time, he realized that Xie Zhe hadn't come.

A sense of ill foreboding climbed up through his mind.

He looked at Xie Gan again, and his unease increased. If it was only Xie Liang and the others' deaths, then Xie Gan shouldn't have appeared here. Could it be that...

"Ao Yu, please say it. Who's the killer?" The first elder said, he was Xie Liang's father.

"Please wait a moment." Xie Aoyu said.

Time went by minute by minute.

Right when people were beginning to feel impatient, a “Yiya” sound came.

“Xie Zhe!” Some people shouted.

Everyone turned backwards to see.

They saw Xie Zhe with his hands tied behind his back, his mouth was stuffed with a rag. Next to him was a woman undergoing the same treatment. Behind them was Geer.

“How dare you, Xie Aoyu. What is this!” Fourth elder Xie Kun angrily yelled.

The first elder stood up, his eyes were watching Lina, “This woman seems like the Ao Te Si clan’s patriarch’s daughter Lina.”

“First elder’s eyes are very clear. You could tell in a single glance.” Xie Aoyu said.

“That person is really a remnant of the Ao Te Si clan?” The third elder exclaimed.

This shout made everyone’s eyes focus on Lina.

Xie Aoyu looked towards Xie Kun and faintly said “ Fourth elder wants to know why, why would Xie Zhe and Ao Te Si clan’s remnant be together?”

“If you say they were together then that means they were together?” Xie Kun coldly said.

“It’s not I who said it, it was Xie Zhe who did.” Xie Aoyu pulled out a letter and a note, giving it to patriarch Xie Lian one part, and the rest he gave to the first elder, “Uncle and elders, please look.”

Those letters not only included Xie Zhe and Xie Gang’s actions, it also had Lina’s conspiracy against the Xie family. All the elders looked like they had been fried.

Xie Kun tossed away the piece of paper in his hand, angrily saying: “This doesn’t make sense. If Xie Zhe and Xie Gang were working with them, why was Xie Gang killed by them? Weren’t they going to use Xie Zhe and Xie Gang? Isn’t that a paradox!”

“That’s right. Why would this happen.” The first elder frowned, “Did they have a falling out.

Xie Aoyu lightly said: “They didn’t have a falling out.

“Then why was Xie Gang killed.” Xie Kun asked.

“That’s because Xie Gang was...” Xie Aoyu slowly raised his head, his two eyes formed a cold expression, “I killed him!”

Chapter 25

Quiet!

Extremely quiet!

Who didn't know that Xie Aoyu couldn't cultivate any qi. Even if she had exercised like crazy these past few years, but without qi, how could he have killed Xie Gang who did have qi?

Then came doubt.

Because they could hardly believe that Xie Gang had been killed by Xie Aoyu.

“Lies!” Xie Kun sneered.

Even patriarch Xie Lian and the first elder and the others also expressed doubts. They all stared at Xie Aoyu curiously, they didn't think it made sense.

“Not only did I kill Xie Gang, I also killed Te Luo Si.” Xie Aoyu didn't have proof, but just continued talking.

“Te Luo Si? Ao Te Si clan's family elder's son? He also didn't die?” The first elder had taken part in the extermination of the Ao Te Si clan back in that time as one of the leads. He knew of every person in the Ao Te Si clan to some extent.

Xie Aoyu said: “I also killed Man Te, Ke Lu, and a total of nine Ao Te Si clan remnants. Right now, there are only two left. One is this Lina, the other is her brother Kui Luo. But this Kui Luo has already been taken in as a disciple by a master named Di Ao. He’s no longer in Langya City.”

His words caused another commotion.

The first elder and patriarch Xie Lian looked at one another, “When I went out to travel, I heard of the name Di Ao. It seems like he’s a Rainbow level master.

“First elder is very knowledgeable. Your words are absolutely correct.” Xie Aoyu pulled out the proof about Kui Luo and pulled out the letter, giving it to the first elder, “There are records here.”

The first elder read it carefully, “Indeed it was that Di Ao.”

“With this I believe even less.” Fourth elder Xie Kun laughed out coldly.

Xie Aoyu looked at him indifferently and didn’t say anything.

Everyone else was listening carefully.

Fourth elder coldly said: “If indeed Xie Liang and the others were killed by Te Luo Si, Man Te, and the other Ao Te Si clan remnants,

then their strength couldn't be weak, because Xie Liang and the others among the weakest was still at least lower Intermediate level. For them to kill Xie Liang and the others, their strength must not have been weak."

"Te Luo Si and Man Te were both lower Advanced level. Ke Lu was upper Advanced level. Everyone else was intermediate level." Xie Aoyu spoke honestly about Te Luo Si and the others' strength.

"Haha..."

Fourth elder Xie Kun burst out laughing.

Laughing so hard, looking at Xie Aoyu with a big sneer and contempt, Xie Kun even took a quick glance at the unconscious Xie Gan, "Since they are such experts, how did you kill them then? Don't tell me you ambushed them. A person like you without any qi, if you said that you sneak attacked Xie Gang, I could recognize, but against an Advanced level opponent, even if you did ambush them, there's still not a chance of victory, much less of killing them."

The surrounding people nodded their heads one after another.

They indeed thought that this didn't make sense.

"Ao Yu, did you find someone else to help?" Xie Lian didn't have a son. He and Xie Gan were from the same father but different mothers, so in his heart, he considered Xie Aoyu as his son.

Xie Aoyu understood Xie Lian's meaning, he smiled and said: "Uncle, I didn't have help. I only counted on myself!"

"What a joke!" Fourth elder Xie Kun mocked, "A person without any way to cultivate qi killing an advanced level practitioner, and not killing just one. I'm afraid that this is the greatest joke that Qi Ao continent's has ever seen."

The first elder looked at him, and couldn't help but say: "He could have used poison."

"I didn't use poison." Xie Aoyu said.

"Hear that, he didn't use poison. He only used his own 'power'." Fourth elder Xie Kun placed an emphasis on the word power.

Without giving anyone else a chance to speak, fourth elder Xie Kun took large strides towards the entrance of the main hall, coming to where Xie Zhe and Lina were. He reached out to grab the rags inside their mouths.

Geer moved his body to block Xie Kun's path.

"Geer move aside." Xie Aoyu lightly said.

Geer moved aside.

Fourth elder Xie Kun reached out and pulled out the rags, “Zhe, how did this happen to you. Do you really know this Lina?”

“Father, save me.” Xie Zhe cried out.

Xie Kun violently winked, said: “I asked you, do you recognize Lina?”

Xie Zhe was startled for a moment before recovering, and began to loudly say: “I don’t know her. I don’t even know her. This is all Xie Aoyu’s conspiracy. He’s only doing this because I always bullied him.”

“Xie Aoyu, what else do you have to say!” Fourth elder Xie Kun angrily said.

Xie Aoyu indifferently smiled, “Lina, what do you say?”

Lina knew that she was already doomed, everyone was already thinking that Xie Aoyu was lying, all because of one thing, which was that Xie Aoyu didn’t have qi.

Once Xie Aoyu revealed his qi, then everyone would no longer have any doubts.

She understood, even if she lied it would be no use.

Lina didn’t open her mouth. She closed her eyes and waited for

death.

“She obviously doesn’t recognize me. Xie Aoyu, this is all you framing me.” Xie Zhe ecstatically yelled out. He thought he was dead for sure. He never thought that he might still live.

Fourth elder Xie Kun coldly said: “Right now I suspect that Lina and Xie Aoyu were working together!”

Everyone’s eyes turned towards Xie Aoyu.

“Then how can I prove that I’m telling the truth?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“That’s very simple. If you can beat Xie Lin, then I’ll believe that you killed Te Luo Si, Ke Lu, and the others.” Fourth elder Xie Kun used one hand to point at a twenty-so year old young man.

And his elder nodded his head.

Patriarch Xie Lian had a frown on his face. He knew, this Xie Lin’s father had long since died from illness. These were all watched over by Xie Kun. It could be said that this Xie Kun, if he had been the cause, then perhaps Xie Aoyu...

“Alright.” Xie Aoyu walked out of the main hall.

The surrounding people immediately made room for an open

space.

“Ao Yu.” Patriarch Xie Lian said.

“Family elder, you wouldn’t want to cover for him right?”
Fourth elder Xie Kun coldly laughed.

Family elder Xie Lian coldly replied: “What is that supposed to mean!” He was the patriarch, this energy suddenly exploded out, which also made even the advanced level fourth elder Xie Kun feel like he was suffocating for a moment.

“I was only speaking the truth.” Fourth elder Xie Kun knew that right now he absolutely couldn’t appear weak. He loudly said, “Who doesn’t know that the patriarch and Xie Gan are direct brothers. If the patriarch wants to stop this, I won’t be satisfied!”

“Unsatisfied!” Xie Zhe also screamed. As always, he didn’t see the situation at hand clearly, and he also knew that Xie Aoyu could use qi.

But he couldn’t be blamed.

Xie Zhe was originally garbage, he only knew how to drink, gamble, and play with girls. And since he gone from certain death to survive, and could even turn the blame to Xie Aoyu. He wasn’t even thinking about anything else.

“Patriarch, this is it I’m afraid.” The first elder said.

Xie Lian looked anxious as he faced Xie Aoyu.

Xie Aoyu lightly said: “Xie Lin, prepare to fight.”

Chapter 26

Xie Lin stepped forward.

He was 1.9 meters tall, and stood out among the Xie family. His body was very sturdy. At first glance, it looked like he was a big bear.

Following fourth elder Xie Kun's training, with Xie Kun's drugs as help, although his talent wasn't originally that great, now among the Xie family's young people he could be considered a leader.

Upper intermediate level.

“Xie Lin, take this seriously!” Fourth elder Xie Kun said.

“I understand, fourth elder.” Xie Lin said.

The two of them indeed didn't say much, but everyone knew, this was Xie Kun telling Xie Lin to not hold back. If so, Xie Aoyu was unfortunate.

Everyone felt sympathetic towards Xie Aoyu.

“Whoosh!”

The first elder sprang out from the main hall.

“You are all people of my Xie family, in this fight, you are not allowed to seriously harm each other. Don’t go too far!” The first elder said while frowning.

Fourth elder Xie Kun pretended to not hear him.

Xie Lin stepped forward, when he was about three meters from Xie Aoyu, “Ao Yu, I can only say, I hope this doesn’t happen, but if I accidentally don’t control myself and hurt you, please don’t hold a grudge.”

“And I’ll return these words back to you.” Xie Aoyu said.

Ignorance!

Xie Lin secretly mocked, his hands slowly balled up into fists. A fire attribute qi began to emerge out of his body, flowing out of his entire body in every direction. The temperature around him began to slowly climb up, and at the same time, his constitution began to naturally increase and his muscles began to swell, making others feel a little frightened.

His legs bent slightly, Xie Lin’s violently stepped off of the ground, and exploded forward like a bullet. His two fists also exploded out, fire qi covering them, and there was also a layer of flames.

“Firefist!” Some people cried out.

Firefist was an advanced level technique, an incredibly strong move. Everyone held their breath. If Xie Lin's true strength could use Firefist, then Xie Aoyu was most likely in danger.

It was exactly what the first elder tried to stop when he had come out.

Fourth elder Xie Kun had a big smile on his face as he blocked the first elder, preventing him from trying to help. He then smiled and watched Xie Aoyu, waiting to watch Xie Aoyu's tragic death.

Everyone's eyes were wide open, holding their breaths.

Xie Aoyu made a move. He didn't make any big movements, didn't make any deafening shouts, just calmly stretched out his right hand, and went to grab.

“Peng!”

The strong winds dispersed.

It returned to silence.

“Wa!”

Shouts came from all around, everyone had just seen Xie Aoyu use his right hand to grab Xie Lin's fist, and what made them even

more surprised was that he had defeated Xie Lin's fire qi and caused it to retreat.

Qi!

“He has qi!”

“He's cultivated qi!”

Suddenly a loud sound resounded throughout the entire Xie family area.

Patriarch Xie Lian had excitedly hit a table too hard and broke it. His two eyes began to form warm tears, emotionally he watched Xie Aoyu. Finally he turned his eyes to look at the unconscious Xie Gan, and in his heart shout: “Second brother, did you see it, your son used qi. He use qi!”

“Roar!”

Xie Lin let out a roar, and brought out his full qi.

“Break!”

Xie Aoyu coldly yelled. Qi surged out, like an avalanche, sundering Xie Lin's qi, stripping him of all his strength.

Then he gently tossed.

When such a large strength had manifested, Xie Lin's full two hundred so kilograms of mass, was tossed away by Xie Aoyu for a hundred or so meters, slamming into a wall, and instantly fainted on the spot.

Xie Aoyu dusted off his hands, "Fourth elder, do you still have any words to say?"

"You, you..." Fourth elder Xie Kun was completely dumbfounded.

It was entirely quiet.

Not only were they amazed that Xie Aoyu had used qi, what surprised them more was that Xie Aoyu could actually easily defeat the upper intermediate level Xie Lin.

"Even if you can beat Xie Lin, does that prove that you killed Te Luo Si?" Xie Zhe squawked.

Everyone listened and secretly went to look at him.

Xie Zhe still thought that others still supported him, still gloated.

"Look!"

People began to whisper. The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword slashed through the air with cold electricity, making people to flinch, and when they looked again, the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword had already been stuck into the ground.

“Lightning Spirit Holy Sword! This is the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword!” First elder shouted out.

“That’s right, this is indeed the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword.” Patriarch Xie Lian said.

The other elders also nodded their heads.

Xie Lian looked at fourth elder Xie Kun and angrily shouted: “Fourth elder, what else do you have to say. The fact are here, Xie Zhe and Xie Gang worked with the Ao Te Si clan remnants to kill our Xie family people. He should be killed ten thousand times!”

“Ought to die!” First elder angrily shouted.

Xie Zhe was dumbfounded. He didn’t understand how suddenly he was supposed to die again. He pleadingly looked towards Xie Kun, “Father, save me.”

“Pa!”

Fourth elder Xie Kun slapped him across the face, hitting Xie Zhe three times, shouted out: “Kneel down!”

Xie Zhe who had been frightened quickly knelt down.

“Patriarch, first elder, Zhe was only confused for a time. Please spare him just this once. From now on, I will fully devote myself to developing drugs in order to help our Xie family grow.” Fourth elder Xie Kun finally softened.

“You think that’s possible?!” First elder said extremely coldly.

Xie Liang was his son.

The other elders and seniors who had lost their children also shouted out.

“I don’t want to die, I don’t want to die.” Xie Zhe cried with tears down his eyes.

Xie Aoyu coldly said: “To kill people you must repay with your own life.”

“Xie Aoyu, I know I shouldn’t have treated you like that in the past...” Xie Zhe pleaded.

“You must die!” Xie Aoyu’s voice was extremely cold. A person who could work with the enemies of the Xie family, if this kind of person didn’t die, than if there was trouble later, he had to die, even if only to deter others.

“If he dies, I’m afraid that I won’t be able to produce drugs anymore.” Fourth elder Xie Kun faintly said.

With these words of his suddenly made all of the rowdy crowd suddenly calm down.

Everyone understood, alchemists were extremely important to a clan. They were an irreplaceable existence. If there was no alchemist, then the Xie family’s growth was bound to slow down significantly, and begin to decline.

Just taking Xie Lin for example, Xie Lin’s talent was average, but because of fourth elder Xie Kun, his cultivation speed hadn’t been slow. Within the young people of the Xie family he was considered a leader.

“You!” First elder pointed at Xie Kun, so angry that he couldn’t speak.

Fourth elder Xie Kun glanced at Xie Aoyu, and shot out a glare of ridicule, as if saying, no one can kill me. Even if you want, the Xie family will not agree.

Xie Aoyu coldly said: “Xie Zhe must die!”

“Ao Yu...” First elder said.

Xie Aoyu acted as if he hadn't heard and continued to say: "Xie Kun must also die!"

When his words came out, suddenly made the quiet crowd each look at Xie Aoyu, unable to understand why he was like this.

"Ao Yu, Xie Zhe's actions, I think that fourth elder didn't know about them." Xie Lian opened his mouth to say.

"At the start he didn't know, but when I set his house on fire, he already knew." Xie Aoyu coldly said.

"What? You burned the house!"

Already everyone couldn't fully get their mind around it.

Xie Aoyu continued to say: "That day, he also admitted that he was the one who poisoned my father, putting my father in a coma for that past three years, like a living dead person, which is why he should die!"

"Ao Yu, do you have proof?" Xie Lian felt like the situation was getting out of hand.

"I'm a witness!"

Geer stepped forward, proudly speaking.

“He’s the one who wanted to kill me in the past, but was exiled. He’s framing.” Xie Zhe shrieked. He understood now that as long as Xie Kun was alive, he could live too.

“That’s right, in the past I tried to kill you, because I personally saw Xie Kun traitor work with an outsider, receiving from someone else that poison. I wanted to kill him, but I couldn’t kill him, so I wanted to kill you in order to make Xie Kun suffer for that reason.” Geer ground his teeth as he spoke.

At this time, everyone was exploding with questions and shock because of Xie Aoyu.

Fourth elder Xie Kun seeing the situation, he became like a wooden board, coldly said: “That’s right. It was my work. That said, who let him stop me from my chance of getting a divergent flame. He deserved to die!” He gloomily said, “I’ll tell you clearly, for his poison, even if you have the Water of the Holy Spirit, wake him up, he’ll still be a useless person, useless person!”

Xie Aoyu’s face twisted in murderous rage. Word by word he said: “I...will... kill... you!”

Chapter 27

“Kill me? Haha...” Fourth elder Xie Kun then burst out laughing, he completely ignored everyone else’s angry eyes, his face was full of contempt. He pointed his finger at Xie Aoyu, “Who will help you? Don’t think that just being able to beat Xie Lin gives you the right to be wild. He’s only at an intermediate level. Even if your strength is not bad, you’re still not my opponent. Don’t forget, I’m an alchemist. Without even mentioning you, even if there was someone I wanted to kill in the Xie family, it’s all easily done!”

Xie Aoyu at that time looked as if he was looking at a dead man, watching him, he calmly said: “You’re an alchemist, everyone knows. I’m no exception. Then if I dared to say now that I will kill you, did you think I wouldn’t have prepared beforehand? Idiot!”

The wide smile on fourth elder Xie Kun’s face froze.

He was Xie family’s only alchemist. This long-term pride made his self-importance grow too big. Now with what Xie Aoyu said, he was suddenly awoken.

“So what, you think the patriarch and them will agree?” Fourth elder Xie Kun curled his lips.

“Why wouldn’t they agree?” Xie Aoyu’s eyes flashed a strange light.

Before fourth elder Xie Kun had a chance to speak, Xie Zhe

screamed out: “Because my dad’s the only alchemist!” [\[1\]](#)

“Xie Aoyu, you have to listen carefully. The only one!” Fourth elder chuckled, “Maybe everyone thinks that your dad was the one who brought the Xie family to the top of Langaya city, but I think that the patriarch and the other elders understand, if I hadn’t been an alchemist, creating countless pills, then the Xie family would never have expanded. I, Xie Kun, am the Xie family’s biggest hero. Without me, the Xie family would have been extinguished long ago!”

His words caused some denouncing.

But seeing Xie Lian, first elder, and the other elders gloomy faces, everyone went silent. No one had thought it was like this.

Only Xie Aoyu’s had a small smile on his face.

“I am the cornerstone of the Xie family!” Fourth elder Xie Kun patted his chest and proudly said, “See this generation of people, there are a few talented ones. If there wasn’t me, this generation would be the decline of the Xie family, and in the end be defeated, or even eliminated. Thus, I cannot die, and I must be happy, or else the Xie family will perish!”

“Xie Kun, you’re too excessive!” Third elder yelled out angrily.

Fourth elder Xie Kun didn’t even pay attention to him. Among the Xie family, there were only four people that mattered,

patriarch Xie Lian, first elder, fourth elder, fourth elder Xie Kun and sixth elder Xie Gan who was in a coma. Thus there were only the patriarch and the first elder.

“Patriarch, first elder, how do you feel? Will the Xie family choose Xie Liang and the others, and also Xie Gan’s coma, or will they choose Xie family’s future?” Fourth elder Xie Kun grinned and said.

Xie Aoyu didn’t say anything, just coldly watched on.

Everyone’s eyes rested on patriarch Xie Lian and the first elder.

They were final decision makers.

Patriarch Xie Lian and first elder’s four eyes looked at each other, both of their face had bitter expressions. They couldn’t wait to tear Xie Kun and his son to pieces, but...

“You can’t die.” Patriarch ground his teeth as he said. Finishing speaking, he felt as if strength had left his entire body.

“Haha...”

In the area’s two hundred plus people, only fourth elder Xie Kun was laughing.

“Xie Aoyu, what now?” Fourth elder Xie Kun was laughing out

loud.

“Alright!”

Xie Aoyu lightly said.

Uh...

Everyone was startled again. Since Xie Aoyu had appeared, the number of times that everyone had been shocked was causing some to almost go numb.

“Ao Yu.” Patriarch Xie Lian painfully said.

“Uncle, don’t blame yourself.” Xie Aoyu’s face had a small smile on it, “You and first elder have had your brother and son harmed, by these events of death, you still placed emphasis on the house. I really admire it. At the same time, I understand why my father didn’t become the patriarch or the first elder. It’s because you have to really care for the clan.

Xie Lian and first elder looked towards the sky and sighed.

They listened to Xie Aoyu as he continued to say: “But have you once thought, this father and son duo are able to incur all this wrath, even if they stay, will the father really work for the Xie family’s good?”

“But...” First elder said.

Xie Aoyu interrupted him to say, “Thus Xie Kun needs to die.”

“If I die, who will replace me?” Fourth elder proudly said.

“Me!”

Geer broke in.

“Che, you?” Fourth elder Xie Kun looked at him contemptuously.

Xie Aoyu nodded his head.

Geer reached out his hand, “Pa” and a flame came out.

“Uncommon fire!” [\[2\]](#)

Shouts immediately rang out through the entire Xie family.

Xie Lian and first elder had their eyes popping open, disbelievingly looking at Geer. They didn’t imagine that the young man who had come as a witness actually had a divergent flame.

“This is the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame, the one that the Ao Te Si clan found. Recently, Butterfly Queen You Lan Ruo told us

about this, Geer then obtained it.” Xie Aoyu said.

“Impossible, impossible!” Fourth elder’s face twisted up, crazily began to shout, “I don’t believe it. This has to be a fake, a fake!”

The surrounding people began to laugh.

Coming from an extremely high place and then quickly crashing down, that was how fourth elder Xie Kun was right now. Many people had a different expression now when they looked towards Xie Aoyu.

All of this was planned by him.

Purposely letting fourth elder Xie Kun reach for the high position, then let him crash back down. Pretty cruel!

“I don’t believe it!” Fourth elder crazily yelled out, suddenly he flipped his hand. A long sword appeared in his hands, and he fiercely stabbed towards Geer’s heart, “You can go and die!”

Once Geer died, he would return to his advantage.

“Get out!” Xie Aoyu coldly snorted. He had long since been wary of Xie Kun, in order to prevent him from acting like a dog leaping over a wall in desperation, the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword hacked through the air downwards. [\[3\]](#)

“Kacha!”

The longsword was immediately broken by the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword.

The enormous strength shocked even fourth elder and caused him to fall back.

“I said it before, I’m going to kill you!” The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword in Xie Aoyu’s hand was lifted up, his eyes giving off a cold glow, began to move like in a dance. It was as if a god of war had been born.

“Trying to kill me isn’t that easy.” Fourth elder Xie Kun crazily laughed. His left hand grabbed and pulled a black thing, “Everyone listen to me. Anyone who dares to take a step forward will definitely die!”

It was deadly poison.

Xie Aoyu curled his lips and said: “Idiot!”

As he talked to fourth elder Xie Kun, he suddenly tunneled forward, his speed reaching the limit, as if there was a ghost in front of him, the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword slashed down diagonally.

“Flame splitting wood blow!” [\[4\]](#)

Fourth elder Xie Kun yelled out. His two strongest qis were the fire and wood attributes. Thus, naturally he used a technique that had the two attributes.

A red and green light shot out of his broken sword.

“Boom!”

Xie Aoyu’s sword continued forward, the sword broke through the light. The matchless Xie Aoyu then slashed his sword down again, this time his qi had reached its peak.

Originally in fourth elder Xie Kun’s thought process, this move should have repelled Xie Aoyu. He didn’t imagine that Xie Aoyu wouldn’t have been pushed back even half a step, and even continued with a follow-up.

The chain of attacks made Xie Kun’s face change a bit.

He hurriedly retreated.

“Bang!”

Xie Aoyu took a step forward.

When that foot landed, the qi rushed out from his foot, immediately causing a shock on the earth. A crack spread out from

his foot and went outwards, as if it was a snake moving forward.

Xie Kun was greatly surprised and quickly got out of the way.

Shua!

The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword came down.

“Ah!”

A pitiful scream came out. Xie Kun’s right arm had been chopped off by Xie Aoyu. He had also been sent flying back from the shockwave, rushing into the ground.

Xie Aoyu’s killing intent was fearless, and he brandished the sword again.

He must kill Xie Kun!

“Die!” Xie Kun shook out the black stuff in his hands.

As the black stuff came out, it immediately became a lump of gray mist, creating a large net. It moved to cover Xie Aoyu, making it impossible to dodge.

“Hurry and get out, that’s black spider poisonous fog!” Xie Lain exclaimed. [\[5\]](#)

Xie Aoyu chopped down, qi whirling, wind blowing, but that gray fog was only shaken up, not dispersed. It continued to move to cover him.

“Haha, die, die.” Xie Kun grinned.

“No need!”

Xie Aoyu returned his Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, his left pinky pointed at the gray fog.

Medical Spirit Finger!

His finger stuck out, golden light appeared for the first time.

The halo became a disc-like thing, and bumped into the black spider poison fog.

“Bo!”

As if just scratching the surface, from Xie Aoyu’s left pinky’s golden halo appeared a watermark(?) -like fluctuation. The gray poisonous fog was instantly dissipated.

Just like this Xie Aoyu walked forward.

Unharmed.

“Impossible!” Xie Kun screamed, he fearfully retreated backwards, “You can’t kill me, you can’t kill me. You don’t know who gave me the poison, who wanted Xie Gan to sleep permanently.

“You don’t even know. When you met with that person, I was there eavesdropping. That person told you before, you wouldn’t meet a second time. I even watched you for a year and no one else contacted you.” Geer sneered.

Xie Kun’s face became ashen.

Xie Aoyu coldly stared at him, his fist launched that way.

Overlord Dragon Boxing!

His father Xie Gan had almost died to acquire this peerless fighting skill for him.

“Boom!”

After one puch, Xie Kun exploded and flesh and bones flew out.

Xie Aoyu looked towards the unconscious Xie Gan. His eyes had tears in them, “Father, I used the fighting skill you gave to eliminate the person who harmed you.” [\[6\]](#)

[1] (TN: This guy's denser than a pond of mercury.)

[2] (TN: 奇火 got something better?)

[3] (TN: Chinese idiom here. Basically cornered like a rat. 狗急跳墙)

[4] (TN: 炎烈木爆破 better name suggestions? Inflammation fierce wooden demolition? Idk)

[5] (TN: 黑蛛毒雾 Better names? I don't think it'll really matter since this seems like one of those one-time names though)

[6] (TN: Yay! He finally got revenge. It was a little graphic at the end. Sorry that it didn't stay completely kid-friendly (It was definitely kid friendly, remember, they were just wrestling a few chapters back. Not uh... something else.). That felt like it took a long time, but that might just be because I'm translating an arc for the first time instead of just mooching, haha.)

Chapter 28

After eliminating the fourth elder Xie Kun, the matters that followed were much simpler. Xie Zhe and Lina didn't have any strength remaining to resist. Both were eliminated.

Geer was formally inducted into the Xie family.

Although he possessed the divergent flame, at this time he still hadn't practiced refining any pills, but it was only a matter of time. Now that he was here, it will make the Xie family grow even faster than before. Since he replaced Xie Kun, he became the fourth elder, becoming the first non-Xie Xie family elder.

Xie Aoyu took Xie Gan back to his room.

In the Xie family for the next few days, using Geer's descriptions, paintings of the person who had given fourth elder Xie Kun the poison were sent out.

Xie Aoyu wanted to go gain experience because he still had another objective, the Continent Youth Competition. It would be the best chance to make Xie Gan wake up, thus he went to the Heng Duan mountain range to gain experience.

Ten something days later, Xie Aoyu and Xiao Bai reached the outskirts of the Heng Duan mountain range.

On the road, Xie Aoyu didn't remain idle. He was constantly self-

cultivating. In his spare time he was studying the fighting skill he had accidentally acquired...Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop!

This sort of skill could be said to be peerless.

Even the fighting skills that his father, Xie Gan had were not stronger than Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop.

Under the cover of the night, next to the campfire, Xiao Bai ate until he was full and drank until his thirst was quenched. He slept on his side and snored loudly. This sort of level wasn't high and he didn't need to sweat the small stuff. Even if they arrived at a monster's haven there would still be no reason to fear. All this made Xie Aoyu realize that Xiao Bai's courage was bigger than most.

The campfire was extinguished.

This was because at night in the Heng Duan mountain range, if there was fire, it could easily attract the attention of monsters. Xie Aoyu wasn't afraid, but right now he wanted to cultivate the Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop.

After determining that there were no people in the vicinity, Xie Aoyu began to direct his qi according to the fighting skill's circulation. [\[1\]](#)

One by one within Xie Aoyu's body, qi began to flow along his meridians. The skin on his body began to automatically tighten,

and his muscles began to expand.

“Pa pa pa...”

Originally Xie Aoyu couldn't even get close to the electric light inside the tri-colored ball, but after learning the Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop technique, it began to gradually flow out.

The speed at which it came out was very slow, but its circulation seemed to faintly begin to mix with the qi. And the color of the electric light changed, becoming red.

Like the purple pool, it was like a crimson dragon.

“Pa pa pa...”

At the same time, a crimson electric light manifested around Xie Aoyu.

An indescribable joy welled up from the bottom of Xie Aoyu's heart. In this moment, he faintly felt that he had established a bit of contact with that red electric light.

Just a very slight connection.

It wasn't very clear at all.

But the part that was exceptionally clear was that it was a part of him, it was part of his growth now, and Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop was definitely an electric-type attribute fighting skill. The two could be used together. [\[2\]](#)

“Lightning Spirit Holy Sword!”

Xie Aoyu yelled out.

Countless crimson electric lights burst out behind his head, dancing around randomly, uncontrolled. His two hands were placed evenly, and the qi inside him began to flow crazily, very different from a beginner’s cultivation. He needed to carefully follow where the Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop wanted to go as it passed through his meridians.

The qi entirely followed a certain trail.

The crazy surging brought out even more terrifying red electric light, shooting out one or two meters in every direction, causing the gravel, flowers, grass, and trees in Xie Aoyu’s surroundings to split.

“Crash!”

The qi surged, the agitated Lightning Spirit Holy Sword erupted out of its scabbard.

Slicing through the air, entering into the heavens, leaving a trail of cold purple light.

Xie Aoyu explosively leapt up, reached out his hand to grab that Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, simultaneously sending out a slash. The qi and sword combined together, the crimson light combined with the sword.

The sword that contained matchless divinity came crashing down.

“Boom!”

The crimson colored light on the sword filled the void, covering at least forty or fifty meters distance horizontally, above the ground by three meters. On the ground appeared a deep half meter ravine. Ahead, a seven or eight meter tall boulder had been destroyed and exploded into pieces.

Xie Aoyu while still in the air flipped his hand and put the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword back in its sheath.

He slowly descended.

The ease of cultivating Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop made Xie Aoyu feel very happy. It should be known that this Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop first needed to be adjusted to its lightning property.

Only by maximizing the lightning attribute could he exert Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop's power, but because of the electric light inside the tri-colored ball, it basically eliminated that most difficult obstacle.

Also, because of the Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop, the electric light had become crimson colored.

Flipping his hand once, the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword automatically flew into its sheath. Xie Aoyu folded his legs and sat down, closing his eyes, trying to recall the feeling of the sword.

Once the sword came out, I wouldn't have any opponents.

That sort of always facing-forward mentality was what made Xie Aoyu feel the most pleasantly surprised. This mentality in terms of fighting purposes had indescribable uses. Oftentimes in the middle of a fight, if two high-leveled master fought, the one with stronger mentality would be the one to gain victory in the end. This was also the reason why the more you fought the braver you became.

The Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop technique was exactly the type of technique that caused that sort of tyrannical mentality.

If one's strength wasn't as good as Xie Aoyu's – originally his fighting strength wasn't strong – perhaps it wouldn't be so simple for him to gain this type of intimidating mentality, and wouldn't have been able to move. [\[3\]](#)

“I don’t know if I can control the red lightning in the tri-colored ball.” Xie Aoyu murmured <inside> to himself. He had seen that the red lightning does not shoot out, but only flows a bit. How could he wield this terrifying electric light unless he could control it?

Xie Aoyu had already expected the powerful strength of the red lightning, after all, it was the combination of the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire and Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame-two kinds of unique fire prototypes becoming one-but for now, he had no way to control it.

Xie Aoyu tried to communicate with the red electricity.

This continued throughout the night, and there were no results.

The red lightning seemed to be ignoring Xie Aoyu. Only when Xie Aoyu used Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop which was a thunder attribute fighting skill would it follow the Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop and the required qi would flow out, playing its role.

This made Xie Aoyu feel a little disappointed.

But at the same time, it encouraged him even more. If the strong red lightning was used, it inevitably would increase his fighting strength by a lot. He would definitely learn to control the red lightning.

A night without words.

The next day, Xie Aoyu and Xiao Bai continued on their journey.

During this season was when the Heng Duan mountain range was at its hottest. The scorching sun hung in the middle of the sky. Red-hot temperatures made this place become something like a big food steamer. Yet here at Heng Duan mountain range's outside border, there were tufted weeds and shriveled up leaves that as you stepped on them made a crunch sound. It was as if the heat was coming up straight from the ground.

Looking up at the scorching sun, it was currently noon, Xie Aoyu's whole body was covered in sweat. He heard something from the side. There seemed to be the gurgling of water. He immediately went towards where the water was flowing.

Xiao Bai also began to get excited, and he quickly ran in that direction.

Very quickly, they saw a small waterfall, below it was a small pool. The clear pool of water rippled. Xie Aoyu reached out his hand to touch it, the calm water in the pool had a cool feeling, making the heat seem as if had gone away.

“Yiya!”

Xiao Bai excitedly shouted, jumping straight in.

Xie Aoyu saw that there was no one in the vicinity, he took off his clothes, placing the space ring. Naked, he directly entered into the pool.

Once in the pool, the immediate sense of being refreshed almost made him groan.

It was too comfortable.

Xie Aoyu began to swim in the pool without a care.

After freely swimming for a while, Xie Aoyu came out. He figured he would study red lightning in the tri-colored ball here. How could he have known, the second he exited the pool, he would see a silhouette flash in front of him. He lifted his head up to look.

And saw a beautiful woman with dark green hair who was also looking at him.

The two people were simultaneously startled.

“Ahhh!!!”

The eyes of the dark-green beauty looked down, resting between the thing between Xie Aoyu’s legs, then uttered a sky-piercing scream, an indescribably tragic scream.

“Ah!”

Xie Aoyu also began to shout out, hurriedly using his hands to cover that area.

“Female rogue!”

“Pervert!”

The beauty whipped out a sword in an instant, and charged at him out of the blue.

Xie Aoyu lifted <up> his hand to try and break the charge, but he exposed his nether region again.

The fierce beauty’s eyes became like saucers and stared. The sword in her hand was continuously swiping and slashing, her qi cutting everything to pieces, her aim was only Xie Aoyu’s important place. [\[4\]](#)

Xie Aoyu was so angry his teeth were itchy.

It was him who had been spied on, but this female rogue had the nerve to attack him. But he couldn’t just let a woman watch right? His only path of retreat was to return into the water.

Seeing that the beauty yelled out, “Surpassing level invincible castration sword!” [\[5\]](#)

[1] (TN: Help here? 开始控制斗气按照斗技运行路线流转起来)

[2] (TN: Because the lightning part in its name wasn't a good indicator of what attribute it is >.>)

(ED: LOL)

[3] (TN: This is the part we couldn't really understand. 若是实力不如Xie Aoyu之人，本身战意又不强的，恐怕单纯这种气势就能将其吓破胆，不敢出手的。)

[4] (ED: ROFL!)

[5] (TN: Dang. This girl ain't a joke. Bing Wu's gonna need to find a different husband if she wants kids. Better name though? 超级无敌阉割剑)

(ED: So this thing happens so often that they have a skill named after it..<shakes my head>)

Chapter 29

The sword in the hands of the fierce beauty emitted a cold and dark light, using a very sharp posture to charge forward. This extreme technique made Xie Aoyu silently scream inside. This beauty had definitely castrated countless people in order to reach this level of ability for this terrifying invincible fighting skill.

The strength didn't seem that large, but it still made Xie Aoyu feel a little scared.

After all, that was a man's treasure. [\[1\]](#)

Turning his body, Xie Aoyu acted like a big fish. He twisted his body in the middle of the air, making a "Peng" sound as he landed into the pool, evading the fierce beauty's strike.

After sneaking ten or so meters away inside the water, Xie Aoyu exposed his head.

"Hey! Female rogue, are you finished yet? You saw my family jewels so clearly, but I didn't attack, instead you even dared to sneak attack me." Xie Aoyu shouted.

The fierce beauty shook the sword in her hand, opening her mouth, she fiercely said: "Filthy pervert, this beauty hasn't castrated one hundred people, but has for eighty. You managed to dodge it. It seems that this beauty will need to use a unique skill." She pulled out a bottle from her space ring. Inside was a pale red

liquid.

“What is that?” Xie Aoyu.

“Hehe, it’s nothing much. It’s just something that will allow your man part to retract back, and eventually disappear. That kind of good thing.” fierce beauty evilly laughed and unscrewed the bottle cap, dumping the pale red liquid into the pool. [\[2\]](#)

Xie Aoyu’s brain imagined that terrifying scene.

He felt his soul tremble.

He had met strong and powerful women before, but never one like this fierce beauty.

She was a demon.

It was true that he had the Medical Spirit Finger, but his finger had only just changed color <not too long ago>. Its ability to cure poisons was limited, it might not be able to compete against this poison. What was even more critical was that the poison’s use was on something that a man wouldn’t dare use for an experiment. He sent a punch flying out.

The beauty had already expected this. The ground exploded as she jumped diagonally away, shaking her hand sending the bottle to sink into the middle of the water. Immediately the pale red color

began to spread out, and there were some drops that landed on the ground. The flowers and grass on the ground turned pale red as it began to spread there too.

“Female rogue, just you wait!” Xie Aoyu quickly dived into the water at a startling rate, following the river that flowed out of the pool. But it quickly ended.

Seeing that, Xie Aoyu disappeared underwater.

The fierce beauty began to laugh out loud, “Filthy pervert, you were scared so bad by this beauty. Did you really think there was this kind of medicine, ah.”

She was pleased beyond measure, but she didn’t notice Xiao Bai pop his head out of the water.

Originally, Xiao Bai never left. Xie Aoyu wasn’t a fool either. He was well-read. Although his knowledge on poisons couldn’t be considered extensive, it was still quite broad. During the cultivation of Medical Spirit Finger, he studied even more with Ziyan. It could be said that he hadn’t seen too many poisons, but the ones that he hadn’t heard of were few.

Indeed he had never heard of this strange poison.

But, this fierce beauty had grabbed at a man’s fatal weakness.

And it was the weak point of all men. Thus, even though Xie

Aoyu didn't believe there was one like it, he didn't want to use his body to test it; therefore, he could only leave at this time. He left Xiao Bai to secretly watch.

Quickly Xiao Bai left the pool and found Xie Aoyu.

At this time Xie Aoyu was already five or six hundred meters away from the pool's shore, fully clothed, and was waiting for Xiao Bai to return. Seeing Xiao Bai arrive, he knew that his judgement hadn't been wrong. That beauty had tricked him.

“Hey, female rogue...” Xie Aoyu clenched his fists, letting out popping noises. [\[3\]](#)

Right when he was prepared to back to search for the fierce beauty and rage at her, he heard the sound of disorganized footsteps. There were also people talking in low voices.

Before Xie Aoyu had come to the Heng Duan mountain range, he knew that there were countless monsters in the Heng Duan mountain range, and it was very dangerous. But the most dangerous thing was still other humans because monsters nuclei, fur, and other parts could be sold for money. For that reason, a lot of people would ambush strangers.

He got out of the way and hid in a big tree.

This tree was lush with leaves and could easily hide six or seven people.

From the tree, he could see further too. He saw ten or so people coming his way, led by a bald man. His head shone under the sun, his face was ugly and ferocious looking, he carried a sword on his back, in his hands was a map, and the people behind him tightly followed to his left and right, carefully watching their left and right, as if they were afraid of being spotted by other people. [\[4\]](#)

In the middle, a person with triangular eyes and was tall and lanky said: “Te La, do you think this map is for real. We’ve walked for two days already.” [\[5\]](#)

“It doesn’t matter if it’s real or not, it should be tested.” That bald man Te La said, “Carlos, don’t you forget, this map was one we sacrificed nearly a hundred brothers’ lives in order to get. It doesn’t matter how, we have to test it. I just don’t believe that our brothers really had such bad luck.

“That’s right. This month, several top-level fighting skills have been continuously found in the Heng Duan mountain range. Could it be that our brothers just had no luck?” Someone said.

The tall, lanky, triangular eyes Carlos said: “That’s right. There are countless fighting skills and weapons in Heng Duan mountain range. Although everyday something that was left behind from previous people can be found, but for three top-level fighting skills to be found by people within a month is really rare.”

“Did you think of something?” Bald-headed Te La said.

“I just have a small feeling, and I’m not so sure about it.” Carlos said.

Seeing that, the bald man Te La chuckled and said: “I’ll tell you honestly, that’s because in the previous month, there were some people who had accidentally stumbled upon a map. On that map were marked ten or so locations, and each of those locations had top-level fighting skills and saint-level and above weapons. Later it was discovered by others and that map was ripped in a fight. We have one piece, but it’s only a part of it. Otherwise, you think that I would incorrectly use the lives of a hundred of our brothers to snatch a piece of a map?” While he talked, he raised the map up.

After they heard the news, they all broke out in ecstatic smiles.

Even Xie Aoyu who was hiding in the tree was startled.

There was danger everywhere in the Heng Duan mountain range, but it could also be said that it was the entire continent’s biggest natural treasure trove. Because it had been there for countless months and years, in the meantime, countless masters had come here to cultivate, train their strength, gain experience, fight, etc. There were people that died, people that lost their stuff, and some people that buried their possessions somewhere.

Therefore the Heng Duan mountain range had treasures everywhere, and that was no exaggeration.

While on the road here, Xie Aoyu had encountered many mercenaries, and among them were some that had brought up during conversations that in one month, three top-level fighting

skills had appeared.

He hadn't thought that there was a reason behind it.

Seeing the map in the bald man's hands, Xie Aoyu's heart began to suddenly become active. Since it was a top-level fighting skill, that meant it was at least at the same level of Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop.

And right now the thing he lacked most was fighting skills.

He only had two fighting skills to master, Overlord Dragon Boxing and Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop. The Xie family also had other fighting skills, but their strength couldn't attract his attention. After all, the ones he had picked, Overlord Dragon Boxing and Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop, since he had these, anything else that lacked in power would be a waste of time, and it would be better to go cultivate.

He gave Xiao Bai a wink.

Xiao Bai knew what he meant. This little guy's favorite activity was doing things stealthily. For example, secretly sending a lightning discharge through the ground towards those people, making their hair look as if it had blown up, and setting their butts fire, things like that.

The follow-up was its strong point.

This aspect was probably the strongest follow-up master on the continent and no one could compare. Who would have thought that the lowest levelled, wisdom-lacking, white spirit beast that only had instincts would be smart and even craftier than most humans?

His stature was short, in places with overgrown weeds, trying to find him was harder than ascending to heaven. Therefore Xiao Bai easily followed the bald man Te La and the others, walking right next to them, it was unlike other people who worried about being discovered and would trail behind from a farther distance. This was its advantage. [\[6\]](#)

Xie Aoyu then stood up on the tree and watched.

The bald man Te La and the others followed the map and didn't move very quickly.

After about half an hour, Xiao Bai returned.

Xie Aoyu followed Xiao Bai to arrive at an ordinary small mountain. Te La, Carlos, and the others were currently standing at a cave entrance. There were some that remained outside in order to prevent others from disturbing them. [\[7\]](#)

[\[1\]](#) (ED: Haha!)

[\[2\]](#) (TN: OMG. She's terrifying.)

(ED: WTF! Does she hate men with balls?!)

[3] (TN: Haha, MC is pissed.)

[4] (ED: Yay! More treasures for the MC!)

[5] (TN: Oh great, more names. Yay. I want to call him Teller, but it's the same Te as Te Luo Si's and I don't know if that's important...)

[6] (ED: The author loves his hyperboles, eh?)

[7] [ED 2: Feels like the author hit a deadline and just wrote something for the last paragraph, doesn't it?]

Chapter 30

Standing about thirty meters away from the cave while hiding behind a rock, Xie Aoyu watched the people who patrolled about the cave entrance. His eyebrows wrinkled up.

These people's strength weren't worthy his attention.

But inside the cave was that bald man Te La whose strength was lower Spirit-levelled. That was stronger than him by two tiers. If they had fought one on one, Xie Aoyu could use Overlord Dragon Boxing and Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop together with the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, which wouldn't necessarily kill him, not to mention that there was also Carlos who was an upper Advanced-levelled master.

If he killed people, disturbing them, then they wouldn't be kind to him.

What should he do?

Xie Aoyu squinted his eyes as he looked at the cave, thinking how he could possibly ensure his safety under these circumstances while also secure the top-level fighting skill.

As he was thinking, he heard something roar angrily.

“Roar!”

The small mountain vibrated.

Xie Aoyu's eyes lit up, the cave had spirit beasts in it.

Following the loud angry roar, a fight broke out inside. When the people outside responsible for patrolling heard it, they drew their weapons, hesitant to charge in there.

Then they heard someone inside the cave scream, "There's poison!"

Then the sounds ceased.

A gray cloud of smoke came out, emitting a nauseous odor. The people in charge of patrolling all clutched their noses and mouths while retreating back.

"Bang bang bang..."

The sound of loud clashing came from inside.

A person's silhouette let out a miserable cry and flew out of the mouth of the cave, landing heavily on the ground. On his chest was a deep wound that revealed bone, it was fatal. His face's color had become grayish-green, bleeding everywhere until death.

He had been poisoned to death.

“Hurry up and retreat!” Te La roared out. He fled from the tunnel, the cane knife in his hand lifted high. He was lower Spirit-levelled, his fighting strength was far above most people. Qi entered into the cane knife, and then brandished the cane knife and it gleamed in the light. [\[1\]](#)

Carlos and other others also fled from the cave.

Shua!

Until everyone was out, Te La prepared his knife and then slashed..

Once the knife slashed, a flash of light could be seen going through the air. From inside, a spirit beast at least two meters tall lowered its head and charged out, using the two horns on its head to block.

“Clang!”

The blade’s light hit the horn.

The spirit beast collapsed and issued a cry of pain, and began moving backwards. This also angered it. It began to growl crazily, opening its mouth and spitting out grayish-green smoke.

Seeing this, Te La began to retreat quickly.

The spirit beast took this opportunity to charge forward and kill, trying very hard to kill Te La. The poison smoke in its mouth tumbled out, and at the same time it used its horns to charge.

The spirit beast was two meters high, three meters long. It had the body of a bull and the tail of a snake. Its fur was grayish-green. It seemed to be carrying liquid poison. It began running forward, causing the ground to vibrate and shake.

The spirit beast's strength was indeed not small, and it also had poison smoke, forcing Te La and the others to continually backpedal. Mostly it was the poison smoke which had already poisoned three people to death.

“Carlos, take some people into the cave. I’ll distract him.” Te La yelled out.

Carlos agreed, bringing two people with him as they charged towards the cave.

The spirit beast saw them and stopped, moving to go stop them.

Te La loudly yelled: “Full strength block!”

More than ten people moved out, blocking the spirit beast from going back. In a moment, they became a mess, making it hard to see who was who. Seeing the situation, Xie Aoyu wouldn’t let this opportunity slip by him.

He crouched down, preparing to increase his body's speed to its limit.

The moment Carlos and the two others reached the cave, he scurried forwards.

Te La and the others were using all their energy to deal with the spirit beast—after all, it was a spirit beast that could spit out poison smoke, not a spirit beast that used magic. They didn't dare let it take the slightest effect on them. Thus, they didn't discover Xie Aoyu's existence.

Once inside the cave, Xie Aoyu frowned.

It was too stinky!

“This smell is probably the cave guardian's stench.” Xie Aoyu muttered. Because it smelled so bad, he guessed that most people who rushed in would be forced to retreat due to the smell.

It stank, but more importantly, on the walls and ground there were traces of grayish-green liquid. Apparently it was very toxic. If one wasn't careful, there was a possibility of being poisoned.

Xie Aoyu warily crept forward.

The cave wasn't very deep. It was about twenty meters long. In the middle was a bend. Xie Aoyu looked around the bend and only saw Carlos's and the two others had already reached the end.

Among these three people, for Xie Aoyu, the only danger was Carlos.

Carlos was upper Advanced-levelled, stronger than Xie Aoyu by one tier, but Xie Aoyu was confident that with his advanced fighting skills and the holy weapon Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, he would still be able to defeat him. The key question was, how could he not alert Te La who was outside. That was the biggest problem.

Xie Aoyu also saw, at the dead-end, there was a pile of weeds that were laid down to rest upon. On it was a wooden chest. It was being used as scrap wood, and was placed at the bottom, and if one didn't carefully search, then it wouldn't be found. Carlos's three had already found it and were staring at the wooden box.

There was nothing special about the wooden box, but on it was a bit of grayish-green liquid.

Obviously it was traces of poison left behind by the spirit beast.

Under Carlos's commands, the person to his left took off his coat, using the coat to grab the wooden box and wrap it up, trying to isolate the poison.

Tying up the wooden box, he used strength to tug it out.

The wooden box was covered by some weeds, twigs, and other

things. With this tug, some of the weeds and twigs flew up, some which hit a person's face.

“Ah!”

This person immediately used his hands to grab his face, painfully stumbling onto the ground.

Carlos and the other man quickly retreated back, trying to avoid the weeds and twigs. Those things probably had been contaminated by some of the grayish-green liquid. It was all poisonous.

And it was at this time Xie Aoyu suddenly sprang out.

Lightning Spirit Holy Sword slashed out.

Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop!

A crimson electric light came from Xie Aoyu's body and exploded out, gathering onto the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, changing the sword into a crimson color.

The sword's light broke the air, targeting Carlos .

Originally trying to dodge the poisonous weeds, Carlos hadn't thought that there would be people behind him to sneak attack. When he had noticed, the attack had arrived. He frantically tried

to dodge to the side.

“Pu!”

The sword light still heavily hit Carlos 's back.

Breaking through his qi defense, almost destroying his body. The shock made him spit blood. He rushed forwards. Xie Aoyu was unforgiving, stepping forward and slashed again.

The heavily injured Carlos tried to use his sword to block.

“Kacha!”

Before the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, his sword was no use. In one chop it was cut into two, and his head was also chopped off by Xie Aoyu.

Poor Carlos , his strength was superior to Xie Aoyu's by a tier, but he hadn't even had a chance to fight back before being killed, dying without much struggle. After killing Carlos, Xie Aoyu stretched his left pinky out.

His pinky touched the wooden box, and the toxin immediately receded.

He used this opportunity to pick up the wooden box. He saw the person who had come with Carlos running away and had almost

turned around the corner. He lifted his fist and threw a punch into the air. [\[2\]](#)

Overlord Dragon Boxing!

The punch struck heavily and made the person explode. [\[3\]](#)

Xie Aoyu knew that this would definitely alert the people outside. He placed the wooden box into this space ring, sped up, and ran out of there as fast as he could.

As soon as he had rushed out, he saw Te La use his full strength behind his sword to push back the spirit beast. He was about to come to the cave and kill.

The two stood face to face.

“Here’s a gift.” Xie Aoyu lifted his hand and used a Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop.

He was very clear that he was weaker than Te La by two tiers, and even with the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword and the top-level fighting skill, if he wanted to defeat him, it would still be very tough. Thus, he needed to use a killing technique.

Countless crimson electric lights combined together, forming a sword light, and flew out.

“Ought to die!”

The bald man Te La raged. He brandished his knife then cut.

The knife broke the attack, but he was still pushed back three or four steps. His arms were a bit numb, but he hadn't been injured. Angrily roaring, he wanted to charge forward to kill, but in the end the distance that he had backed up had just happened to place him back in the attack range of the spirit beast. It opened its mouth and spat out more poison smoke.

Te La was hopping mad. He could only brandish his knife, form a strong wind, and disperse the poison fog. By the time he had turned his back again to face Xie Aoyu, Xie Aoyu had already run away fifty, sixty meters.

“Capture him!” Te La commanded his underlings, he lifted his knife and began to chase Xie Aoyu.

Xie Aoyu laughed out loud, increased his speed to its max, like a flash of lightning. As for Te La, by the time he had taken two steps, he heard tragic screams behind him.

His underlings had been fatally poisoned by the spirit beast.

He wanted to chase and kill, but his underlings were in danger. These were the elite of his men, ah! During this moment of hesitation, Xie Aoyu had already escaped out of sight.

Te La was angry but could only vent out his rage on the spirit beast.

The Xie Aoyu who had escaped identified a direction, and ran in that direction for two, three thousand meters. Only after reach a small valley did he stop. Only after checking his surrounding and making sure that there wasn't anyone else around did he pull out the wooden box. [\[4\]](#)

[\[1\]](#) (TN: So 冷芒 is apparently supposed to be like the shine that you see, like in anime when they draw their swords. Or something like that... Better translations are welcome)

[\[2\]](#) (TN: Smh. MC is so sloppy with cleanup. Clear enemies before grabbing loot. Basic tactics.)

[\[3\]](#) (TN: I'm getting the impression that this scene is going to occur again in the future...)

[\[4\]](#) (TN: 10/10 MC would piss off strong enemies just for some garbage)

Chapter 31

Under the setting sun's light, the wooden box emitted a faint light. The patterns on it became vivid, but the remaining traces of the grayish-green color made it not look very pretty.

Examining the wooden box, there didn't seem to be anything special about it.

Xie Aoyu reached out his hand and grabbed the stone lock on the wooden box.

Qi flowed through, letting out a bit of a halo, Xie Aoyu used strength and pinched. By his impression, even if it was a thicker piece of iron he should still be able to break it, but this lock remained intact.

“So hard.” Xie Aoyu muttered. He knocked on the box.

“Dong! Dong!”

The wooden box was unaffected even by his qi.

This aroused Xie Aoyu's curiosity. He tested a few things, trying without using any power, pulling out the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword. Using it as a holy weapon, the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword was incomparably sharp.

Shua!

The Lightning Spirit cleaved at the stone lock.

“Clang!”

A ringing sound came out as the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword sprung back up.

An extremely tiny nick had appeared on the stone lock.

Xie Aoyu was astounded. Putting all his qi into it, he stood up, he vigorously slashed with the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, slashing at the stone lock more than ten times. [\[1\]](#)

After the eighteenth slash, the stone lock broke into pieces and fell to the ground.

“With this kind of lock, the thing it protected had to be something good right?” Xie Aoyu muttered to himself. He reached out to open the wooden box. When his fingers touched the wooden box, he thought for a second, then shrank back. He changed to using the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword’s point to pry open the wooden box.

“Sou sou sou...”

The wooden box had just been opened when a row of cutlasses

exploded out. [\[2\]](#)

Out of the place that the cutlasses struck appeared some grayish-green color. All the weeds and plants around it withered, and even the ground was corroding. There was actually toxin on them.

Seeing the toxin, Xie Aoyu thought of the spirit beast.

The toxin and the spirit beast's poison were very similar. Could it be that the spirit beast had gained its poisonous smoke ability due to the wooden box? Xie Aoyu shook his head. This sort of question didn't matter to him. It wasn't important. He couldn't be bothered to find out.

Only after determining there were no more traps, Xie Aoyu looked into the wooden box.

The inside space was not very large, all it contained was a single scroll. Xie Aoyu used the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword to poke the scroll. Seeing that there was no problem, he stuck his hand inside and grabbed the scroll.

He opened the scroll.

A bunch of words greeted his eyes. Xie Aoyu's eyes drifted to the top. On it was a row of characters: Earth attribute agility type fighting skill...Earth Escape Technique! [\[3\]](#)

“Earth Escape Technique?” Xie Aoyu said in surprise.

It was the first time he had heard of this agility type skill.

Since it was an earth-attribute skill, it was suitable for him. Xie Aoyu had the earth, thunder, and wood attributes in him. He grabbed the scroll, sat on the ground, and began to carefully read it.

Even if he hadn’t read the title, after reading the rest, his eyes lit up.

“It’s actually a miraculous fighting skill that allows you sneak underground!” Xie Aoyu said with wide eyes. He could barely believe it.

The Earth Escape Technique could be used to attack, then hide, and sneak attack the injured people. It was definitely the best choice for assassinations; he could retreat by walking, then enter the ground and sneak. Who could stop him? [\[4\]](#)

Xie Aoyu burst out laughing: “This is a incomparable treasure, ah!

By cultivating this technique, Xie Aoyu was hard-pressed to imagine all the benefits it could bring him.

He continued to read, learning that this fighting skill came from

an earth attribute genius from hundreds of years ago who had come up with the idea after observing magic mice that could sneak up on other spirit beasts. In the end, before it had been used by anyone, he was plotted against, but before he died, he hid the scroll. It could be said that this Earth Escape Technique had never been seen before in this world. Xie Aoyu was the first person to ever use this technique. This was an advantage!

If no one had heard of the Earth Escape Technique, who could prepare for it?

And who would have thought that a person could sneak underground?

After reading the scroll's contents, Xie Aoyu exhaled, calming his excited mood. According to what was written, in order to practice the Earth Escape Technique, there were two things required. One was Earth Core Grass and that the practitioner had the earth attribute. [\[5\]](#)

Xie Aoyu actually had both of these things.

The Earth Core Grass wasn't something rare. In the Heng Duan Mountain Range, it could be found everywhere. On the way here he had already collected some. Other than the ones intended to nurture the Medical Spirit Finger, there were still a few left.

Xie Aoyu first cultivated his qi for a while, returning to his peak condition. When he started to practice Earth Escape Technique, the moon had already come out.

According to the scroll's contents, to practice Earth Escape Technique, the practitioner first had to be infinitely close with the ground. To get that close, one needed to use the Earth Core Grass. In addition, the person need a very strong earth attribute. The two together could make a person's breath become infinitely close to that of the the earth's, and thus blend with the earth.

After that, the person was supposed to bury his whole body into the ground.

Xie Aoyu first dug a hole, then pulled out the Earth Core Grass, tore a piece of the grass, and stuffed it into his mouth. Once it entered his mouth, Xie Aoyu made an "ah" sound, almost spitting it out.

The Earth Core Grass was actually several times more bitter than herbal medicine.

With one hand to forcefully pinching his leg, he used that pain to resist the unimaginable Earth Core Grass. Xie Aoyu wondered if he could become the first person to have died from the Earth Core Grass' bitterness.

The moon had reached the middle of the sky by the time Xie Aoyu finally managed to swallow the Earth Core Grass.

Then, he laid down in the hole, letting Xiao Bai bury him.

Xiao Bai's actions were very swift.

Once Xie Aoyu was buried, he felt very uncomfortable. Xie Aoyu needed to use qi to resist the pressure. At the same time, following the method of cultivating Earth Escape Technique, he used his spirit to feel the earth, becoming one with the earth.

Time went by like this minute by minute.

One day, two days, three days...

From the time he had starting cultivating Earth Escape Technique, Xie Aoyu spent most of his day buried in the dirt, using his spirit to communicate with the earth, using his body to sense it.

The Earth Core Grass' usefulness was steadily revealed.

Xie Aoyu felt bored until the fifth day, when he finally began to feel that the Earth Core Grass' bitterness that made him want to kill himself emit a hint of a sienna-colored halo that covered his entire body. As the Earth Core Grass halo formed, Xie Aoyu felt a curious connection form between his body and the earth.

In the beginning, the feeling was very weak.

As time went by, Xie Aoyu's mind and body connected more with the feeling.

Gradually, strange feelings that he had never had before began to come. Sincerity, universal love, and desolation. Every breath he took felt like it was ancient, as if it included the entire planet's strength, and entered his body. He felt incredibly powerful. [\[6\]](#)

Xie Aoyu was delighted. This was the what the Earth Escape Technique had described, the evidence he had connected with the earth.

He immediately remembered what the scroll had said about how to release his self, and the method to be compatible with the earth. Operate all of his qi while in contact with the earth, and exchange it, understand it, and then integrate it.

Since then, Xie Aoyu did not leave the earth.

He seemed to not know hunger.

He just lay there.

Until the ninth day.

It seemed as if Xie Aoyu had really become one with the earth, becoming a part of the small valley. His eyes emitted a soft light. When he intended it to move, his body's pale sienna-colored light rippled. The color's light was very close to the color of the ground. Next, his figure disappeared into thin air.

Then he appeared three meters away from a small stream.

“Haha, success!” Xie Aoyu finally couldn’t suppress his happiness anymore, bursting out laughing. He had made a step forward in the method of cultivating the Earth Escape Technique fighting skill.

His body went up two meters into the air, and when he landed, once his feet touched the ground, he immediately became like the earth. The earth was like his home. With one foot on the ground, the ground seemed to become like water, and he could become one within it.

His entire person went below the ground.

He wanted to test his ability to see what his strength was like now. To what extent could the Earth Escape Technique be used. In his mind, he could charge ahead underground like an arrow without any barriers.

Shua!

The feeling only lasted for a moment.

Very quickly, after Xie Aoyu had the feeling of power, he only had to come out of the ground. He looked back. He had traveled ten meters.

Although Xie Aoyu thought he had travelled further than that,

this distance was still pretty good. After all, what supported the Earth Escape Technique was qi. His strength right now was limited.

“Haha...”

Xie Aoyu laughed and entered the ground again.

When he appeared, he had moved to the left by ten meters.

Soon he was popping up all over the place within the small valley, doing it with ease. There were no obstacles. Even rocks underneath the ground could not stop his movements.

“Peng!”

In the midst of his happiness, Xie Aoyu tunneled and wound up crashing into water. He dragged his body out of the stream, self-ridiculing himself said: “The Earth Escape Technique cannot escape water, ah.”

[1] (TN: If I tried this, I would've hit missed the lock every single time. Unless it was as big as the box. Then maybe I'd hit it at least once)

[2] (TN: I think I would've died here. Yeah, I'd be a bad MC.)

[3] (TN: Any better names? 土遁术)

[4] (TN: I don't know how good of a translation this was. 进可攻, 隐藏身形, 暴起伤人)

[5] (TN: Name suggestions? 地心草)

[6] (TN: I'm gonna need some help translating what this means: 仿佛亘古便存在的气息如同大地所包容的那些力量统统的汇聚到了他的身上一般)

Chapter 32

Xie Aoyu changed his clothes, and then tested Earth Escape Technique again. It could be said that this fighting skill was near the peak, very magical, but at the same time it had weaknesses.

For example, if there was water underground, iron ores, or something similar, he couldn't go through them.

The Earth Escape Technique could only travel through dirt and rocks.

After testing it several times and confirming it, Xie Aoyu began to test Earth Escape Technique with Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop and Overlord Dragon Boxing, using the two types of fighting skills together.

All three fighting skills required qi to operate.

The Earth Escape Technique consumed the same qi. How could he take care of using two fighting skills when the Earth Escape technique was consuming qi. This was the problem. So Xie Aoyu spent the next few days in the small valley.

During these days, he used the two killer techniques together with Earth Escape Technique. The effects were obvious. Taking Earth Escape Technique into account, it wasn't surprising. The two killer techniques that were violently overbearing, after combining, their strength improved significantly.

After he finished practicing, Xie Aoyu left that small valley.

He figured he could continue to gain more experience.

Going to the left side of the mountain slope in order to identify the direction, his ears heard a beast's roar that was mixed with anxiety. It was an angry but unwilling cry.

“Why does this sound seem familiar.” Xie Aoyu said to himself.

He looked in the direction of where the sound came from.

He saw the fierce beauty running away. The beauty didn't have the previous elegant appearance before, her clothes were ripped in several locations, exposing crystal clear skin that had wounds in some places, while also bleeding, her hair in a disheveled mess while blocking attacks with her sword. [\[1\]](#)

Behind her was an Earth Storm Bear. [\[2\]](#)

This Earth Storm Bear was still young, its strength wasn't that great, but it was still about as strong as an intermediate Advanced-levelled master. It continuously beat its chest, letting out a bloodthirsty roar, closely chasing behind. [\[3\]](#)

“Hey, beauty, do you want help, ah.” Xie Aoyu stood on a high slope, yelled to her.

“Yes!”

Without a moment of hesitation, the beauty blurted out. But the second she spoke, she felt as if the sound seemed a little familiar, but it was such a frantic time, thus if asked if she needed help, it was not the time to take off the pants and fart. No matter how bothersome it was, didn't it seem for the beauty that it was a hero saving the damsel in distress? [\[4\]](#)

“It's you!” The beauty lifted her head up, her face changed.

Xie Aoyu waved his hand, and smilingly said: “Hello beauty. We must really be tied together by fate. How could we meet again so soon.” He purposely glanced at the Earth Storm Bear, “This spirit beast's strength is not bad, ah.”

“Filthy pervert, go away. Even if this beauty is going to die, I still won't need a filthy pervert to save me.” The beauty angrily ground her teeth and fiercely replied.

Sighing, Xie Aoyu helplessly said: “It seems as if I don't have a chance to be a hero saving a damsel in distress anymore. In order to not interrupt your time with the Earth Storm Bear, I can only take my leave here.” He turned his body to leave.

“Roar!”

The Earth Storm Bear let out an angry roar, chasing even closer.

Its roar let out its stinky breath. The beauty could smell it now, and was almost knocked out by it. Thinking about being eaten by the Earth Storm Bear, she was so frightened that she felt shivers.

“Hey, wait. You wait.” The beauty shouted out.

Taking a small step Xie Aoyu immediately turned around, said: “Beauty, do you have a request.”

The beauty looked at Xie Aoyu, feeling the urge to beat up his pig face, but the Earth Storm Bear was catching up from behind. She could only suppress her heart’s desire down, and said: “Hurry up and save me.”

“Is this the attitude of someone pleading for rescue?” Xie Aoyu frowned.

“What do you want?” The beauty thought of Xie Aoyu’s **, her face became red, “Big deal, this beauty will take responsibility of it. I’ll marry you, that should be enough.”

Xie Aoyu was speechless.

“Dong dong dong...”

The Earth Storm Bear charged forward heavily, the ground was

slammed by it creating tremors. Some rocks were even shattered. The trees around it were also knocked down by it.

Thus, making the beauty embarrassingly take back her words.

“Hurry up and do something, filthy pervert. This beauty swears, afterwards I’ll marry you and let you become this beauty’s harem’s prince. This is enough right.” The beauty cried out.

Xie Aoyu almost sat his butt down on the ground.

This beauty was a bit too fierce wasn’t she, she actually wanted to create a harem.

He shook his head. He had witnessed the beauty’s ferocity. Striking the ground forcefully, he directly charged down the small mountain slope towards the wild Earth Storm Bear and hit it once.

“Roar!”

The Earth Storm Bear angrily roared, viciously smashing its way towards him.

It was a power-type spirit beast. It definitely used some earth-type magic, but its greatest strength was its power. Seeing that there was someone attacking it, it began to charge towards its attacker.

“Peng!”

The two collided in the air. Xie Aoyu flipped backwards in the middle of the air.

The Earth Storm Bear was also sent flying back, crashing through seven or eight large trees. Once its butt hit the ground, it became even more bloodthirsty. Wildly beating its chest, it continuously roared, then got up, and once again charged forward for the kill.

“Good, the dog can face the storm bear, how wonderful!” The beauty yelled out.

Xie Aoyu turned his head and glared at her.

“Slip of the tongue, slip of the tongue. It’s a hero in battle with a storm bear.” The beauty laughed.

Against the explosively angry Earth Storm Bear, Xie Aoyu also needed to use a powerful skill... Overlord Dragon Boxing!

A punch blasted forward.

An enormous fist of light flew out. Inside it there seemed to grow a T-rex that was going to break out. Although it wasn’t actually real, it still had the atmosphere of a mad tyrant.

“Boom!”

When it stood up, the Earth Storm Bear was at least two meters tall, and it had suddenly been hit by a punch and sent flying. It pitifully cried out. On its chest appeared a bloody fist mark. Its giant body suddenly crashed into the ground. It was no longer breathing.

The time it took to kill the Earth Storm Bear made the fierce beauty gasp.

She never imagined that the man who she had tried to chase and kill, but had escaped, would be so strong.

“It’s over.” Xie Aoyu dusted off his hands, “I should leave now.”

“You can’t!” The beauty shouted out.

Xie Aoyu said: “Why can’t I?”

“Because you can’t. You’ve polluted this beauty’s eyes which are like pure white flowers. Even if you saved my life, you can’t just leave like this.” The beauty said.

Xie Aoyu said: “Your eyes are black. How about that.”

“Anyways I don’t care. You can’t go.” The beauty stretched out her arms, blocking Xie Aoyu’s path.

“What are you trying to do?” Xie Aoyu crossed his arms. His strength was higher than this beauty’s and he also had Medical Spirit Finger. He wasn’t afraid of her tricks.

“To be honest, my request isn’t difficult.” The beauty gently stroked the sword in her hand, “It will be enough as long as you help me complete this task.”

“What if I don’t agree?” Xie Aoyu said.

Shua!

The beauty didn’t say anything else and aimed at the place between Xie Aoyu’s legs and slashed down.

Castration!

Xie Aoyu dodged and backed up.

“It would be better for you if you agree.” The beauty laughed.

Little girl, think you’re so strong, I’ll show you something. Xie Aoyu pretended to sneer and said: “Is that so? Little girl, it seems you’ve forgotten a point. It’s only us two here. You threatening me will have very serious consequences. For example, before I only got a glance, but now there’s an opportunity to study carefully.”

He purposely made a nasty light come out of his eyes to stare at the beauty's delicate rear.

“Ah!”

The beauty suddenly realized, her pretty face changed slightly. She screamed once and then began backing away, her hands covering her chest. She fearfully looked at Xie Aoyu, “You, you...”

Her pretty eyes looked sorrowful, and tears began to form.

Her appearance looked as if Xie Aoyu pushed her a hundred times.

Originally Xie Aoyu only wanted to scare her a little, but seeing this, a sudden sense of powerlessness swept over him. He lifted his hands, “Stop! Stop crying. Speak, what's the matter.”

“Shishi, I knew you were just trying to scare me.” That knowledgeable beauty immediately changed her expression from grief to joy. There were no traces of her ever crying.

He had fallen for it!

Xie Aoyu told himself, this little girl is so cunning, ah.

“Hey, you're a man right. You even said you were a hero. Could it be just from this beauty teasing you a little, you'd get angry. Your

tolerance as a hero is a little too small isn't it. Ai, forget it. This beauty won't ask such a hero like you for help. Who let your tolerance be smaller than a point of a needle." The beauty sighed.

This woman was really... a devil.

After being told off like that, if he didn't help her, then he didn't have a tolerance, and wasn't like a man. But if he did help her, then he'd even have to ask her. Where under heaven was there such a logic. To have to ask in order to help someone else.

Seeing Xie Aoyu grinding his teeth, the beauty giggled and said: "This beauty knows that you're a big hero. You don't have much experience with this beauty. You'll definitely help this beauty."

"I have a strong suspicion that you're a devil." Xie Aoyu said.

"Have you ever seen such a pretty, such a cute, such a pure devil? The beauty retorted.

Xie Aoyu was speechless. This woman was so... narcissistic.

He didn't want to start a back-and-forth with this girl. Xie Aoyu said: "Alright, I'll help you, but it has to be something I can do. And after everything's over, you and I will have nothing to do with each other."

"No way, you're a great hero. How could you toss aside such a beautiful flower like me, a masterpiece, into this place full of cruel

spirit beasts without a care? How could you be so cruel?”

“Then I’ll send you back to your family!”

“Only that much? Having a beautiful young woman accompanying you on an adventure, how romantic is that. If you’re a hero, then can’t you show it a little?” [\[5\]](#)

“You don’t think that with a beauty by your side, it’ll be very exciting?”

“Don’t you think you’re lucky?”

“Don’t you feel like you...”

“STOP!”

Xie Aoyu had really been defeated. He had met thick-skinned people before, but never someone this shameless, and it was even a woman, and it was even a sweet-looking beauty. But she was a demon.

Without giving the beauty more time to talk, Xie Aoyu said: “Speak, what am I helping you with.”

“It’s nothing much. Just help me get some Amethyst Spirit Water.” The beauty said.

[1] (TN: AYO! She's back!)

[2] (TN: 大地暴熊. Suggestions? I bet she tried the same crap she tried on Xie Aoyu on this poor bear, but only managed to piss it off. Smh)

[3] (TN: Dang. Even going after the treasures of young ones. She's ruthless.)

[4] (TN: Err... Chinese idiom that means: Don't over complicate things. No need to take off your pants to fart. Just fart in your pants. No problem. Unless it's a shirt...)

[5] (ED: She's getting on my nerves)

Chapter 33

Amethyst Spirit Water?

Xie Aoyu's heart began to beat wildly. He had seen the Amethyst Spirit Water in many books. Just as there were mysterious fires, there were also divergent waters. [\[1\]](#)

And the Amethyst Spirit Water was one of the rarest divergent waters.

And it was incredibly powerful, not even slightly inferior compared to the enormous strength of the mysterious fires. The scariest part though was that after using the Amethyst Spirit Water to cultivate a water attribute fighting skill, it could be integrated into it, making the water-attribute fighting skill's power increase three times, even more than five times. It could be said to be extremely terrifying.

Scanning this beauty, Xie Aoyu saw this beauty had the water attribute, and didn't have any other attributes. It was solely that attribute, and was entirely possible to obtain the Amethyst Spirit Water.

"You're not afraid that I'll take your Amethyst Spirit Water?" Xie Aoyu said.

"You don't even have the water attribute. You have the earth, wood, and thunder attributes." The beauty's eyes let off a soft gleam.

Seeing the change in the beauty's eyes, Xie Aoyu said: "You have Truth Vision?" [\[2\]](#)

"That's right." The beauty raised her head and proudly said, and

then in a curious tone asked, “I’m just wondering, but how could a person like me, Qin Yueyi, whose recognized to be as beautiful as a flower, super smart, the only one in heaven, without a match on earth, but only has one attribute. How could you have three attributes. God must really be blind.” [\[3\]](#)

This little girl is so narcissistic, Xie Aoyu told himself.

“Let’s go then and go find the Amethyst Spirit Water.” Xie Aoyu said.

Truth be told, he couldn’t be said to have zero interest in the Amethyst Spirit Water. Even though he didn’t have a fire attribute, he had still acquired Shadow Demon Spirit Fire and Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame, which he originally couldn’t have gotten. In the end, he had still gotten them. Then the two mysterious fire prototypes had combined and become the red lightning. Who could say for certain that he couldn’t obtain the Amethyst Spirit Water?

After all, the tri-colored ball was just too mysterious, too magical, and could not be constrained by common sense.

“Hey, what’s your name, ah?”

“This big brother’s family name is Qing.” [\[4\]](#)

“Big brother Qing?”

“That’s right.”

“Ah, you dare to think that this beauty is cheap. Don’t run!” [\[5\]](#)

The two people, one in front, one in back, in the blink of an eye disappeared from the corpse of the Earth Storm Bear, but they didn’t notice that despite their speed, Xiao Bai was casually

strolling, and with every step, he would disappear from his original spot and reappear right behind them, just like Xie Aoyu's Earth Escape Technique, it was unbelievably miraculous. [\[6\]](#)

They went past two mountains.

In front of them was a jungle. Xie Ao Yu listened carefully, but didn't hear any water noises, "Little girl, where in the world exactly is the Amethyst Spirit Water you spoke of?"

"It's just ahead, we're almost there." Qin Yueyi excitedly pointed towards the back of the jungle, "Are you looking? After passing that mountain, we should be there."

Xie Aoyu lifted his head to look. It was a large mountain, in order to pass it would require at least two or three hours of effort. But in his heart he had a bit of expectations. Who knows if the tri-colored ball can bring forth another miracle.

He was very expectant.

This tri-colored ball was the thing that he wanted to study the most right now, but among the many books he had read, there was nothing regarding this sort of thing.

While he was thinking, Xie Aoyu felt something pull at his pant leg. He looked down to see Xiao Bai pointing left. Xie Aoyu turned to look. Ahead was a small forest, and from it came the sounds of a conversation.

He hadn't even heard what they were saying, when a silhouette flashed.

There was a gleaming bald head that appeared in the horizon. It was the bald man Te La.

"Don't run boy!" Te La looked up and saw Xie Aoyu, and immediately began shouting. Currently there were sixty, seventy people behind him. Among them were seven or eight people who

had been seeking the treasure.

Whoops!

Xie Aoyu became a little scared.

He knew that Te La was lower Spirit-levelled. Though the two hadn't really exchanged blows, but during their exchange, his Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop had no effect on Te La, which showed how strong Te La was.

And now he had Qin Yueyi beside him.

Trying to run would be very difficult.

“Sou!”

Afraid the Xie Aoyu would run, Te La directly leapt across past Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi, blocking their path. And the others quickly surrounded them, forming a large circle, and then began closing in.

“What are you doing, what are you group of old men doing.” Qin Yueyi this fierce beauty, became furious, her two hands on her waist, pointed at Te La's head, “Without looking at your head's light, I can tell you, you'd best split, or else, this beauty will unscrew your head off to use as a light.”

“Heng heng...”

Te La angrily grunted, his eyes flashed a cold light, watching Qin Yueyi intently, “Little girl, just wait for this old man. After taking care of that boy, this old man will slowly ravage you.”

Xie Aoyu's mind moved quickly. His hand moved, grabbing a small bottle, “Te La, do you know what this is?” He raised the bottle in his hand high into the air, “This is called Cynomorium solution. It's designed to deal with your kind of old perverts.”

“Never heard of it.” Te La sneered.

“Then I'll tell you its use.” Xie Ao Yu laughed, “This thing, as long as even a drop splashes onto your skin, will immediately make

your thing retreat, and in the end it'll be even smaller than a baby's pinky." He crookedly smiled as he glanced over Te La and the others' nether regions. [\[7\]](#)

Although Te La's hate was great, he couldn't help but back off a step.

Everyone else felt even more chills across their body.

Only Qin Yueyi's eyes were rolling, strongly suppressing a smile. This was the same trick that she had used on Xie Aoyu, and was the trick that she discovered worked on men 100% of the time.

Men could never get rid of this fear.

Thus, even if they knew with 99% certainty that it was fake, they still didn't dare to try.

"Did you know? This came from this beauty's trusted friend's evil teacher. When asked where it came from, the evil teacher said this, it was his most evil creation out of 10873 kinds of deadly poisons." Qin Yueyi wagged her head while looking pleased with herself, "It can be described as a product that can cease a household's future."

"Evil teacher Ba Tulu!" Some people shouted. [\[8\]](#)

Other than Te La who could somewhat keep a calm appearance, the rest of the people all backed off two steps.

Who didn't know the fearfulness of evil teacher Ba Tulu. Amongst a generation of poison grandmasters of surpassing level, there were rumors of this evil teacher Ba Tulu's individual combat strength was poor, his strength was somewhere between advanced level and spirit level, but his body was covered in deadly poison, and even an emperor level master who saw him, would avoid him from far away.

“Evil teacher Ba Tulu isn’t just someone that anyone can meet. If you could indeed get this poison from that person, then you should definitely not be a common type of person right?” Te La squinted as he said.

“Of course, this beauty’s surname is Qin!” Qin Yueyi proudly said.

“Qin? Tian Luo Empire’s three big clans’ Qin family?” Te La said.

Qin Yueyi crossed her arms across her chest, “You’re actually a little knowledgeable.”

Langya City was also a territory of Tian Luo Empire, as a person from the Xie family in Langya City, Xie Ao Yu naturally also knew about the Qin family. That was Tian Luo Empire’s number one strongest clan. Their clan strength was incomparably far above a small family like the Xie family. He suspiciously glanced at Qin Yueyi.

She should be bluffing.

“Qin family person, you’re a Qin family person.” Te La muttered to himself, suddenly, he took a step forward, his cane knife in hand, and brandished his weapon and slashed.

Against such an unexpected attack, it made the person stop thinking.

Xie Aoyu acted on reflex and threw out the small bottle in his hand.

The sword’s light passed by, the small bottle broke. Te La began to retreat a step, grabbing a person to his side, pushing him forward. The liquid in the bottle splashed on that person’s body.

“Ah!!!” [\[9\]](#)

That person let out a shrill scream.

Te La heavily spoke: “Check if there was any change.”

That person quickly loosened his belt, looked down to check, “No problem, no problem, no problem...” [\[10\]](#)

At this time Xie Aoyu had already pulled out another bottle. Seeing that, he became shocked. He hadn’t imagined that such a rough-looking guy like Te La would actually be so cunning. He had actually wanted to test if it was actually cynomorium liquid.

“Qin family person? Heng, if you’re a Qin family person, then why wouldn’t you have a master with you.” Te La’s face was grinning from ear to ear.

“Go!” Xie Aoyu grabbed Qin Yueyi’s arm, and tossed her violently.

Qin Yueyi travelled through the sky as if she were flying. In an instant she had been thrown fifty or sixty meters. It should be known that Xie Aoyu’s strength had completely changed and advanced because of the tri-colored ball.

This moment made Qin Yueyi scared for a moment. Fortunately, she reacted quickly. Taking advantage of the jump, she then charged another dozen or so meters, getting past the encirclement, reaching the top of a big tree in the jungle.

“Kill!”

Te La roared. Twenty or so of his underlings ran after Qin Yueyi, the rest closed the encirclement further. Te La brandished his sword and charged forward for the kill.

Seeing the gleam of the cane knife, Xie Aoyu faced Te La and displayed a smile full of teeth. The Earth Escape Technique should play its role here.

[\[1\]](#) (TN: Since 异火 is translated as divergent flame, I translated 异水 as divergent water.)

[2] (TN: Err. 真实之眼? Not gonna lie, I feel like this sounds even lamer than my usual naming sense.)

[3] (TN: Name suggestions? 秦月依)

(ED: How about Sun Rei? For SUpEr Narcissistic Retarded Exasperating Infuriating)

[4] (TN: Yes. MC is lying.)

[5] (TN: I think she knows he's lying and trying to say she ain't dumb?)

[6] [ED2: Man that little puffball's good. Secret MC anyone?]

[7] (TN: Our MC learns quickly. And cynomorium is apparently used for impotence in men and libido for women. O.o)

[8] (TN: 巴图鲁? Ba Tu Lu? Cthulhu? Not quite.)

[9] (TN: A moment of silence for this poor guy.)

[10] (TN: Please feel free to take back your moment of silence.)

Chapter 34

As far as Xie Aoyu was concerned, the Earth Escape Technique was the unsurpassed technique for sneak attacking.

Although his strength was too weak, resulting in him only being able to use the Earth Escape Technique for ten meters at a time, but for people who had no idea about the Earth Escape Technique, it was unblockable.

Seeing Te La angrily charging towards him, Xie Aoyu only grinned widely.

Waiting until the cane knife slashed down with the power of a thunderbolt, the killing intent slashing down in seething rage. When it seemed like he was about to be split into two, Xie Aoyu lightly dodged into the ground.

His figure disappeared.

“Peng!”

Te La only slashed through air, and he nearly kept carrying forward due to the powerful strike. In his moment of confusion, danger suddenly appeared.

“Watch out!”

“Watch out behind you!”

The surround people could see it clearly. Xie Aoyu appeared like a ghost behind Te La, making them feel like they had seen a ghost.

Even Qin Yueyi who was watching the fight in the large tree nearly shouted out.

She rubbed her eyes and looked carefully.

As Xie Aoyu appeared behind Te La’s back, the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword flashed the crimson electric light. He used his sure-kill fighting skill... Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop!

Against this kind of powerful enemy, one definitely could not try playing one trick at a time.

When he made his move, it was immediately going for the kill.

He could only try to kill as fast as possible.

With the evil wind behind him and his underlings shouting, the veteran Te La didn’t even think. He continued his slash forward, while at the same time moving with the slash.

“Stab it!”

A breeze of cold air swept over Te La's back. His clothes became ripped. Although the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword hadn't touched his skin, but the sword qi had cut through his skin, making a long trail of blood flow down.

Te La stood firmly, his forehead drenched in a cold sweat.

“Watch out!”

“Left side. Chief, quickly get out of the way.”

But before Te La could catch his breath, he heard his underlings shout out again. His head turned quickly, and he spotted on his left Xie Aoyu popping out of the ground out of the corner of his eye.

The shock that reached the bottom of his heart stimulated his hatred despite Xie Aoyu's sword coming down. Using a horizontal sweep of his sword, he hatefully slashed at Xie Aoyu's waist.

Seeing this, Xie Aoyu frowned. Xie Aoyu originally wanted to use the Earth Escape Technique to kill Te La, if he killed Te La right now, he would also be killed by Te La.

Xie Aoyu's brain thought of his father who had been in a coma for the past three years, helplessly stepped back.

“Come, come.” Te La was like a wolf, viciously moving forward to attack, “This old man has been at death's door six or seven times. Who'd be scared of risking his life against you.”

He viciously slashed down quickly.

The flash of the sword was like light reflected on snowflakes.

Xie Aoyu could only use his sword to block. “Clang clang clang clang.” Suddenly there were dozens of knives, thus displaying the difference in strengths between the two.

Lower Spirit-level Te La was stronger than Xie Aoyu by more than just a little bit. The qi’s shock made Xie Aoyu’s arms go numb. After blocking the next chop, he dodged away, and disappeared again.

This time, Te La wasn’t frantic at all.

He immediately put up his guard.

“Behind you!”

With the underlings paying attention on the side, Te La’s reactions were incredibly fast, his body turned while slashing horizontally. Behind his knife was an enormous strength.

Overlord Dragon Boxing!

Xie Aoyu had also become angry. If it wasn’t for Te La’s underlings, earlier on the first blow he would have at least heavily

wounded Te La, and with the second blow would have ended him.

But right now it couldn't happen.

His fist struck heavily. This was a generation's Fighting Skill Grandmaster Ye Chao Feng thousand years out of millions of fighting skills best fighting skill. It was a super fighting skill.

“Clang!”

Xie Aoyu's fist hit Te La's cane knife.

The two people simultaneously were shocked. Xie Aoyu was sent back four or five steps. Te La also had to go back three or four steps before he could balance himself. Xie Aoyu retreated into the ground, disappearing again.

This time, he didn't attack Te La, but instead began killing Te La's underlings.

“Pu pu”

One slash, two lives.

After beheading these two he felt some joy, then, like a tiger in a sheep herd, he began killing others. With his strength, chasing and killing these people happened without any suspense.

He used his sword and fists to murder.

Te La's eyes became red. He originally only had two hundred or so people, and before when they had gotten the map, a hundred or so had died, leaving only a hundred left. However, if they were massacred, how could he continue on.

Howling, he charged to kill.

Xie Aoyu didn't want to face him, using one Earth Escape Technique, he ran away ten meters, killed three more people, like cutting a melon or chopping vegetables. In an instant, he had killed over ten people.

The furious Te La could see that he couldn't catch up. He turned his head and saw that on the big tree was the pest Qin Yueyi. He immediately shouted: "This old man will now chop up that woman."

Shouting this, he figured he was poking at Xie Aoyu's weakpoint.

Out of desperation he would stop killing other people.

"Hey, big baldy, do you want face. An old man like you is actually trying to make a move against a beauty like me..." Qin Yueyi scolded. She was already having trouble dealing with those people.

Inside she was secretly angry. It should be known that was all

practiced. [\[1\]](#)

Originally, her talent was very amazing, but she kept being lazy, thus her strength was very low.

Xie Aoyu used Earth Escape Technique, appearing behind Te La, the Lighting Spirit Holy Sword aiming for the head viciously swiped down. This time the sword's speed was very fast.

“Behind you!”

Once again Te La's underling reminded him.

Te La had already prepared long ago. He turned his body, moved diagonally over one meter, his cane knife chopping towards Xie Aoyu's neck.

Xie Aoyu could only sigh. This Earth Escape Technique was very strong. Against stronger opponents it wasn't that there was no way, but if there was someone on the side helping, then there was no way to display its advantages.

Because his qi was too low, he had not yet reached the level where he could instantly come out of the ground.

Thus during this exchange, Xie Aoyu couldn't help but bitterly smile.

The Earth Escape Technique could not be used all the time. It required qi, and Xie Aoyu now discovered, if this continued, even though Earth Escape Technique made him an upper hand, but it consumed an enormous amount of qi. The consequences would be disastrous.

He used his full strength to block Te La, then turning his body, facing Qin Yueyi who was in the big tree, “Let’s go!”

Qin Yueyi and him had only met by coincidence, but these two had extremely good understanding. He slashed out with his sword. Qin Yueyi leapt into the air, jumping off into the distance.

The large tree was cut in half by Xie Aoyu.

The people climbing on the tree began shouting. Using their confusion, Xie Aoyu charged over there, joining up with Qin Yueyi. The two began running.

“Chase them!”

How could Te La let go of this opportunity. Without even talking about anything else, with just Xie Aoyu’s ability to disappear, he couldn’t give up. He had to obtain it.

Carrying the cane knife, he chased from behind.

The dozens of people followed behind him.

Using their full strength to chase.

Xie Aoyu's running speed was very fast, but Qin Yueyi's strength was limited, and she didn't have the wind-attribute. In terms of speed, she didn't have any advantages and was being left behind.

"I'll carry you!" Xie Aoyu helplessly grabbed Qin Yueyi and placed her on his back.

When carrying a person while running, naturally the speed will decrease.

The distance between the two sides began to shrink.

"Brothers, lend me your strength!" Te La leapt through the air.

Six of the people following Te La had originally gone treasure hunting, lower advanced level and upper intermediate level practitioners, pulled out their weapons, forming a platform of weapons, allowing Te La to step on it. They pushed up together with strength.

"Sou!"

There was the help of six practitioners, along with Te La's strength.

Thus, Te La exploded forward like a cannonball, flying straight forward at least thirty meters, placing him above Xie Aoyu. He sliced down with his knife while in midair.

Qin Yueyi who was being carried by Xie Aoyu looked back, her face suddenly became pale. She fearfully cried out: “Save me!”

Hearing the sound was so shrill, sharp, and harsh, shocked Te La who was still high in the air, causing him to almost fall down.

“Buzz...”

Xie Aoyu’s ears immediately became deaf.

For a moment, he couldn’t hear anything.

“Sou!”

Xie Aoyu didn’t stop, using his strength to explode forward, moving diagonally to the left, dodging Te La’s attack. At the same time, made a half turn in the air, reaching out his hand to attack.

Once again it was Overlord Dragon Boxing.

Te La used his full strength and slashed horizontally, despite Xie Aoyu using his full strength to block, he was still hit by the shock and blood spurted out of his mouth. His person was sent flying over thirty meters. His body was covered in pain.

On the other hand, Qin Yueyi had been blocked by his body and received no damage.

“You’re very suitable for learning a sound-based fighting skill.” Xie Aoyu landed on the ground, without forgetting to say something.

“This beauty has also found that out.” Qin Yueyi disappointedly looked to the left and right, “What a pity, ah. There are no spirit beasts here; otherwise, coupled with the attractiveness of this beauty, we could attract a lot of spirit beasts to assist in the fighting.”

“So narcissistic... Spirit beast?” Xie Aoyu’s heart suddenly moved as he thought of a plan, “Xiao Bai!”

“Yiya!” [\[2\]](#)

The familiar sound came out. A white silhouette flashed by, appearing by Xie Aoyu’s left shoulder.

[\[1\]](#) (TN: 恼 can be translated as angry or worried apparently, but angry is the more prevalent way of using it. So I dunno.)

[\[2\]](#) (TN: Time for the MC to strut his stuff.)

Chapter 35

“Ah!”

Xiao Bai's sudden appearance gave Qin Yueyi a fright.

Previously Xie Aoyu hadn't mentioned to her about Xiao Bai's presence. In addition, Xiao Bai had been in a place where if he just crouched down a little in the grass, then no one could see him. Thus, even Qin Yueyi didn't notice it.

“White Spirit Beast?” Qin Yueyi said in surprise.

Xiao Bai's cute appearance made Qin Yueyi immediately throw her hands up in surrender, her eyes exposed a red passion. She stretched out her hands and lifted up Xiao Bai.

“Where are there spirit beasts?” Xie Aoyu asked.

When searching for spirit beasts, naturally it would be easiest to use a spirit beast.

Spirit beasts were all very alert, especially low-level spirit beasts because they were at the bottom of the food chain. Thus, in order to survive, they were exceptionally vigilant.

Once Xiao Bai heard, it pointed to the left at about a hundred or so meters towards a cave, “Yiya yiya.”

Xie Aoyu then knew, that cave should have a spirit beast in it.

He rushed in towards that direction at full speed.

He was still short about thirty meters from the cave entrance when Te La, who had been chasing them in a straight line, almost caught up. Their distance was becoming narrower.

“Sou!”

Xie Aoyu catapulted high into the air.

When Te La saw this, naturally he would not let go of this opportunity. When a person was in midair, unless they could fly freely in the air, then it would be their most vulnerable moment. Regardless of dodging, even the ability to summon strength was limited.

At the same time, he commanded the people behind him to once again use their qi.

Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop!

The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword in Xie Aoyu's hands exploded out a crimson electric light. Aimed at the cave, it viciously slashed towards it.

This fighting skill's power was amazing, in addition to having Lightning Spirit Holy Sword as its carrier, and with Xie Aoyu's full strength casting it, the power behind it was frightening to think about.

A crimson sword light roared out, charging into the cave.

“Roar!”

The spirit beast in the cave couldn't take any more and let out an angry roar, and charged straight out. A gust of wind swept across, directly destroying Xie Aoyu's Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop.

Xie Aoyu took in a big breath of air. This was definitely an extremely terrifying spirit beast.

Now he understood why there were no spirit beasts in the vicinity. It was because this area was this tyrannical spirit beast's territory. The other spirit beasts all didn't even dare step in this area.

The idea of a spirit beast that owned a territory was very scary.

The moment Xie Aoyu launched his attack, he then immediately changed his direction in the middle of the air, heading towards the southeast to land. In the end, the people who had been chasing unleashed various kinds of fighting skills of varying strengths that they knew against that terrifying spirit beast.

With so many practitioners simultaneously attacking, the power was terrifying, even scarier than Xie Aoyu's attack. With the power like easily breaking a dead branch from a tree, it could obliterate everything in its path.

“Roar!!!”

The spirit beast was furious. From its body exploded an enormous amount of strength.

A tornado surged out of its body, sweeping everything in the area, especially the attacks, creating an explosion sound.

It then glided forwards towards Te La and the others.

Seeing this spirit beast with a dragon's head, a lion's mane, a horse's body, a fish's scales, a dragon's wings, and a snake's tail, it seemed like a spirit beast that was an extremely strong spirit beast that was second to none.

“Black Scaled Wyvern!” [\[1\]](#)

Te La saw this spirit beast, and uttered a cry of horror.

This scared the crap out of Xie Aoyu too.

The Black Scaled Wyvern was at least equivalent to an upper Spirit-levelled master. Its tyrannical strength was evil. Its body

defense was invincible, and its wind magic was amazing.

It was an absolute existence.

“Retreat!”

Te La hoarsely cried out.

Although he was also Spirit level, the difference between Te La and the Black Scaled Wyvern was extremely large, not just simply within one level’s difference.

“Roar!”

How could the furious Black Scaled Wyvern just let these people run. It beat its wings and started to chase them. It opened its mouth and spat out enough wind blades to fill the sky.

This was one of wind magic’s amazing powers... Wind Blade Dance! [\[2\]](#)

Each of the wind blades was enough to kill a person, and there were at least a few hundred wind blades. There was nowhere to hide. They could only use their full strength to block, forcing their speed to decrease, and then the Black Scaled Wyvern rushed down and grabbed and bit them.

For a period of time, blood flew out and screams continued

unceasingly.

Xie Aoyu looked at the Black Scaled Wyvern's figure, and sighed in his heart. He had seen many descriptions of the Black Scaled Wyvern in many books.

This type of spirit beasts greatest feature was... its bloodlust and brutality.

When there were humans intruding on the spirit beast's territory, it wouldn't hesitate carry out a massacre. It definitely wouldn't leave any survivors, but when he had entered its area, it had gone to fight with Te La and the others. The Black Scaled Wyvern indeed hadn't come out to attack, instead it had been drawn out by his hand.

Something didn't seem quite right.

Xie Aoyu turned his head to look at the cave, once again seeing the gleeful slaughtering, brutish, Black Scaled Wyvern. An idea formed in his mind.

"You wait here. Don't recklessly go anywhere." Xie Aoyu stared at Qin Yueyi. He then ran towards the cave.

Once he had entered the cave, a waft of odor blew into his face.

Enduring the foul odor, Xie Aoyu slipped inside.

The inside of the cave was a little damp, and was filled with the strong odor. At the end of the cave was a bed made out of leaves and weeds and other things. Although it was messy, on top of it was a spirit beast egg.

Surrounding the spirit egg were even some traces of bloodstains.

It was obvious that the Black Scaled Wyvern had just laid this spirit egg within the last past hour. That was Xie Aoyu's judgement. Otherwise, the aggressive Black Scaled Wyvern, let alone allowing people to come to its cave, even if people had tread on its territory, then it wouldn't have hesitated to go out and attack.

Aggressiveness was one of the Black Scaled Wyverns features.

It just so happened that this Black Scaled Wyvern had to be lured out by him. It was simply incredible. Where was there such a docile Black Scaled Wyvern?

The Black Scaled Wyvern egg was very large. It was at least half a meter tall. Its body emitted a soft blue halo of light.

"If the Black Scaled Wyvern lost its egg it would probably be very angry. Te La's people will have a very good time." Xie Aoyu chuckled, walking onto the grass bed.

Placing the spirit beast egg inside his space ring, Xie Aoyu quickly

left the cave.

“Let’s move quickly!”

Xie Aoyu once again placed Qin Yueyi on his back, finding a direction, and bolted that way. [\[3\]](#)

There were no pursuers, allowing him to focus his qi onto his legs, making his speed crazy fast. Only after running for at least seven or eight hundred meters did he hear the Black Scaled Wyvern’s endlessly angry roar resounding the air. Even from this distance, it could be seen that the surrounding area’s plants and trees rocked by the violent shaking.

“It finally found out.” Xie Aoyu laughed.

“What did it discover? What did you do just now when you ran into the cave?” Qin Yueyi jumped off his back.

Xie Aoyu acted imperially, and laughed: “I didn’t do much. I only grabbed a spirit egg.”

“Spirit beast egg?” Qin Yueyi’s pretty face lit up, “I understand. You discovered the Black Scaled Wyvern didn’t actively attack, so you assume it was laying its egg, right?”

Xie Aoyu smiled as he nodded his head.

This caused Qin Yueyi to closely size up Xie Aoyu, and then narcissistically said: “I originally thought this beauty was the smartest and wisest. I didn’t imagine you could do it too, ah. I reluctantly admit that your wisdom and intelligence can match with this beauty’s...but unlike this beauty’s purity or Xiao Bai’s image as a flower, you’re too bad. A bad boy, a bad boy.” [\[4\]](#)

[\[1\]](#) (TN: 墨鳞翼龙兽? Name suggestions?)

[\[2\]](#) (TN: 风刃狂舞? Y’all know the drill)

[\[3\]](#) (ED: How convenient.. Another cave, another treasure, snuck in, snuck out <roll my eyes>)

[\[4\]](#) (TN: I didn’t quite understand this last part. 蔫儿坏蔫儿坏的)

Chapter 36

Moonlight shone on water quietly in the small valley. Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi were sitting in front of a fire, and two fire rabbits were being grilled over that fire.

“Old Xie, is it ready yet? I’m going to starve to death.” Qin Yueyi helplessly looked at the juicy, good-smelling fire rabbit and nearly started to drool

“Almost. Just a little longer.” Xie Aoyu laughed.

This Old Xie title was something Qin Yueyi came up with. Based on her words, anyone older than her was older by a generation, and thus he became Old Xie.

The fire rabbit had already become a golden color, drops of oil slid down and dropped to the ground. It looked exceptionally appetising, and added with the meat’s smell, it made Qin Yueyi cry out.

“Gudong!”

Probably due to being too greedy, Qin Yueyi swallowed her saliva. In this quiet place, the sound was extremely loud. Seeing Xie Aoyu smile, she quickly said: “Don’t smile. This beauty after so many days of wandering alone, searching for the Amethyst Spirit Water, didn’t eat a single good thing.

After bring up this subject, Xie Aoyu thought to when Te La discovered the holes in their story.

“I also thought it was weird. Why would you be here alone?” Xie Aoyu asked.

Qin Yueyi’s mouth suddenly pouted and unhappily said: “If it wasn’t for my second uncle, hng. He said that I definitely wouldn’t be able to find the Amethyst Spirit Water by myself, so I secretly ran out. I must personally obtain the Amethyst Spirit Water. I’ll let him know, this beauty isn’t like those big-breasted empty headed people. [\[1\]](#)

Glancing at Qin Yueyi’s chest, Xie Aoyu seriously nodded his head: “Indeed you aren’t. It was small to begin with.”

“What’d you say!”

Qin Yueyi immediately got ready to fight.

“Don’t touch me, ah; otherwise this fire rabbit will get burnt.” Xie Aoyu warned her.

Her hungry stomach’s constant growling forced Qin Yueyi to bitterly stop. She bared her teeth, revealing two cute canine teeth, “Seeing as you’re cooking food for me to eat, I’ll let you live this time.”

Her image was extremely cute.

Qin Yueyi had grown as a sweet beauty, and with these little canine teeth, two shallow dimples, it was hard to say which one made the heart move, but if anyone was confounded by her looks, then they were in for tragedy.

Underneath her cute appearance hid a devil's heart.

Xie Aoyu had long since experienced it, "You ran away from home? You weren't afraid that your parents would be worried? And then, even if you did run out, you should have had something prepared right?"

"Hehe, I was scared of being discovered, so I ended up forgetting to grab it." Qin Yueyi let out a rare trace of embarrassment.

"That doesn't seem to match your demonic nature. Next time even if you forget yourself, you never forget to bring harm to others to bring benefit to yourself ah. That's your demonic nature's treasure." Xie Aoyu smiled as he said.

Qin Yueyi not only did not get angry, but happily said: "Of course. This is the one and only time. Next time it won't happen." She said in high spirits, "You don't even know, I have many hidden things. I can casually pick out a hundred things that could have taken care of Te La."

Casually had a hundred things?

Xie Aoyu said without laughing: “If all of these are as pure as a white flower, then I really have to wonder, what can be called pure.” He saw that the fire rabbits were almost done, sprinkled some spices on it. The meat’s aroma suddenly became even stronger. He tore off a rabbit leg and gave it to Qin Yueyi. For the rest of the portion, before he could do anything with it, Xiao Bai pounced through and grabbed it.

Qin Yueyi took a bite, her face full of grease shouted out: “Delicious, delicious, it’s too delicious.” Then she began to eat it ravenously like a wolf or tiger. In the blink of an eye, the rabbit leg had gone down her stomach.

Without waiting for Xie Aoyu to grab the other fire rabbit, she grabbed it.

While Xie Aoyu was eating his rabbit leg, he watched Qin Yueyi split the fire rabbit into two. One portion was given to Xiao Bai while she kept the other half, “Eat.”

“Yiya!”

Xiao Bai also ate very happily, eating in big bites.

The two fire rabbits didn’t last very long before being entirely consumed.

Xie Aoyu still hadn’t finished his rabbit leg.

“No way, Xiao Bai, with such a small stomach, you finished the entire leg.” Qin Yueyi picked up Xiao Bai, looked him over, trying to find where Xiao Bai had hidden the fire rabbit.

“Hic!”

Xiao Bai burped, its two eyes squinted, giving off the impression of being very full.

“I haven’t even become, ah.” Qin Yueyi placed a hand over her stomach.

“No way?” Xie Aoyu looked at her.

“Don’t you know that this beauty is known as the Great Glutton King.” Qin Yueyi searched everywhere, now looking out into the dark. Where could she find a spirit beast, “Oh yeah, don’t you have a spirit beast egg. We should eat the spirit beast egg.”

Xie Aoyu also hadn’t eaten till he was full.

The two fire rabbits had all been eaten by Qin Yueyi and Xiao Bai. He was also very hungry.

Hearing this suggestion, he didn’t hesitate, and brought out that Black Scaled Wyvern egg out. Xie Aoyu understood, this kind of spirit beast egg could be used to raise a Black Scaled Wyvern, but it

took too much time, and was exhausting to do. More importantly was that the Black Scaled Wyvern was only upper Spirit-level. For him, who wanted to become an Emperor-level master, it really didn't have much appeal.

So the spirit beast egg was taken out.

Xiao Bai stared at the two. It looked at Xie Aoyu, then looked at Qin Yueyi. Without saying anything, it had never heard of eating a roasted spirit beast egg, much less a spirit beast egg that wasn't even weak.

The spirit beast egg was about as big as a basketball.

Xie Aoyu once again pulled out some firewood, intending to make a fire. To make sure that the temperature didn't go up too much he clapped his hands, and sat down to the side, "Little devil, you said your surname is Qin. Are you really part of Tian Luo Empire's Qin family?"

"Yes, ah." Qin Yueyi's face had been roasted to a faint red, and was truly fascinating.

Seeing her defenseless figure, Xie Aoyu inwardly sighed. This little devil really was cunning, but at least she didn't have sinister thoughts behind her. [\[2\]](#)

Qin Yueyi turned towards Xie Aoyu and laughed, "Did you think I was simple?"

Seeing that sweet beauty's smiling face, Xie Aoyu suddenly discovered, he had unknowingly become very relaxed around this little devil. She was a little devil, how could she be simple.

This sweet beauty's cute appearance was too confusing!

"That's right. You're very simple. Simple like a small white flower." Xie Aoyu muttered.

"Giggle, that's how it was." Qin Yueyi pulled out an iron stick, and shook it in her hands twice, "Do you recognize this?"

Xie Aoyu looked down to see, but seeing the iron stick was thin in the front, and as you went further back it became thicker, at the tip was a small, difficult-to-see hook, and along the stick's surface there were incredibly small spikes, very difficult for people to notice, "What is it?"

"This is something this beauty invented. The Chrysanthemum Exploder used for destroying chrysanthemums." Qin Yueyi laughed as she shook it twice. The tiny hook shook a little, making Xie Aoyu feel a sudden chill. Then she pulled out a small bottle, "Inside this Drunk Perfume. One sniff with knock you out. How is it, pretty strong right."

Xie Aoyu gave a thumbs up and said: "Very strong!"

"These are the simplest ones. I forgot to grab my other things."

Qin Yueyi said.

These were the simplest things.

A devil!

Xie Aoyu cried out in his heart. He changed the subject, looking towards the spirit beast egg, “It should be almost done.” For roasting a spirit beast egg, it was also his first time, so there was no experience here.

“It should be good right.” Qin Yueyi said.

Xie Aoyu pulled out the spirit beast egg.

The hot spirit beast egg was wrapped up in his qi, unable to burn him. Using his hands to lightly tap on the spirit beast egg, a large crack appeared along the egg.

The spirit beast egg perfectly split down the middle.

Then warm air began to come out from inside. Xie Aoyu grabbed the spices, sprinkling them on. Soon there was an aroma filling the air. At that time the two people holding half of a spirit beast egg began to eat.

Unexpectedly, they had just taken a bite of the spirit beast egg when they began to feel a hint of change.

[1] (ED: To prove that she can find it by herself, she is making him look for it together. Really.)

[2] (TN: Er, I dunno about this translation. 可毕竟没有精力什么险恶.)

Chapter 37

The spirit beast egg entered the mouth, its taste was delicious, but after chewing it, a trace of warmth flowed through their mouths and went straight to their abdomen, quickly gathering there.

When it came into contact with their qi, this warmth immediately mixed with it.

As if it had originally been a part of their qi.

Receiving the warmth's assistance, Xie Aoyu could clearly feel his qi increase a little. Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi look at each other, each had sparkling eyes.

Clearly, they both had experienced the same strange feeling.

Eat!

The two tossed out the skin and then ate. [\[1\]](#)

It was the first time they had heard of this kind of spirit beast egg that could increase their qi, particularly for Qin Yueyi. After sneaking out, she had done this sort of thing plenty of times but never had this occur before. She felt like there was something odd, but overall was very happy.

Qin Yueyi had lots of talent but she was always slacking off.

Right now her strength was very low. If she had cultivated, then most likely she would have amazed people, especially since she came from a large household. If they had something like this that could increase qi without a need for cultivation, who would let it go.

One bite, two bites, three bites. In an instant it was quickly eaten.

The spirit beast egg was quickly finished off by the two people. That spirit beast egg's warmth flowed to their abdomen, adding to their qi.

After eating, the two closed their eyes and began to control their breathing.

From this method, the permeating warmth brought considerable growth to their qi. Naturally they wouldn't miss this opportunity and whole-heartedly cultivated. Seeing this, Xiao Bai used some water magic to extinguish the flames, preventing spirit beasts from being attracted.

An enormous amount of qi was under Xie Aoyu's control, and it began to surge towards upper Advanced-level.

This realm was right in front of Xie Aoyu's bottleneck. With the addition of the warmth's flow, the qi grew stronger, and there were already signs of gaps appearing in the bottleneck.

Xie Aoyu fully attacked it.

Just like a small leak will sink a great ship. [\[2\]](#)

The gap was that small leak, and was being violently attacked by his qi. This small leak began to grow larger. Once it was ripped apart, the qi immediately moved like it was toppling mountains and overturning seas. It surged forward, tearing through the bottleneck leaving nothing behind.

His body shook slightly, receiving the qi's surge.

Upper Advanced level.

Xie Aoyu felt inexplicable joy in his heart. He had come to the Heng Duan Mountain Range to bitterly practice and gain experience, the goal being to raise his strength, but he never thought that his first breakthrough would be through these circumstances.

A spirit beast egg.

Wrong, it should be said that half a spirit beast's egg gave him the breakthrough.

Crossing into the upper Advanced level, to him, was not only a breakthrough, but was more so a confidence booster. After all, the

higher the realm, improvement would become more difficult. Looking back at the young people in Langya City, even among the twenty year-olds, there was no one as tyrannical as him.

Opening his eyes, Xie Aoyu discovered that the sun was rising in the east.

He felt an unspeakable happiness. His body gave off a feeling of being refreshed. He stamped the ground once with his foot, then disappearing, and when he reappeared, he had reached the bottom of a tree.

Xie Aoyu then looked back to calculate the distance travelled.

Eleven meters!

After rising a tier, his Earth Escape Technique had expanded its reach by one meters distance.

But don't look down on this meter. Against a master, a thousandth of a hair could determine victory. And that was just only the visible change. [\[3\]](#)

For instance, the speed in the ground, the speed exiting the ground, this was also a type of feeling.

Although the change seemed small, Xie Aoyu could clearly feel the difference.

And also, these tiny changes brought terrifying fighting potentials. For instance, when he faced against Te La, if his speed was just this much faster, then Te La would have a much more difficult time to try and die together, due to the time issue.

If the ground exiting speed was faster, shortening Xie Aoyu's attack time, then naturally the time left for Te La to react was even less.

The Earth Escape Technique's change was indeed right here.

Then what about the qi's power?

Xie Aoyu let out a long howl, leaping onto a small mountain thirty meters away. On it was a boulder at least five meter tall and three or four meters wide.

“Overlord Dragon Boxing!”

Xie Aoyu's fist hit the center of the boulder.

“Boom!”

In one punch, that boulder instantly blew up, sending out countless broken pieces, going out with a whistling sound, traveling out in every direction, besides the impact location. That boulder that was at least a hundred jins had been smashed. [\[4\]](#)

It had a lot of strength, and was much stronger than Xie Aoyu's power when he was an intermediate Advanced level.

"Haha, upper Advanced level really isn't the same." Xie Aoyu clenched his fist, excitedly said.

At the same time, the fierce beautiful devil Qin Yueyi who had still been cultivating, her body was rocking slightly in a very regular manner.

Following her body's movements came out a powerful imposing manner.

This imposing manner pushed against the vicinity's gravel, weeds, sticks, and leaves, rolling them up. Qin Yueyi's pretty face emitted a faint halo, that gave off an incomparable holiness.

"Ya!"

Qin Yueyi with her eyes closed suddenly threw her hands up into the air. Suddenly she was in the center of a powerful force fluctuation.

"Hong hong hong..."

The ground appeared to have burn marks.

Qin Yueyi leapt into the air, throwing out punches one after another, hitting the ground and creating small quakes.

“I finally entered the Advanced level!” Qin Yueyi excitedly shouted out.

Xie Aoyu laughed and said: “Going from middle Intermediate and jumping up to lower Advanced level, indeed deserves happiness.”

“What ah, I’m not happy because of that.” Qin Yueyi waved it off. Because of her excitement, her face had turned red, “You don’t understand. My family has some strength increasing pills, but those kinds of pills, if one fails to rise up to at least Advanced level after using them, then leveling up later becomes very difficult, no matter how much you cultivate. If you reach the Advanced level and then use it, there will be no side effects.”

Hearing her say this, Xie Aoyu couldn’t help but sigh.

Why were large clan children so strong?

This was the reason, ah.

Because the clan was so large, within the clan the number of alchemists was big. Next was the fact they had so many high-grade pills that could help cultivation and increase strength quickly. They also had countless fighting skills. Those fighting skills belonged to various attributes, and were all high-grade. They could practice without worry, and raise people up. The greater the

number, then in the future they could get things from outside, for example: snatching pills, fighting skills, weapons, etc. Naturally there would be more opportunities.

With Qin Yueyi's strength, her talent was not bad, but she was lazy. But as long as she reached Advanced level, then when she used the medicines later, she would improve much faster than most people who bitterly cultivated.

“And that's not all. I have the water attribute. If I can get the Amethyst Spirit Water, or that sort of divergent water, then it will help my cultivation a lot.” Qin Yueyi proudly puffed out her small chest, “From then on, this beauty will sleep-in daily, and my strength will still increase and be amazing.”

Xie Aoyu smiled and said: “Maybe you can do that early on, but after reaching Rainbow level, Sage level, I'm afraid that external things will have no more use, and you'll have to cultivate yourself.”

“Che, based on this beauty's god-given wisdom, when that time comes, I'll definitely figure something out.” Qin Yueyi said with lots of self-confidence.

Xie Aoyu laughed a little, “It looks like before we find the Amethyst Spirit Water, we'll have to solve some other little problem first.”

Qin Yueyi followed where his eyes were looking and saw Te La with thirty or so people, and he was staring at them with the

bloodlust of a spirit beast, his face’s muscles were violently shaking.

“Hey, we only haven’t seen each other for one night, there’s no reason for you to miss us this much right?” Qin Yueyi waved.

Te La fiercely said: “I want you guys to die!”

[1] (TN: The Chinese apparently means cheek.)

[2] (TN: 千里之堤毁于蚁穴. Another Chinese idiom. Best translation I could find.)

[3] (TN: Whoops.)

[4] (TN: A斤[jin] is 3/4 of a pound.)

Chapter 38

Meeting Te La again, Xie Aoyu was already no longer the same as before. He was now filled with self-confidence. He stepped forward, coldly looking at Te La and the others.

The enhancing of strength and the increase in confidence made his disposition change.

“Surround them for me.” Te La still had some concerns about Xie Aoyu’s Earth Escape Technique. His primary goal was to let the others surround Xie Aoyu so that wherever Xie Aoyu appeared, he could contact with his underlings for knowledge, allowing him to instantly locate where he comes out.

Xie Aoyu also didn’t stop them, allowing those people to form their encirclement.

Probably because they feared Xie Aoyu would use Earth Escape Technique to kill them, these people’s encirclement was very large, at least thirty meters wide. It was also a method of protecting themselves.

Only then did Te La pick up his cane knife and walk forward.

Experiencing the Black Scaled Wyvern’s chasing frenzy, Te La already hated Xie Aoyu to his core. He had originally formed this small band of thieves. Although it couldn’t be compared to those large-scale thief groups, it still had some power, at least enough to not worry about eating and drinking. But now, due to Xie Aoyu,

now there were only a few people left.

After the Black Scaled Wyvern found out its spirit beast egg had been stolen, it had pursued with an even wilder vigor. Even Te La barely survived, and his brothers, especially some of the elites, had all died.

Every time he thought about it, he felt more fear and more anger.

After escaping, he gathered the remainders that were left at home and brought all of his brothers to find Xie Aoyu. During that time they had run into some powerful mercenary groups and strong spirit beasts, in the end they wound up with just these few people. How could it not make him feel hate.

I'm going to cut you into a million pieces!" Te La coldly yelled.

Xie Aoyu then silently pulled out the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword.

The holy sword out of its scabbard, beneath the rising sun, produced a cold gleam. The ice cold sword edge's dense chill sent shivers down the others' spines.

"Bring your life here!" Te La angrily charged forward.

He was like a bolt of lightning, frightful speed that reached the limits. His goal was to not let Xie Aoyu use the Earth Escape Technique to enter the ground. This time he made the first move

to put pressure on Xie Aoyu.

The cane knife was swung, shining a bright sword light in every direction.

Xie Aoyu felt his entire person was suppressed by this sword light, as if he had been plunged beneath ice. This was the strength of a lower Spirit level.

He was also secretly glad. Previously when he and Te La fought, he had been lucky to use the Earth Escape Technique at the start, otherwise, if under this sort of attack, he wouldn't have had a chance to use the Earth Escape Technique.

But now it wasn't the same thing.

He was already upper Advanced leveled. The powerful Te La could only get his blood pumping.

“Hu!”

The Lightning Spirit Sword roared as if it were devouring a dragon.

Fighting skill... Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop!

This move was a top level killing technique!

The qi in his body surged, the tri-colored ball's red lightning rampaged even more inside. Then out of his body surged countless crimson electric lights. Those shocking electric lights converged into one location. Like a crimson thunder dragon roaring, it blasted forward along with the Lightning Holy Sword.

“Clang!”

The sword light strike approached, but seeing Te La's figure whirling like a tornado, turning in the air, it cut down Xie Aoyu's terrifying attack. At the same time, he leapt backwards into the air, his heart shocked, “How did this kid suddenly become so much stronger? His qi is indeed not inferior to mine. Just yesterday, his was much less than mine.”

After that one attack, he couldn't immediately follow-up.

Xie Aoyu leapt into the air, not giving Te La a chance to counter attack, and swung down his sword heavily. This sword had an unsurpassable aura. It was truly unrivaled.

Facing Te La, everything else was passive. After exchanging this blow, Xie Aoyu's confidence overflowed. His aura went up without limit, and he became braver. [\[1\]](#)

The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword sliced through the air, creating an explosive sound, increasing its speed to the max.

Te La stomped against the ground, diagonally charging out.

“Boom!”

Xie Aoyu's Lightning Spirit Holy Sword heavily struck the ground, immediately creating a five meter long gash into the earth. The gravel on either side, the weeds, and the other things were sent flying into the air. He himself once again rose up into the air, as if he was an eagle hovering over, preparing to capture and kill a rabbit.

This attack with that imagery made Te La's face color change again.

He frantically ran to the left.

“Da da da...”

Every footstep made the ground shake. The cane knife continuously hit those loose rocks, blocking Xie Aoyu's attack. He was indeed startled and his heart rate had gone up.

Te La was very curious and very depressed.

He had originally come to kill Xie Aoyu for revenge, but now it was like this. He had been chased by Xie Aoyu and forced to run and jump for his life. And he knew that Xie Aoyu hadn't even used the Earth Escape Technique yet.

“Clang clang clang...”

The loose rocks were destroyed by Xie Aoyu.

Te La took this opportunity to catch his breath. He looked up and angrily shouted: “Boy, take my one blow to decide the match!” He suddenly turned his body, his sword moved faster than lightning.

This strike was Te La’s core sword technique.

It was also what Te La’s fundamentals were based on. He had used this slash to kill countless masters. He used this technique now because he hoped that it would bring him victory.

Xie Aoyu’s eyes were sharp. The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword in his hands began to move.

Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop!

“Qiang!”

The two blades clashed in the air, emitting a loud “qiang” sound. Xie Aoyu and Te La shocked each other at the same time. The entirety of their qi exploded out. Following that was a trace of crimson electric light exploding out of the tip of the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword.

The piercing cold cane knife let out a crisp ring.

“Kacha!”

The cane knife broke.

Xie Aoyu’s Lightning Spirit Holy Sword then like breaking a dead branch from a tree, using strength to break through, getting the first strike of crimson electric light on Te La. Due to the electricity, his hair exploded up, his body was sent flying into the air, limbs splayed out, letting out a scream. [\[2\]](#)

Following that, the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword went straight for Te La’s chest.

Te La shook his head once, his face had become incomparably white. In this life and death moment, he desperately bent his body back, hoping that he could dodge Xie Aoyu’s attack.

“Pu!”

Blood spurted out.

On Te La’s chest appeared a half meter long bloody gash. The blood gurgled, and due to the shock he spat out blood. He then flew out, “Brothers, go up together!”

After landing on the ground, Te La clutched his chest, continuously backing up. He couldn’t believe his eyes. The young

man he had defeated just yesterday, now could actually beat him so easily.

But the pain on his chest told him, this was all very real!

He lost the fight.

Not only that, he had been cleanly defeated.

“How could this be?”

“Big bro has actually been defeated.”

“This kid wasn’t even an opponent yesterday. What’s going on today.”

Te La’s underlings all couldn’t believe their eyes. They had seen quick changes, but never a change like this. Even Te La wanted to say, it’s not that I don’t understand, it’s this world is changing too fast.

A group of people yelled out, and charged forward.

They wanted to join forces to kill Xie Aoyu.

Te La also pulled out a new sword. He wanted to find an opportunity to kill Xie Aoyu. As for his underlings, under his

command, were charging without regard for their own lives.

“It’s this beauty’s time to shine.” Qin Yueyi lifted a short sword, intending to charge forward and kill.

Xie Aoyu coldly stared at those people, the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword in his hand slowly went down, pointing into the ground. The aura around his body became sharp.

Fighting skill... Overlord Dragon Boxing!

“Boom!”

The ten or so people in front of Xie Aoyu, all of them were sent flying in a bloody mess. The power behind that fist was like exploding thunder, making the others stop in their tracks.

Fighting skill... Earth Escape Technique!!!

Xie Aoyu stomped his foot and his person disappeared. When he reappeared, he was behind the left side of the people rushing forward. The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword horizontally slashed once.

The sword light rattled, and blood flew into the sky.

These ten people all lost their lives, not a single survivor.

Before his feet landed on the ground, the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword horizontal slash already had lots of strength. Facing the remaining ten people or so that were seven or eight meters away it slashed again.

Fighting skill... Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop!

Crimson electric light rushed out, converging into one point, creating a sword light.

The sword light and electric light combined into one and charged over.

None of those people could block Xie Aoyu's sword. Those ten people frantically attacked. Under that shining light, the sky became full of blood, their bodies became stumps.

“Old Xie, leave one for this beauty.” Qin Yueyi called out.

Xie Aoyu's sword was fast. Qin Yueyi from start to finish hadn't even made a move, before all of the people were already taken care of. Witnessing this, Te La's head was dizzy.

No matter what, he couldn't believe what he had just seen with his eyes.

[1] (TN: I may or may not have massacred this line. 之前面对Te La，处处被动，此番一招，便令Xie Aoyu 信心爆棚，气势无线攀升，如此更是勇猛。)

[\[2\]](#) (TN: Yeah, I'm pretty sure he's bald so the author might be talking about pit hair? Or I suck at translating)

Chapter 39

“This kid is too abnormal. After not seeing him for just one day, he’s completely changed. I’ve now been heavily wounded, and he has that mysterious and unpredictable technique that lets him enter the ground. If you try to run, you won’t escape. If it’s like this, then it’s best if he dies with me at the same time.” Te La decided, seeing Xie Aoyu send out two swipes in the air. It ought to be old-timers bowing out while new strength rises. It was currently an opportunity for reckless killing. [\[1\]](#)

He wanted to drag Xie Aoyu down with him!

“Die!” Te La crazily screamed, waving his cane knife that had a cold sharpness to it, charging in for the kill.

He had already prepared to die.

At the same time, he had prepared to kill Xie Aoyu.

But... as he slashed, he only slashed through the air.

Xie Aoyu used Earth Escape Technique, and after landing on the ground, rather than immediately going back into the ground, he sent his sword out, putting his entire strength in the blow. Xie Aoyu’s laughter came from behind Te La.

The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword made a horizontal sweep.

“Kacha!”

There was only one sound. Fresh blood poured out of the head that went flying.

The headless corpse fell on its back.

The turbulent and violent valley became quiet in an instant. There were corpses littered across the ground to prove there had been a fight there moments ago. The scent of blood was so thick it could make a person vomit.

Xie Aoyu eyes swept over Te La's corpse. He reached out and plucked off the space ring on the body.

On the edge of the Heng Duan Mountain Range, Te La's group's strength should have been considered not bad. It was impossible for him to not have something in his possession.

When Xie Aoyu had come out, it was not only to gain experience. He also had another objective which was to obtain a few other high level fighting skills, weapons, or pills etc. He definitely wouldn't let anything useful for the Xie family's growth slip by, just like his father Xie Gan.

The Xie family's foundation needed him to be strong.

The space ring had some seals in it, but this couldn't bother Xie Aoyu. His qi flowed into it, forcibly breaking them. As he reached out to examine if the inside had anything good, he heard a slight sound from somewhere not too far away.

Xie Aoyu placed Te La's space ring into his own space ring.

"More people are coming." Xie Aoyu whispered.

Qin Yueyi let Xiao Bai sit on her shoulders, lifting her short sword, "This beauty was just unable to find people to fight with. They've come right on time. Witness this beauty's invincible might on display. This time you can't interfere." Then using the short sword to point in that direction, "Come name yourself."

"Imperial Crown Mercenary Group's Valencia." A loud voice rang out. [\[2\]](#)

Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi looked at each other, both frowning.

This Imperial Crown Mercenary Group was the continent's largest mercenary group. Rumors had it that they had never been defeated in their entire history, and doing so without any great losses either. Included in that were two explorations of the continent's restricted areas for objectives. It could be said to be the best mercenary group in the mercenary profession.

The leader of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group was an Emperor level master.

Emperor level. That was the highest realm that one could cultivate to, not something that an ordinary person could attain to. Below him were four deputy heads, each of them were at the Sage level. This mercenary group was extremely strong. No one would dare to underestimate them.

“Can I ask you two, if the person that you killed, is that the Black Bear Thieves group’s leader Te La?” The voice that first spoke, Valencia, brought his people out from the shadows.

This person’s age was not too old, around thirty-ish. He had a dark complexion, his eyes flashing a refined light. Behind him were about a hundred people.

“That’s correct.” Xie Aoyu signaled to Qin Yueyi to back off and let him deal with it in order to avoid any unnecessary conflicts between the two sides, especially since it was mercenaries from the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group.

“Hng!”

Qin Yueyi felt dissatisfied. The Qin family’s strength was naturally far above the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group’s entire strength, but she understood, right now she lacked strength.

“This Te La. We have already searched for him for a long time. Who would have thought that he would be killed by these two young practitioners.” Valencia laughed.

“We were just lucky.” Xie Aoyu lightly said.

Valencia looked over the two, their entire bodies were unharmed, and the ground was littered with Te La and his underlings’ corpses. He understood that these two young peoples’ strength weren’t ordinary or it was due to a high-leveled spirit beast pet. But the injuries on the corpses weren’t caused by a spirit beast, thus it must be that they had used their own strength.

Te La and Valencia had exchanged blows before, so naturally he knew Te La’s strength. He also began secretly pay more attention, “To be honest with you, we were searching for Te La to ask for something. Could you possibly hand Te La’s space ring to us. We will only grab that one item, the rest we will not touch.”

They wanted something?

What could the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group with their status need from Te La? Xie Aoyu said: “Your excellency, do you and Te La have some sort of friendship?”

“How dare you. How could we, the dignified Imperial Crown Mercenary Group, have any sort of friendship with such trash!” A young man who was standing next to Valencia loudly yelled out.

“Do not be rude!” Valencia quietly said, “Your excellency might not know, the thing was originally ours. It was stolen by Te La who also killed not a small amount of my brothers.”

Xie Aoyu's heart rate increased. He was almost certain that it was the map. Te La had said before that he had sacrificed nearly a hundred brothers' lives to get the map.

Obviously it was impossible for the map to have been handed to him.

If he gave it to them, and they went to find it, but couldn't find the fighting skill, they'd naturally assume that Te La had found the fighting skill, and that the space ring was in Xie Aoyu's possession. Naturally they would direct their attention to Xie Aoyu.

That was something Xie Aoyu didn't want to have happen.

"You said it's yours? Those things are all unclaimed. Now we've obtained it, it's ours." Qin Yueyi seeing this, immediately let out her fierce beauty personality, speaking in a tone of outrage.

Xie Aoyu quietly let out a sigh.

He had discovered, with Qin Yueyi's partnership, they were working hand in glove. They didn't even need to converse, they could work with just a glance at each other.

"Fart. That map was something our brothers desperately fought for and took, but was then taken by Te La. Of course it's ours." The young man beside Valencia angrily spoke.

“That’s right, you even said that you guys took it. Then the original owner isn’t you guys.” Qin Yueyi smiled and said, “That is to say, the map has no owner. Now that we’ve obtained it, it belongs to us.”

Xie Aoyu covertly gave Qin Yueyi a thumbs up.

Qin Yueyi winked at him, giving off the appearance of a beauty.

“Shut up!” Valencia fiercely glared at the young man. Now he had done it, he had explicitly told the other party that they were searching for a map.

The young man bitterly stepped back, but was still glaring angrily.

Valencia lightly coughed once and said: “You two, that map is our Imperial Crown Mercenary Group’s item, I’m hoping you will return it to us.”

“Your excellency, are you threatening us?” Xie Aoyu frowned and said.

“If you want to interpret it like that, you can do that.” Valencia lightly said. He believed that the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group still had the strength to deter others.

Xie Aoyu coldly said: “I hate being threatened by people!”

Valencia laughed: “I also hate it, but some things are just like that because this world isn’t fair to begin with, so you can only recognize the fact.”

The two of them stared at each other.

A surge of pent-up anger roiled in Xie Aoyu’s heart.

Just as Valencia had said, the world was unfair. Who let his own strength to be insufficient. If the Xie Family was stronger than the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group, would Valencia still dare to fart like this?

Power!

“Alright, I’ll give it to you.” Xie Aoyu took out Te La’s space ring, and from inside it dug out the map. Then he threw it to Valencia, “There’s only this map inside.”

Reaching out his hand and grabbing, when Valencia saw it, he smiled and said: “This is right. This is it.” He put away the map. With a wave of his hand, he and his people left.

“Just giving it to them like that?” Qin Yueyi said unsatisfied, “If I had known earlier, I would have brought the Orchid Command.”

The Orchid Command was Tian Luo Empire’s Qin family’s

emblem. This meant whoever had the emblem was recognized as a Qin family member, which included the status. Without speaking of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group, even if there were two Imperial Crown Mercenary Groups, they still wouldn't dare to beg. But Qin Yueyi had not brought it, so even if she said she was a Qin family person, just like Te La, no one would believe her, and would even make the fight more intense.

And the two of their strengths still hadn't reached the level of Valencia and those others.

Xie Aoyu said: "Of course not. I've long since gone to the marked spot on the map. If they want to follow the map, they'll need at least two days' time." He laughed, "Little devil, what poisonous things do you have in your possession?"

"I don't have any, ah. Didn't I say, I secretly ran out and forgot to bring those kinds of things." Qin Yueyi said sadly.

"Could it be that you did not think that the divergent water Amethyst Spirit Water, just like how mysterious fires have spirit beasts guarding them, would have a high level spirit beast guarding it. How were you planning to take care of it?" Xie Aoyu said

Qin Yueyi said: "Of course I've thought about it, so I prepared a laxative." She pulled out a small bottle. Inside was filled with some white liquid, "We could send it to Valencia and them." [\[3\]](#)

"You have to eat it for it to be effective." Xie Aoyu said.

On Qin Yueyi's sweet beautiful face appeared a devil-like grin, "You don't know about this then. Among the ten treasures in this beauty's hands, this laxative is number one. This beauty let Grand Master Men Luo refine it." [4]

"Men Luo?" Xie Aoyu was made speechless.

The most famous alchemist on the continent was named Men Luo. The alchemist profession went up to Grand Master. The Grand Master was a much more powerful standing than Ziyan who was a Master Alchemist.

A laxative refined by Grand Master Men Luo?

Qin Yueyi said: "This is the rumored invincible laxative... Unstoppable Diarrhea!" [5]

Unstoppable Diarrhea, hearing this name, Xie Aoyu suddenly felt like praying for Valencia and the others.

[1] (TN: What a way to start the chapter. I'm not quite sure what's meant here. 应该是旧力已去, 新力未生之际, 正是袭杀的大好机会 Especially the last part.)

[2] (TN: 皇冠佣兵团瓦伦特斯. I think I did alright this time. Still open for better names though.)

[3] (TN: 泻药. Yeah. A laxative to fight a spirit beast.)

[4] (TN: 门罗. Not sure what you can do with it. Manure?)

[5] (TN: 一沾泻不停)

Chapter 40

The so-called Unstoppable Diarrhea, just by hearing the name, one could guess its purpose. It was different from normal laxatives. This laxative didn't need to be ingested. As long as there was contact, then the diarrhea would not stop. [\[1\]](#)

Along their journey, as Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi went towards the cave, Qin Yueyi told him about the Unstoppable Diarrhea.

It turns out, Qin Yueyi used these on people who went against her. In order to make the Unstoppable Diarrhea, she had searched across Tian Luo Empire for all the top level alchemists, but none could make it, but at very end she had found the Gui Wei Country's Grand Master Men Luo. [\[2\]](#)

Because Qin Yueyi kept acting spoiled, in the end, Men Luo created Unstoppable Diarrhea for her. [\[3\]](#)

And to go with the Unstoppable Diarrhea was the...
Chrysanthemum Exploder

Thinking about the two, Xie Aoyu could only use the word devil to describe Qin Yueyi.

Soon they found that cave.

"You wait outside." Xie Aoyu told her.

Qin Yueyi didn't argue. The key point was the spirit beast's lair was incredibly stinky. That odor could make most people faint. Naturally she wouldn't willingly go in.

Xie Aoyu then snuck into the cave.

He picked up a large rock from the ground, put some qi into it, then suddenly threw it in deep into the cave.

From inside the cave came the sound of the rock hitting a cave wall, but no sound of any spirit beasts. Xie Aoyu then looked at the cave entrance and saw blood all over the place. He quietly said to himself, could it be that Te La and his underlings killed off the spirit beast.

Xie Aoyu carefully tiptoed in.

He really didn't find the spirit beast that could spit poisonous fog.

He arrived at the place where the weeds and leaves had been piled up, then pulled out the small bottle of Unstoppable Diarrhea. Inside was a lot of powder. Xie Aoyu began to lightly sprinkle it.

He didn't sprinkle too much powder, but not too little either, but enough so that other people wouldn't be able to see it.

Once he had sprinkled it where the wooden box used to be located, he discovered that it was apparent there was something missing there, and the ground had a small indent.

He couldn't tell if it was just because when the wooden box had been there, the spirit beast would lie on top of it creating the indent.

If it was left there, then it would naturally be discovered.

Xie Aoyu searched for a rock to stick into there in order to cover that place.

“Dong!”

As he inserted the rock, he heard a muffled sound.

Hmm?

Xie Aoyu felt a little surprised, why did it sound like it was hollow? He pulled out the rock, knocked against the surface, and found out that the ground was indeed hollow.

This time, Xie Aoyu's eyes widened.

He reached out to open it, but then he remembered that there had been hidden weapons inside the wooden box. He pulled out the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, moved away a bit, and then used the

Lightning Spirit Holy Sword to hit it.

“Bang!”

The ground immediately split and created a gap.

“Hu...”

A strong wind flowed out. The strong wind sent Xie Aoyu flying in a second, like he was a broken kite.

And the weeds, leaves, odor etc. were also all blown away. [\[4\]](#)

What happened?

Xie Aoyu’s heart beat crazily. How could that small pit have such a large wind that could even blow him away. That would require a lot of wind.

“Ding dong!” [\[5\]](#)

At this time, Xie Aoyu felt his chest go cold. The tri-colored ball began to shake.

His shirt ripped open creating a gap, exposing a muscular chest, and the skin had three colors, purple, yellow, and green appear on it.

It could be faintly seen that it seemed to have the appearance of a ball.

The tri-colored ball!

Xie Aoyu immediately used his spirit to feel it. He wanted to see what the tri-colored ball was doing. The tri-colored ball had already brought too many surprises to Xie Aoyu.

But his mental strength still had not touched the tri-colored ball when it exploded out.

He had originally been sent flying by the wind, but because the tri-colored ball had appeared, he stopped, hovering in midair, emitting the tri-colored ball's three beams of light.

“Buzz...”

From the small pit came the same type of fluctuations.

Following that, to Xie Aoyu's horror, he discovered that the entire mountain was shaking, the ground was also vibrating. It was as if that thing had been the root of this area.

A small halo of blue light slowly came out of the pit.

That blue light connected with the three lights on his chest via a

beam, then suddenly they all combined together. Then the three lights slowly retracted, and that blue light also shot into Xie Aoyu.

The thing inside the pit finally revealed itself.

It was a blue bead.

The bead was about as large as a thumb, was crystalline and clear, and there seemed to be something inside it, but even though Xie Aoyu wanted to see what it was, it was a blur, despite the bead being clearly see-through.

This kind of odd thing made Xie Aoyu feel a little stupid.

When that bead arrived about half a meter away from Xie Aoyu, Xie Aoyu clearly felt a hint of airflow coming from it.

The airflow was very weak, when it blew against his face, it felt like a spring breeze.

It was very comfortable.

The blue bead floated to where Xie Aoyu stood, hovering uncertainly, and the tri-colored ball gradually came out. After the two balls were facing each other for about a minute, the blue bead slowly flew forward.

The two touched.

When the blue bead came into contact with Xie Aoyu's skin, he once again experienced the taste of the tri-colored ball. It was very odd. It was as if there was a gentle flow rapidly coursing throughout his entire body.

That sort of comfortable taste made him nearly moan.

It felt amazing.

After the blue bead touched his skin, Xie Aoyu clearly saw the blue bead slowly begin to enter his chest.

It was directly entering into his body from the outside.

But his body didn't feel any pain. Once the blue bead fully entered, he immediately looked within himself. He immediately saw the blue bead was circling around the tri-colored ball. Unexpectedly, it was slowly spinning around, and between the blue bead and the tri-colored ball there was a faint connection.

This kind of connection was invisible, but the body was Xie Aoyu's so he could clearly feel it.

The two were connected.

Then Xie Aoyu slowly fell back to the ground, his feet touching the ground, and everything went back to normal.

Pulling off his clothes to look, he saw that his outer appearance hadn't changed.

It was just the lights were gone.

And also, due to the large wind created by the blue bead, everything in the cave had been blown away. It was originally foul-smelling, but now it no longer had that repugnant air.

Xie Aoyu patted his chest but still didn't feel anything. He couldn't help but bitterly smile.

He faintly felt within himself that the blue bead was a part of a set that worked with the tri-colored ball, otherwise this situation wouldn't have occurred.

But what was the blue bead?

He had no idea and could only shrug helplessly. Maybe in the future he could find some information pertaining the blue bead and the tri-colored ball.

Looking at the cave, Xie Aoyu once again pulled out the Unstoppable Diarrhea, spreading it across the cave. The total length of the cave was about ten meters. Xie Aoyu had confidence that if a few dozen people came in, it would definitely be entertaining.

There would probably be some excitement soon...The Imperial Crown Mercenaries group many people would all have uncontrollable diarrhea together. It would be the stinky spirit beasts' big news.

After putting away the small bottle, Xie Aoyu left the cave.

Qin Yueyi was about three or four hundred meters away from the cave. When she had heard the wind blowing before, she didn't know the situation, but seeing Xie Aoyu come out, she asked: "Is everything done?"

"It's done." Xie Aoyu laughed, "Once Valencia and his men come, I'm guessing this area will become Heng Duan Mountain Range's eleventh forbidden area." He patted Qin Yueyi's shoulder, "Let's go. You're not intending to wait for them to find this place right?"

Qin Yueyi looked a little disappointed: "Looks like there won't be a chance to see Heng Duan Mountain Range's eleventh forbidden area come into being."

Laughing, the two made to leave.

But before they had left, they saw some people in the distance.

Qin Yueyi looked closely. Not only could she see through lies, she could also see very far into the distance. She said in surprise: "It's Valencia and them."

“No way. How did they come so fast.” Xie Aoyu was puzzled.

When those people had come a bit closer, Xie Aoyu immediately spotted Valencia.

In Valencia’s hands was the map. Next to him was another person holding a large map. With the two maps together, they still seemed uncertain.

“It looks like they have a map that depicts the area for many miles, thus they easily found it. Xie Aoyu squinted his eyes. A smile appeared on his face, “Little devil. I thought of a method. It would be better if we...” He whispered to Qin Yueyi.

Qin Yueyi’s eyes lit up. She patted Xie Aoyu’s shoulder, “You always say I’m a little devil. Now I know you are a big devil!”

“To whoever challenges me, indeed I am a big devil. I want to make sure my enemies regret it!” Xie Aoyu said, with a scary look on his face, making even Qin Yueyi feel a scared. Then Xie Aoyu said, “We’ll each get ready and give them an even bigger surprise!”

The big and small devil began their devilish actions.

[1] (TN: Fun fact, lots of people die from diarrhea every year.)

[2] (TN: 贵为国. Gooley Country? Gateway?)

[3] (TN: I feel like the meaning was something like “kept pestering him”)

[4] (ED: What about the UD!? He touched the powder?)

[5] (TN: What should I call this? 叮咚)

Chapter 41

After he had taken the map, Valencia had pulled out the map of the Heng Mountain Range that he was carrying. This map was drawn by the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group earlier. The level of detail on it was incredible, and it also had been drawn by an artist. The entire thing was very vivid. [\[1\]](#)

But there were dissimilarities.

After all, the Heng Mountain Range saw large battles in it every day. There were people fighting people, people fighting spirit beasts, and spirit beasts fighting spirit beasts. Thus, the damage done was extreme, but overall, the map was about 90% accurate regarding the geography.

“Captain, these two maps side by side, the spot on the map is that small cave in front of us.” That arrogant young man pointed at the cave.

Valencia nodded, “Everyone be careful. I remember this area had a variation spirit beast. It could spit out poisonous gas. Archers ready yourselves. You guys over there will go with me and help lure the spirit beast out and then kill it.”

Very quickly approximately a hundred people got into their positions.

Thirteen archers hid themselves outside the cave. Each one

nocked their arrows, aiming at the cave entrance.

Valencia then took some of his more powerful men and carefully inched into the cave. They had also seen that there was a bend in the cave.

They walked around the bend.

Valencia put up a finger.

The people following him immediately sidled up to the cave wall. Valencia also placed his back against the wall, sneakily peeking inside, trying to see if the spirit beast was inside.

“Huh? The spirit beast isn’t here.” Valencia said in surprise.

The others with him immediately walked in, discovering that the place was a mess, but the air didn’t have the spirit beasts’ odor, and instead, had refreshing air.

“Everyone search together,” Valencia looked left and right, commanding the others to search.

The seven or eight people with him began to look.

Things were scattered everywhere.

But they didn't find anything.

“Captain, the map shows that it's here. Maybe the thing we're looking for is inside the mountain or buried in the ground. Also, the predecessors before us liked to play with mechanisms. We need to search the entire place inch by inch and check everything at least.” The arrogant young man said.

Valencia said: “It looks like that's the case. Go bring 60 more people in. Everyone will divide into a region. In that spot, they will dig for three feet and bring out what they find.”

“Yes.” The arrogant young man immediately headed out to gather people.

Instantly sixty people were in there, but the cave didn't seem crowded. Valencia personally gave each person a region to start searching in.

Very quickly, these people were enthusiastically searching.

After about three or four minutes after, among the group of the first seven or eight people, someone held their stomach and exclaimed: “Ai yao, my stomach... Ah!” He hadn't even finished speaking before he felt like he couldn't hold it in and let it all out.
[\[2\]](#)

“Ai yao!”

“Ai yao...”

Following that were more continuous shouts.

Each cry was more jubilant than the next, clutching their stomachs and letting loose. Valencia had just frowned and was preparing to scold them when he felt his own stomach started making “gululu” sounds, and it wasn’t the sound for hunger.

His face’s color changed and ran out.

At that moment, Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi were once again working together.

Except the two of them were both holding a few spirit beasts, and they were all the same type of spirit beast. In his left hand was five or six fire rabbits with long ears, in his right were five or six wind bird claws.

“It stinks.” Qin Yueyi wrinkled her cute nose.

“It’s already started.” Xie Aoyu laughed, “We’ll act according to the plan.”

Qin Yue whispered: “Xiao Bai, come with me.”

“Yiya!”

Xiao Bai also let out a rare devilish human expression, but the expression just made it look even cuter. It trotted alongside Qin Yueyi and went over.

Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi then went in opposite directions.

He came to a dense patch of grass, then tossed those fire rabbits onto the ground. The fire rabbits all lay paralyzed on the ground.

After a little while, Xiao Bai ran over.

At Qin Yueyi's position, there was a flame that was fiercely burning, and there was also a large wind blowing, and that wind was aimed at the cave.

"Xiao Bai, let them breathe fire." Xie Aoyu said.

"Yiya."

Xiao Bai began talking to the fire rabbits.

Those fire rabbits immediately became energetic, and each one immediately spat out a fireball. The fireballs created by the fire rabbits was very weak, but that wasn't all there was to it. There was a lot of grass around and many of them were dried weeds.

A large fire suddenly began to fiercely burn.

Xie Aoyu then threw out the wind birds. Under Xiao Bai's beast talk commands, those wind birds began to let out a cry, beginning to cast a wind spell...Mad Wind Technique. [\[3\]](#)

The direction was naturally also towards the cave.

Once the blaze had reached a certain degree, under the mad wind, it suddenly spread out everywhere, and the speed was incomparably fast. Xie Aoyu then quietly left, meeting up with Qin Yueyi about two hundred meters away at a small mountain.

They hadn't noticed Xiao Bai.

Once the two left, Xiao Bai let out its original appearance, opened its mouth and emitted a fireball.

The fireball it spat out was about as large as a millstone, it was like a fire-type spell. Even the gravel on the ground and the dirt all ignited.

Then it opened its mouth again and a large wind came out of its mouth.

The mad wind blew, the flames grew even larger, and the speed at which it spread was astonishing.

After that, it ran back to the others.

Returning to Xie Aoyu's side, it once again returned to its cute small beast appearance.

“Look quickly, they've discovered the large fire and are running away. Haha, they're all running with their pants down.” Qin Yueyi pointed in the direction, excitedly shouting out.

Under the large fire, those people who were uncontrollably leaking didn't have any method to use their qi to defend or run away, and could only waddle with their two legs.

At this time, Qin Yueyi's Unstoppable Diarrhea began to show the extent of its evilness.

There was no way to hold it back. It entirely displayed its unstoppable abilities as the diarrhea flowed out uncontrollably. If a person squatted, they could forget about getting back up. But one could imagine, against the large fire and trying to escape for their lives, it was quite a sight.

Xie Aoyu smiled evilly: “This time the Imperial Crown Mercenary group will really be known across the continent.”

“Big devil.” Qin Yueyi smiled so much her eyes were squinted, her two small fangs showing, an unspeakable cuteness, “I've finally found a friend!”

Looking at Qin Yueyi, inside Xie Aoyu's head, a phrase came to mind unbidden... partners in crime.

He shook his head, tossing away the idea, but Xie Aoyu discovered, this phrase was firmly engraved in his mind. He couldn't help but bitterly laugh, "Let's go and find the Amethyst Spirit Water. This time there shouldn't be anyone trying to bother us."

Qin Yueyi picked up Xiao Bai, excitedly saying: "Let's move out!"
[4]

The youthful boy and girl went past the mountains and past two rivers before they arrived at the place that Qin Yueyi said the Amethysts Spirit Water was located. It was a small pool.

[1] (TN: Err, I'm not sure if it was a typo, but the author did not include a "Duan" character there. I swear I didn't just a word.)

[2] (TN: Think of ai yao as 哎吆 as something similar to "Oh man")

[3] (TN: 狂风术 y'all know the drill.)

[4] (TN: Autobots rolling out. Although in this case it's more like Decepticons.)

Chapter 42

The pool wasn't large but was very deep. With Xie Aoyu's eyesight, along with the sunlight, looking down, it still looked dark, and the water was very odd. Even if the wind blew by, the surface of the water remained calm without any ripples.

“Recently I came to Forest City with second uncle to participate in the Big Treasure Hunt Assembly. When we passed by this place, second uncle told me that this place had the Amethyst Spirit Water. We originally planned on getting it then and there, but second uncle said the bottom should have a high level spirit beast guarding, so once the Big Treasure Hunt Assembly ended, then we could get it.” Qin Yueyi stood in front of the pool, and said in an unconvinced manner, “I wanted to get it by myself, second uncle looked down on me, hng, this time I will definitely obtain it.” [\[1\]](#)

Xie Aoyu said: “Since your second uncle confirmed there's a high-level spirit beast guarding it, with our strength, what do you think our chances are of getting the Amethyst Spirit Water?”

“100%!” Qin Yueyi confidently said.

Seeing her confident manner, Xie Aoyu felt humored.

The guard of the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame, the three-tailed scorpion drake, even now, he still remembered how he had killed the three-tailed scorpion drake, and how it felt odd.

Who knew if the guard of the Amethysts Spirit Water would be even more powerful than the three-tailed scorpion drake.

However, they didn't have zero chances.

Last time he had been set up by Butterfly Queen You Lan Ruo, this time he was more prepared. There wasn't a zero percent chance, if one never took a chance, then there would never be success.

Xie Aoyu took out the Unstoppable Diarrhea and at the same time pulled out the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword.

Two fighting skills, Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop and Overlord Dragon Boxing, Overlord Dragon Boxing was naturally more powerful, but for taking on spirit beasts, it's not always the same. After all, the two fighting skills foundation was on qi. If it was a high level spirit beast, then probably the Overlord Dragon Boxing's strength that was unleashed by his qi wouldn't be enough to harm the spirit beast.

If it was the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, then there were more advantages.

The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword was incomparably sharp. Even the thickest scales could be cut.

Qin Yueyi also used her Truth Vision, one hand carrying a dagger.

The two of them finished preparations, and dove into the water at the same time.

Once in the water, the differences between the two became apparent. Qin Yueyi was light a beautiful mermaid, freely swimming in the water, incredibly graceful and charming. What was more amazing is that the water came into contact with her, but it didn't make her clothes wet, and her clothes remained dry.

Xie Aoyu sighed again, this was the benefit of large clans.

Their qis were both at high levels, for people like Qin Yueyi who had the water attribute, she cultivated the water attribute qi to a high level. Once cultivated, when qi was used, and if they entered water, they would be like fish in water.

Sink down!

They quickly swam downwards.

Ten meters, twenty meters, thirty meters.

This pool which hadn't seemed very large from the outside, they had gone down at least sixty or seventy meters. The pressure from the water also made them feel a little uncomfortable.

At this time, they reluctantly relied on the light that broke

through the water. Below was blurry, after all, there were large trees in the vicinity that blocked most of the light.

“I was prepared long ago.” Qin Yueyi had Truth Vision, naturally seeing clearly. She knew Xie Aoyu couldn’t see clearly, so she pulled out a glowing pearl.

The glowing pearl exuded a misty light, although it couldn’t shine as bright as the day in the pool, at least there was light. For Xie Aoyu, this was already enough.

“Is that purple glow the Amethyst Spirit Water?” Xie Aoyu pointed downwards, in the dark water below, there was a faint purple glow.

Qin Yueyi smiled and said: “It’s the Amethyst Spirit Water.”

The two increased their speed downwards.

This time they slowed down a bit, after all these kinds of divergent waters and curious fires had high level spirit beast guardians. These spirit beast guards’ goal was to obtain it for themselves.

Whether man or beast, if one could obtain a curious fire or divergent water, for them, there would be immeasurable benefits. Using the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame’s Geer as an example, previously, he couldn’t be said to be much of anything, but because he had obtained the curious fire Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame, his

status soared. Not just in a small city like Langya City, even among the continent's large capitals, they were all people who others tried to win over. After all, among alchemists, those that could use curious fires could be described as rare.

“Slow down, get behind me.” Xie Aoyu told her. [\[2\]](#)

Qin Yueyi agreed, slowing down her pace.

Although she was very fierce, she still understood that her strength was lacking. Therefore, Qin Yueyi did not joke around, unlike usual, and this is the reason why she never suffered too much.

Xie Aoyu took a deep breath, trying to calm down, and ended up intaking a mouthful of water, almost choking to death, causing Qin Yueyi to laugh out loud. She was very comfortable, the water never went into her mouth.

Xie Aoyu felt helpless and could only try to steady his mind. He tightened his grip on the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, his left hand holding that small bottle of Unstoppable Diarrhea, slowly heading downwards. [\[3\]](#)

While sinking down, Xie Aoyu clearly felt the pressure increasing.

With his strength, he naturally didn't care too much, but it was necessary to take it into account when fighting underwater. With

so much resistance, it didn't matter what fighting skill or weapon was used, it would encounter some obstacles.

Thus when fighting, the power that could be used and other things weren't the same as when on the ground.

Xie Aoyu floated there, stopping his descent, choosing to adapt for a moment. Once he felt more accustomed, he then returned to sinking down. With this cautious approach, although it gave off the impression of cowardice, but it was very safe, making Qin Yueyi once again hold Xie Aoyu in high regard, saying to herself: What a worthy friend, with this sort of cautious attitude, if there are enemies in the future, there will definitely be no problems.

After going down another sixty meters, for a total of a hundred twenty meters, Xie Aoyu paused to wonder. That purple glow was still the same size as it had been sixty meters ago.

The water was too dark and deep to see the bottom.

He was a little surprised. How deep was this water, ah?

“Little devil, you did find out, isn't this pool a little too deep?” Xie Aoyu frowned. [\[4\]](#)

“We're already at the end, in total there's only a hundred so meters depth.” Qin Yueyi said.

At the end?

Xie Aoyu hesitated, looking towards Qin Yueyi, “Why is it that when I look, I can’t see the bottom?”

Qin Yueyi hesitated for a moment, then squinted her eyes, looking downwards, then began laughing, “This is an illusion. I didn’t notice until just now.” She used her finger to point, “Watch me break this illusion.” With the point of her finger, a light green beam shot out of her finger.

That beam as it went down seemed to hit something, creating a “bo” sound.

Following that, the pool began to shake.

The originally calm and stagnant water began to vibrate, no longer still even when the wind blew on it.

Breaking the illusion, Xie Aoyu suddenly saw the pool’s bottom.

About fifteen meters below, there was a small sink, a square foot wide. Inside it was a faint purple clear purple liquid, completely different from the surrounding water.

And one meter to the left of the small sink’s location lay a spirit beast.

It looked like a magical lion with scales, on top of its large head were two horns that looked like antlers, and its eyes were a golden color.

This extremely powerful spirit beast was the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast! [\[5\]](#)

At this time, the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast's golden eyes were very wide, staring at Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi. It slowly stood up, revealing a five meter long large body.

“Roar!”

The Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast let out a earth-shattering roar. The pool's water began to shake and move, creating a large whirlpool, trapping Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi.

[\[1\]](#) (TN: 淘宝大会 for the Big Treasure Hunt Assembly. I dunno if it's important enough to warrant a name change, but I'll leave it up to you guys anyway)

[\[2\]](#) (ED: How do they talk underwater?)

(TN: That's a good question and I don't have an answer.)

[\[3\]](#) (ED: What does he plan to do with the powder? Unless it can dissolve, but won't he be affected too? Will he feed it to the beast?)

[\[4\]](#) (ED: Dakara.. How can they talk? Telepathy?)

[\[5\]](#) (TN: Mercy. 碧水金睛兽)

Chapter 43

“Hehe, this kind of small trick, this beauty doesn’t even put in her eyes.” Qin Yueyi floated in the water, completely ignoring the whirlpool.

In fact, that whirlpool couldn’t do anything to her.

Xie Aoyu’s mind moved, and came to an understanding. This was magic!

Once he thought of this, he calmed down, and then discovered that the whirlpool had already disappeared, and there was no rotational pulling force. Xie Aoyu couldn’t help but curiously examine the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast.

“Return to your original appearance. This beauty has already used Truth Vision.” Qin Yueyi’s pupils formed a silver light.

“Roar!”

That Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast didn’t give up and roared again.

The water in the pool became two water dragons that roared and thundered towards Qin Yueyi.

By simply Qin Yueyi lightly pointing her finger, those two water

dragons disappeared without a trace. Her carefree expression forced the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast to believe Qin Yueyi's words.

Illusions were useless against her.

It growled once, then the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast's began to shrink. [\[1\]](#)

It shrank down to just less than two meters, it was about one meter tall.

It seemed like it was a young Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast ah, Xie Aoyu smiled. He had thought it odd. Mature Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast spirit beasts were equivalent to a human's Sage Level. Their strength was terrifying, which was the reason why Qin Yueyi's second uncle had chosen to not make their move at the time.

A Sage Level water type spirit beast, in the middle of the water, even if the practitioner was normally more powerful, at this location, they wouldn't necessarily be its opponent. But if it was still young, then, that was a different matter.

"Its eyes still aren't golden yellow, only faintly golden. Its scales are still blue and haven't become jade yet. In addition to that, using its body as another factor, we can determine that its age can't be over 150 years." Xie Aoyu critically analyzed, "If it's 150 years, it should be equivalent to an Upper Spirit Level. Right now, by my judgement, its strength should be about Intermediate Spirit

Level or lower.” [\[2\]](#)

“Are you sure?” Qin Yueyi said in surprise.

Xie Aoyu smiled and said: “I won’t be wrong.”

He chose to gain experience at the Heng Duan Mountain Range, naturally he would make some preparations. In addition to the books he read, he also studied some of the more well-known spirit beasts, naturally pouring in considerable research. The mature Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast was at the terrifying Sage Level, naturally he would pay attention to the subject on it.

“Big devil really isn’t simple.” Qin Yueyi whispered.

“Roar!”

After being analyzed, the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast became extremely angry. It roared once, then it suddenly charged out from the bottom of the pool, opening its red maw, exposing its razor sharp teeth, fiercely rushing towards Xie Aoyu’s neck.

“Don’t kill it. I want it alive.” Qin Yueyi saw Xie Aoyu lift the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword and quickly cried out.

When Xie Aoyu heard, his body flashed, dodging to the side, and frowned: “Even if this guy’s young, but it’s still not easy to take care of. What do you want to keep it alive for, do you want to keep

it as a spirit beast pet? It'll take it at least seven or eight hundred years before reaching maturity.”

“Of course not, I want to use a water incantation on it.” Qin Yueyi smiled and said.

“Water incantation? You have the spell for a water incantation?” Xie Aoyu said in surprise.

Qin Yueyi proudly said : “Of course.”

“Do you have an earth incantation, thunder incantation, or wooden incantation spell?” Xie Aoyu couldn't help but ask.

“Nope.” Qin Yueyi dryly laughed, “It's not that I don't want to give you one, but I really don't have one. This water incantation was from me last year sneakily entering the palace fighting skill treasury, and accidentally discovered on a bookshelf. Until now, I haven't told anyone.”

Sneak into the palace?

And it was the number one fighting skill treasury.

Xie Aoyu couldn't help but feel some admiration towards Qin Yueyi. This girl's courage was truly large, “Then do you know if the palace has any of three kinds of incantations that I can use?”

“I don’t know, ah. Wait till there’s an opportunity, I’ll go in and help you out.” Qin Yueyi said. [\[3\]](#)

At this time, Xie Aoyu really felt a bit jealous of Qin Yueyi.

Water incantations, those were the continent’s most mysterious and most mystical existences. No one knows who came up with spells, but the effects were enormous.

Using the water incantation for example, if Qin Yueyi obtained the divergent water, then used the water incantation, then by using the water incantation she could obtain a water type spirit beasts special ability, for example, this Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beasts illusions.

Of course this was only one aspect of the water incantation.

According to rumors, the spells for water incantations all had many special abilities.

“Roar!”

The Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast charged again.

Xie Aoyu smiled, lifting his hand and throwing out a punch.

This fist contained the power of his entire body, without using any fighting skills, but was only using sheer strength. Because of

the tri-colored ball, Xie Aoyu's strength was very amazing, even strength type spirit beasts would be beaten down.

“Bang!”

The fist collided with the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast's horn.

The two collided, Xie Aoyu floated back without any injuries. The Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast then let out a pained roar, its body sent flying back twenty or so meters.

In one collision, Xie Aoyu confirmed the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast's strength. It was probably somewhere between lower Spirit Level and intermediate Spirit Level, but it had no combat experience. Even though it had such powerful strength, it didn't know how to use it.

Thus in this situation, Xie Aoyu didn't need to keep any reservations, with a shake of his body, he then began to attack.

He had already put the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword away.

His hands continuously flew forward.

His speed in the water couldn't be considered fast, but that Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast didn't know this, it was only a reckless and vicious child, it didn't dodge, and charged forward, at the same time issuing a roar. Countless water arrows appeared next to

him.

Water magic!

Water magic was naturally useful inside water.

Countless water arrows flew out.

Xie Aoyu's mouth formed a slight smile. He gently sent out a punch. It was Overlord Dragon Boxing.

The enormous fist of light roared out. Those water arrows were immediately crushed, only reducing the force of the Overlord Dragon Boxing by a little bit as it continued and with hit the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast with the reduced force.

“Boom!”

The Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast felt the essence of the Overlord Dragon within the Overlord Dragon Boxing, sending frightened shivers down its spine, and it forgot to dodge or offer resistance, allowing the Overlord Dragon Boxing to fully hit its body.

The Overlord Dragon was an emperor among spirit beasts.

Without speaking of this young Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast, even mature Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beasts facing an Overlord

Dragon would also obediently wait for death. The difference was too large.

This Overlord Dragon Boxing was also a generation's Grand Master of fighting skills Ye Chao Feng's specialty using the Overlord Dragon as a basis. After fusing countless fighting skills and creating countless more, thus making Overlord Dragon Boxing, there truly was a taste of the Overlord Dragon.

Even if countless water arrows offset its power by a little, Overlord Dragon Boxing was still very scary, smashing the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast to the left as it pitifully cried out.

Xie Aoyu shook his body and moved forward.

Without waiting for the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast to recover from the punch's attack, he went above the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Best, and punched the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast's head.

“Roar!”

The Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast was still a high level spirit beast, even though it was young, and had never fought before, but its fighting talent was naturally very high. It growled and once again countless water arrows appeared, fiercely shooting out.

With a grunt, the surface of Xie Aoyu's body became covered in a soft golden glow.

It was the appearance of his entire body using qi.

“Bang bang bang...”

Many arrows landed on Xie Aoyu’s body, but none broke through his qi, only shaking Xie Aoyu a bit. His mouth split into a grin, and his fist heavily connected with the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast’s head.

“Bang!”

After the punch, the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast had a dazed and confused expression, and then it fainted.

Even when it fainted it didn’t understand why Xie Aoyu didn’t dodge.

This was combat experience. Xie Aoyu knew his qi could block the water arrow attack, naturally he wouldn’t worry about himself being in danger.

“Haha, this is great. I finally have an opportunity to show off the water incantation!” Qin Yueyi excitedly yelled out.

Xie Aoyu laughed: “You should first think of a method to obtain the Amethyst Spirit Water.”

Qin Yueyi nodded her head in agreement.

The two simultaneously dropped down to that small square foot sink.

[1] (TN: The author actually rights碧水金晶兽, which is different from what he writes elsewhere. I'm hoping it's a typo, but it comes up a couple other times too.)

[2] (TN: Just a reminder, the 3TS Drake was Tuifan level, meaning there's about a 7-9 tier difference-ish)

[3] (TN: Does it bother anyone else that they can just have a casual conversation while fighting with their lives on the line. This beast is still way stronger than Qin...)

(ED: It bothers me that they are talking..underwater!! How!?)

Chapter 44

The one foot squared sink appeared purple, and around an area of about two meters of the sink was a vacuum. The hundred or so meters of water in the pool had no way of entering it. By this alone, one could see that this Amethyst Spirit Water was unusual.

For absorbing curious fires, Xie Aoyu knew a little bit.

But concerning divergent water, they were too scarce. Also divergent waters were usually outside the continent, in the boundless, deep, and murky ocean depths. Even encountering one was difficult, and the formation process of this Amethyst Spirit Water was very complicated.

“How will you absorb it?” Xie Aoyu asked.

Qin Yueyi giggled, “Watch me.” She rolled up her sleeves, put away the dagger, and sat down in front of the sink, her hands index fingers pointed out.

The two fingers pointed above the Amethyst Spirit Water.

Then Qin Yueyi’s mouth began speaking a spell.

Water incantation?

Xie Aoyu’s heart was startled. He thought of a possibility. Water

incantation spells were very magical. In the books he read, whether it was an ancient passage or a contemporary writer, they all held water incantation spells in high regard. There were many rumors for their uses, but few people knew their full effects.

Only the information about being able to steal a spirit beasts ability was widely circulated.

Qin Yueyi recited the spell, her body gradually emitted a layer of rippling water that fluctuated, and on her white jade oubi, there gradually emerged a faint green line of light that slowly extended to her fingers.

“Ding dong!” “Ding dong!”

The calm water of the Amethyst Spirit Water suddenly began trembling.

Then Xie Aoyu saw, the Amethyst Spirit Water began to entirely float up, splitting into two and circling back and forth above Qin Yueyi’s two index fingers, as if there were two purple dragons.

Qin Yueyi’s spell became faster and faster.

Seeing those two dragons of Amethyst Spirit Water soaring, they intersected in midair at a point, and at this moment, Xie Aoyu’s chest suddenly felt cold.

It was as if something had entered it.

This wasn't the first time he had this sort of feeling.

He hadn't noticed the Shadow Demon Spirit Fire, but he clearly remembered the Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame, and also inside the mountain when he had obtained the blue bead.

They had all given him the same feeling.

One point of difference was that the cold feeling was entering the tri-colored ball's green portion, inserting itself into the middle of it. It had entered the same way the purple portion's red lightning had. Inside, it was gently floating.

It was also at this point that the Amethyst Spirit Water's accompanying attribute showed itself. Xie Aoyu felt a new closeness to water, although it wasn't strong, the feeling was definitely there.

Xie Aoyu touched his chest.

The tri-colored ball was right there. He really didn't know what this tri-colored ball was. It seemed like it didn't matter if it was a curious fire or a divergent water or even the mysterious blue bead, all of them were conquered by it without even daring to argue. It was mysterious and powerful, increasingly making Xie Aoyu want to know its origin.

“It worked!”

With a excited shout, Qin Yueyi jumped up, she grabbed Xie Aoyu's arm, and loudly said, "I succeeded, I succeeded, I have a divergent water!"

Having a divergent water truly was a good reason for joy, but Xie Aoyu knew, Qin Yueyi's happiness was because of more than that. After obtaining a divergent water, she could recklessly use her water incantation on water type spirit beasts. She could forcibly raise her strength with some pills, and wouldn't need to worry about side effects.

Xie Aoyu reached out his hand and pinched Qin Yueyi's nose and laughed: "Quickly find the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast and test out your water incantation. Check out what you can get."

Qin Yueyi bounced over to the unconscious Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast.

Xie Aoyu also went over.

He really wanted to see how the water incantation worked.

"To be this beauty's first trial of using the water incantation on a water type spirit beast, you should feel proud." Qin Yueyi patted the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast's head, as if trying to make it feel proud.

Xie Aoyu laughed, this little devil was a young girl after all, ah.

Qin Yueyi then stuck out her right index finger, pointing between the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast's eyebrows, and then began to chant the water incantation spell.

So to cast the water incantation, this sort of thing was needed to obtain a water type spirit beasts ability. What an annoying process, Xie Aoyu thought to himself, after all, if a powerful water type spirit beasts level was too high, in order to obtain it, first it needed to be defeated, which was already difficult. This was probably the water incantation's disadvantage.

With the spell's chant, Qin Yueyi's fingers emitted a faint purple glow.

The unconscious Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast's body shuddered once.

Xie Aoyu saw a very weak stream come out of the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast's body, entering into Qin Yueyi's finger, then disappeared without a trace.

One couldn't tell how it was only from outer appearances.

After a while, Qin Yueyi opened her mouth and exhaled, pulling her index finger back, and then wiped her forehead that was covered in sweat.

"How is it?" Xie Aoyu said.

“I think I succeeded.” Qin Yueyi said this, then closed her eyes, using her spirit to feel it out. Then her finger pointed out and the water in front of her began to move.

Xie Aoyu saw some water rapidly converge together, forming a Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast. He looked down by his feet. They looked exactly the same.

“I obtained the illusions!” Qin Yueyi playfully laughed.

“It seems like there’s more options for scaring people now.” Xie Aoyu smiled.

Qin Yueyi gently waved her hand, that illusory Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast disappeared without a trace, and then waved again gently. Whether it changed into a whirlpool, or a water type magic, or something else, naturally it was fake and it didn’t have any attack power.

“Alright, let’s go back up.” Xie Aoyu smiled, he first started going up.

The two quickly reached the surface.

They had just poked their heads out of the water when they heard someone shout: “The pool has people in it.”

“Be careful!” Xie Aoyu stopped Qin Yueyi.

“It’s my second uncle and others.” Qin Yueyi used her Truth Vision and had already clearly seen the people around the pool, then got out of the pool.

Once Xie Aoyu heard, he also stopped being wary, and got out with her.

The people outside shouted out in surprise and had gathered around.

“Miss, it’s the miss!” Some people said in pleasant surprise.

Qin Yueyi waved to these people, “Haven’t seen you guys for a few days, have you missed this beauty a lot, ah?”

The excited shouts from these people suddenly stopped.

Each of them couldn’t help but take a step back. Obviously they had all personally experienced the Miss Qin’s devilry.

“Qin Yueyi!” A majestic voice sounded out.

Originally wanting to use illusions to scare these people for a moment, Qin Yueyi immediately put on a big smile, running to a middle-aged man, grabbing his arm, gently shaking, “Second uncle, I’ve missed you to death. How come you’ve only caught up

now ah. Could it be that you don't love Yueyi."

"Hng, you have a lot of courage, daring to run off by yourself. I plan on punishing you according to the family laws!" The middle-aged man coldly said, unmoved.

"Can second uncle bear to do that?" Qin Yueyi said without fear.

Seeing Qin Yueyi's sweet smile, the middle-age man couldn't help but sigh, and used a finger to poke Qin Yueyi's forehead, "You little girl really knows how to cause trouble for second uncle. Luckily nothing happened his time. If a problem arose, your dad would kill me." He was Qin Yueyi's second uncle Qin Doug, the person in charge of the Qin family's previous trip to Forest City to participate in the Big Treasure Hunt Assembly, "You just came out of the pool. Did you get frightened by the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast?" [\[1\]](#)

"It scare me?" Qin Yueyi pulled Xie Aoyu over, "My friend is very strong, knocking out the Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast in one punch."

"Oh?" Qin Doug looked over Xie Aoyu with surprise.

Previously he had passed by here and had seen that it in the pool was a large illusion. Since the illusion was so large, it obviously mean it was a mature Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast there, thus he didn't make a move.

To defeat a Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast in one punch was something a normal person couldn't do.

“That Jade Water Golden-Eyed Beast was a baby.” Xie Aoyu explained with a smile.

It dawned on Qin Doug, so that's how it was.

Qin Yueyi laughed: “Second uncle, let me introduce to you, this is my best friend... Big devil Xie Aoyu!” [\[2\]](#)

“Hehe, young man, to become Yueyi's friend couldn't have been a simple task.” Qin Doug began laughing. The others around looked at Xie Aoyu curiously.

Their Miss Qin Yueyi was a famous little devil, and now there appeared a big devil, how could it not make them feel cautious.

Qin Doug laughed: “It seems Yueyi already obtained the Amethyst Spirit Water. Then we only need to wait for Chalice to come and we can return to Forest City.” [\[3\]](#)

“Chalice? Why did he come too?” Qin Yueyi eyebrows rose, looking a bit uncomfortable.

“Isn't it because he's worried about you, thus he came with us to search. He went a different way, but we said to meet here.” Qin Doug explained.

After a short while, indeed there were some people who appeared and ran over.

There was a total of at least ten people. The fastest was a young man who had blond hair, blue eyes, and handsome looks. As he ran, he shouted out: “Yue er, Yue er, you aren’t injured right? You’ve worried me to death.”

“O!”

Qin Yueyi closed her mouth, making as if to spit.

“Hai!”

Qin Doug gave a soft “hai” sound, giving Qin Yueyi a glare.

“Oh, uncle, I was just so worried about Yue er, thus I didn’t see uncle. I ask for uncle’s forgiveness.” Chalice quickly saluted.

Waving his hand, Qin Doug said: “I know you eagerly missed Yueyi. No need for ceremony.” He once again looked at Xie Aoyu, “Little brother, why don’t we talk over there.”

“No!” Qin Yueyi pulled on Xie Aoyu, loudly saying, “Second uncle, I need to tell you to your face and explain to you something related to me, him, and Chalice.”

Xie Aoyu was stunned and said: “What relationship?”

“That is, I’ve seen your purity and innocence, this relates to the name issue. You are a good and decent man and can’t let me just see for free. I want to take responsibility for you.” Qin Yueyi said loudly, fearing that the others wouldn’t hear, and then sincerely looking at Xie Aoyu, and said passionately, “So I’ve decided...I want to marry you!” [4]

[1] (TN: Qin 德古. De Gu? Degu?)

[2] (ED: BFF with Little Devil. I bet he doesn’t know whether to laugh or cry!)

[3] (TN: L Why dis happen. 乔里斯 Qiao Li Si? Qiao Lisi? Qiao Lizzy? Chow Lizard?)

[4] (ED: Yep. There it is. The regret.)

Chapter 45

“O!”

Whether it was Xie Aoyu, or Qin Doug, both of them began choking on their spit.

That Chalice’s face which had been full of sincerity was suddenly changed to disbelief, but it quickly reverted. A smile even appeared on his face.

“Yue er, I know I didn’t find you, making you go through a lot of suffering, but I will definitely make up for it in the future, really. Just stop saying nonsense.” Chalice’s voice was completely calm, unable to see Qin Yueyi’s intent to cause confusion or anger at all.

“Nonsense?” Qin Yueyi clung to Xie Aoyu’s arm, leaning against his arm like a little bird, one hand secretly on Xie Aoyu’s soft rib, gently twisting a little, “You’re not allowed to expose the truth.”

Xie Aoyu chuckled secretly.

He really wanted to see what sort of tricks Qin Yueyi could still play.

“Yueyi!” Qin Doug’s complexion darkened.

“Second uncle, I’m telling the truth!” Qin Yueyi lifted her head,

her face looking serious, “I must marry him or else.” In that sort of serious manner made even Xie Aoyu feel like she was speaking the truth. Then facing Chalice, she let out a hint of ridicule, “You’re already a twenty-three year old geezer, how could you have improper desires towards this young beauty, ah.”

Xie Aoyu noticed at this time Chalice’s eyes had a hint of anger.

“Yue er...” Chalice’s voice was still even.

“Stop!”

Making a stop gesture with her hand, Qin Yueyi solemnly said: “I’ll trouble you to pay attention for a moment. I’m about to get married to a man now, do not casually refer to me as Yue er, as if I was an outsider. You should call me... Young Miss Qin. Thank you.”

Qin Doug’s face was very ugly as he looked at Xie Aoyu.

For this, Xie Aoyu could only pretend to not see. Qin Doug and Chalice to him were only newly recognized names of strangers, but he had been with Qin Yueyi through thick and thin. Naturally he would help Qin Yueyi.

“What is this brother called?” Chalice faced Qin Yueyi, he had no choice, he had to maintain an even demeanor. He had to endure at least in front of Qin Doug. That fiery anger in his heart was then directed towards Xie Aoyu.

“Xie Aoyu.” Xie Aoyu reported his name.

Chalice said: “So it was brother Xie. Since Yue er...”

“Young Miss Qin!” Qin Yueyi interrupted in a serious manner to remind him.

The anger increased. Chalice continued to say: “Since you’ve been selected by Young Miss Qin, then you must have the strength to protect Young Miss Qin right. How about we exchange a couple of blows, and if you really have strength, then Uncle Qin can rest assuredly hand over Young Miss Qin to you, and I’ll agree to kill off those feelings.”

He said it in a calm tone, but in reality was forced to play this hand.

If he failed, then Xie Aoyu would lose face, and definitely would not be able to remain here; if he won, Chalice heart sneered, how could this kid possibly win?

“En, this proposal is pretty good.” Qin Doug nodded his head.

“Second uncle!” Qin Yueyi said in an unsatisfied tone, “He’s already an over twenty year old geezer. We’re both still young, this isn’t fair.”

The age aspect in itself was a restriction.

The older you were, the more time you had to cultivate. For someone like Chalice who was already twenty-three, then Xie Aoyu who was between sixteen and seventeen years, there was a difference of six whole years between them.

Six years' time was enough for a person to make a qualitative change.

Xie Aoyu was confident that if given six or seven years' time, speaking of attaining Emperor or Sage level might be a bit much, but he was confident that he could at least reach Rainbow level.

“Then I won't use by soul contracted spirit beast Four Arms Magic Ape, using only my hands. He can do whatever.” Chalice proudly said, showing a dismissive expression towards Xie Aoyu.

Soul contracted spirit beast?

Xie Aoyu was secretly stunned. It should be known that soul contracted spirit beasts were a type of very magical contract. This type of contract's biggest advantage was the spirit beast's growth.

For example, Chalice's Four Armed Magic Ape, its mature equivalent was about a Lower Emperor Level incredible spirit beast, but under ordinary circumstances, for it to grow, it needed at least a thousand years to mature. To shorten the time, other than encountering some extremely rare Pure World Spirit, in order

to have hope, it was precisely because of this point that humans created the soul contract. [\[1\]](#)

The so-called soul contract, the one that Chalice was speaking about, his family just happened to have a Four Armed Magic Ape egg. When it was born, it formed the contract.

Since then, every time Chalice levelled up, the Four Armed Magic Ape's level would rise. Man and beast were at the same level and received the same promotions, thus solving the spirit beast's long growth cycle.

This was the magical and unpredictable soul contract.

Seeing Xie Aoyu's face leaking out a surprised expression, Chalice sneered even more, thinking that Xie Aoyu's strength was average, and he was more than confident in his own strength.

As the Qin family's equal in standing, as Tian Luo's three big clan's number one Pasa family's patriarch's second son, he had absolute confidence in himself. [\[2\]](#)

"I'm reminding you that you're an old man, since you're willingly giving it up, then just give it up." Qin Yueyi turned to Xie Aoyu and said, "Big devil, this is a terrific chance to display your abilities. As this beauty's friend, you must not disappoint this beauty's expectations, ah."

"I'll try my best." Xie Aoyu felt disgusted towards the people with

lofty dispositions like Chalice.

Qin Doug who thought Xie Aoyu's strength was average then let out an interested look, because Xie Aoyu was only sixteen or seventeen years old. If he could defeat a twenty-three year old Chalice from the Pasa family, then it would be a very impressive sight.

"I won't be going easy." Chalice dropped these words, then walked forward to an open area.

Xie Aoyu also followed.

Thirty meters ahead was an empty area.

At this time the people Qin Doug and the people Chalice brought had already spread out, forming a large circle, standing outside to watch, each of them quietly whispering to one another.

"You're going to regret this." Chalice's face was smiling, but there was an indescribable terrifying aura behind it.

Xie Aoyu laughed, saying: "Forgive me, my literacy isn't very good. I don't know what regret means."

"Looking to die!"

Chalice coldly yelled. The clothes on his body instantly bulged

up, the muscles tensing up, threads of qi came out of his body, surrounding the area, a violent aura covered the area. Cracks appeared on the ground beneath his feet, pieces of gravel gradually floated up.

Upper Advanced Level!

“Bang!”

In a tiny movement, Chalice suddenly stepped on the ground, exploding from the gravel with a terrifying speed that caused the gravel to explode.

An amazing speed!

With just one move, Xie Aoyu could see Chalice's tyrannical strength.

Even if Chalice wasn't a genius among the Pasa family's youth generation, but he was still the Pasa family patriarch's son, the fighting skills he learned were all top level fighting skills. Just by looking at the fact that he could soul contract the magic pet Four Armed Magic Ape, one could tell that his position in the Pasa family was very high.

The dormant forces within Xie Aoyu suddenly began to violently move, a powerful breath instantly exploded out, a dazzling golden light filled his body, the bright light covered his body like a golden suit of armor.

Chalice's raised fist that was attacking couldn't be seen.

But in Xie Aoyu's eyes, it had at least thirteen types of attacks fused together.

Xie Aoyu stepped forward one step, qi surging. That one step seemed to make the earth within a hundred meters radius quiver, he also sent out a punch, one fist against another.

The golden fist's shadow sent out a brilliant light in four directions, like countless golden snakes wildly slithering, the powerful force swept the weeds into the air, gravel went flying, creating a huge disturbance in eight directions.

One fist broke through the fist's shadow.

An earth-shattering explosion suddenly spread out.

An enormous flow of energy flooded out, carving a deep half-meter ravine into the ground.

In the center of the field, Xie Aoyu proudly fought, wind blew by, ruffling his messy hair, but his body was like a root, firmly standing, at this moment, giving people a sort of oppressive and intimidating feeling in four directions.

Whether it was the Qin family's people or the Pasa family's

people, they all felt like they were looking at an illusion or a dream.

Until the winds faded and the weeds landed.

They were looking at the place eleven or twelve meters in front of Xie Aoyu, the place where Chalice was lying, at the moment he was in an embarrassing position, his right hand was swollen, the clothes on his right arm ripped, leaving a trail of blood, his bones were broken.

One punch defeat.

He was defeated in one hit. [\[3\]](#)

[\[1\]](#) (TN: 天地灵粹 – Pure world spirit? I dunno.)

[\[2\]](#) (TN: 帕萨 Pa Sa? Passat? Pasta? What say you?)

[\[3\]](#) (TN: XAY is actually One Punch Man. I apologize for not revealing the truth earlier. He was doing his best to have fun fighting in earlier battles.)

Chapter 46

Being defeated in one punch, and by a love rival.

What made Chalice even more unable to accept it was that he had previously expressed contempt for Xie Aoyu, choosing not to use the soul contracted magic pet Four Armed Magic Ape. Now that he had been shamed, he became even more angry, which was Xie Aoyu's intention.

How could he recognize his loss just like that.

"I refuse to accept this. Kid, let's go again, this time, I'll definitely kill you!" Chalice's eyes were blood-red, at the same time a spirit beasts growl was heard.

Xie Aoyu seemed as if he had just woken up from a dream. Just then when he had punched, he hadn't used Overlord Dragon Boxing, but there was a moment of feeling, as if he had communicated with Overlord Dragon Boxing. Only, it contained the true meaning of Overlord Dragon Boxing, making him feel like he gained some sliver of insight.

Except that feeling came quickly and left even quicker.

Making him unable to grasp it.

Xie Aoyu wanted to experience that feeling again, not wanting to fight with Chalice, so he lightly said: "You're not my opponent!"

Hearing these words, Chalice's face flushed, killing intent bursted out from his eyes. To him, this was the utmost humiliation. He raised his head to roar like an angry spirit beast. The sound carried a sharp ring to it, as if it was trying to pierce through people's heads. Some of the lower-levelled practitioners had to bend down and cover their ears.

“Young master...” A man from the Pasa family whispered.

“Kasuo, shut up!” Chalice angrily yelled, “Today I will definitely kill him, no one can stop me. I'm going to let him know the consequences of offending me!”

(TN: 卡索 – Casserole? Castle? Ka Suo? Caso? Casso? Picasso?)

Seeing this, the man name Kasuo had to close his mouth, at the same time sneaking a glance at Qin Doug. This was the true face of their young master, overbearing.

Qin Doug was acting as if he hadn't seen it and was still smiling and watching.

“Hey! Old man, do you have any face. A loss is a loss. You still want to fight a round, don't you deserve a spanking? Old Xie, severely spank him, spank him until he can't take care of himself.” Qin Yueyi shouted.

Chalice hearing this, the muscles on his face twitched.

He choked down his anger, his finger pointed to a circular badge on his chest, then pointed forward. The circular badge shot out a fire red beam.

Impressively it was a summoning badge.

“Roar!”

A heaven shaking roar exploded, as if it was thunder breaking through the air. Even the a sixty or seventy pound rock about three meters away from Chalice was shattered by the roar.

Following the fire red beam, a two meter tall magic ape appeared at Chalice’s side. When it appeared, it began to furiously beat its chest, creating large vibrations.

Its huge head was like an apes, but the rest of it was different from an apes. For instance, its eyes were crimson, its head had two horns, these horns were black. On it were screw thread patterns. The horns were incomparably sharp like a razor.

Four arms shook back and forth, each of them nearly reaching its knees, each arm was extremely long, its body was completely covered in up to ten centimeters of black hair, a long tail that seemed like a steel whip was swishing in the air, issuing a “pa pa” sound.

It opened its red maw, letting out a bestial roar, and its wide

mouth revealed its extraordinarily terrifying white teeth. This was a Four Armed Magic Ape.

“Roar!”

The Four Armed Magic Ape roared at Xie Aoyu.

“That’s him. Slaughter him!” Chalice shrieked, although he was very arrogant, he understood that the Four Armed Magic Ape’s degree of terror would be his backing in the future.

“Old man...” Qin Yueyi quickly opened her mouth.

Qin Doug then pulled her back, preventing Qin Yueyi from interfering, “If you want to get rid of future entanglements with Chalice, then don’t interfere.”

Qin Yueyi angrily shut her mouth.

“Boom!”

The Four Armed Magic Ape used strength to stomp on the ground, immediately issuing a dull ring, an indescribable oppressive force came out of its body.

Even the Qin family and Pasa family’s people who were a couple dozen meters away felt the pressure, causing them all to back up a little. The Four Armed Magic Ape was terrifying.

“It really is worth to be a natural-born emperor level spirit beast.” Qin Doug gasped in admiration.

When the Four Armed Magic Ape reached adulthood, it would be a Lower Emperor Level spirit beast, but that wasn't all. The Four Armed Magic Ape was a evolutionary level type of spirit beast. As long as it was possible, they could evolve to Upper Emperor Level, the most terrifying and powerful point, and they could do it normally.

Therefore when looking at this kind of spirit beast, they should be seen as simple spirit beasts.

They could be seen as humans.

Because their intelligence wasn't any worse than a human's, just like this Four Armed Magic Ape, becoming Chalice's soul contracted magic pet, it naturally understood that Chalice had been defeated, and since it was a soul contracted magic pet, its strength and Chalice's were comparable. Even if it's battle strength was high, it could not easily defeat same level practitioners, thus it tried to use its natural-born talent as an Emperor Level spirit beast to oppress the opposition.

Inviolable dignity.

Xie Aoyu's eyes became cold.

He could feel from the Four Armed Magic Ape's domineering oppression that this Emperor Level spirit beast since its birth to now had been similar to a dragon with its dragon's prestige.

But this feeling made him recall previous familiar feeling.

Just now when Chalice and I exchanged punches, was that feeling like the one right now? Xie Aoyu's mind was moving and vaguely caught the insight from just before.

Domineering?

Wild?

What in the world was it? Xie Aoyu once again used Overlord Dragon Boxing, his eyes staring at the Four Armed Magic Ape, but did not actually attack, and instead was experiencing Overlord Dragon Boxing's meaning.

Overlord Dragon Boxing was the supreme fighting technique that a generation's fighting technique grandmaster, it could be said that countless people even if they studied it their entire life would still be unable to thoroughly understand. Xie Aoyu right now at a vague feeling.

What was this feeling?

“Roar!”

The Four Armed Magic Ape roared again, its four arms swinging, its eyes releasing blazing light, slowly trundling towards Xie Aoyu. Even if it was a strong opponent, it still would fight. This was the Four Armed Magic Ape's dignity.

Seeing the Four Armed Magic Ape's movements, Xie Aoyu's brain had a brilliant flash.

He finally understood.

What was the Overlord Dragon Boxing's meaning?

It was an indomitable spirit, knowing death was coming, but never flinching arrogance. It's nature was... if I could not do it then who could. The world under heaven was large, and the number of experts were like stars.

And I am the moon in the vast heavens, surrounded by stars.

(TN: Chinese idiom here. 众星捧月 means something along the lines of being a superstar and peons gathering to worship you.)

Because I am invincible.

This was meaning of the fist of Overlord Dragon Boxing. When the punch was sent out, if I could not do it then who could!

Pondering over the fist's meaning, Xie Aoyu's suddenly changed. Before he gave off a formidable and valiant impression, but now it gave people the taste of invincibility.

Xie Aoyu stood there as if he were an undefeatable god of war.

Understanding Overlord Dragon Boxing's meaning made Xie Aoyu once again use the Overlord Dragon Boxing fighting skill, making him appear like he had transformed into an emperor of beasts, making all spirit beasts under heaven tremble, they all had to fear the invincible Overlord Dragon.

“Roar!”

The originally wild and domineering Four Armed Magic Ape seemed like it had encountered its mortal enemy, letting out a cry of horror, hurriedly taking two steps back. It looked at Xie Aoyu in alarm.

Although Xie Aoyu was a human, but in its eyes, the opposition was an Overlord Dragon.

Amongst spirit beasts, who would dare fight with an Overlord Dragon?

Absolutely none.

Even if it had reached the Upper Emperor Level, if the Four Armed Magic Ape met an Overlord Dragon, it only had one path.

The Overlord Dragon was an invincible existence.

Xie Aoyu placed his hand behind his back, a breeze passed by, making his messy hair to slowly fly up, his clothes also fluttered in the wind. His face was resolute, sending out an “if not me then who” aura. His eyes were staring at the Four Armed Magic Ape.

Being locked onto by Xie Aoyu’s eyes, the Four Armed Magic Ape suddenly let out a cry of horror, continuously backing up.

Chalice who was standing in the back, wanting to see the Four Armed Magic Ape teach Xie Aoyu a lesson, how could he imagine that there would be such a change, that the Four Armed Magic Ape just happened to collide with him, sending him flying into the air again, heavily slamming into the ground.

Without trying to fight, the Four Armed Magic Ape backed away.

Xie Aoyu’s fist motion suddenly made Qin Doug’s eyes light up.

“So handsome, ah!” Qin Yueyi excitedly shouted out.

The other people standing around had expressions of fear as they looked at Xie Aoyu. For a period of time, some of them had a hard time accepting this scene, but it was the truth.

Xie Aoyu hadn’t needed to make a move and had scared off the Four Armed Magic Ape. It was the first time they had seen such a magical scene. In this moment, the three words Xie Aoyu were

firmly engraved into the hearts of everyone present.

(TN: Sorry guys, XAY evolved again. No longer One Punch Man. He is now No Punch Man.)

Chapter 47

Seeing that frightened and retreating Four Armed Magic Ape, the entire audience was silent.

Shortly after, including Qin Doug, everyone there looked at the preeminent young man with the same eyes as if they were looking at a monster. Each person knew what a Four Armed Magic Ape meant, that it was a future Emperor Level existence, a terrifying spirit beast born with an emperor's bearing. Now it was actually being scared to the point of retreating.

In addition Qin Doug who could recognize his strength was extraordinary, was also shocked by shocked by the turn of events in front of his eyes.

His eyes let out a strange light as they stared at Xie Aoyu, as a Sage Level master, his aura could oppress any practitioner under Rainbow Level to the point of vomiting blood, but even for him facing a Four Armed Magic Ape, even an immature one, he wouldn't be able to do that.

Because the Four Armed Magic Ape was a natural-born Emperor Level spirit beast, even when it was young, it still had the Emperor Level spirit beast kind of spirit beast attitude, but Xie Aoyu had still managed to frighten it into retreating.

Why was this?

"This beauty has seen stupid before, but never someone as stupid as you Chalice, actually being knocked over by your own magic pet." Qin Yueyi excitedly exclaimed, "A toad like you wants to eat swan meat like me, don't you think you're a little too evil at heart?"

The irony made Chalice's face muscles twitch.

To think that he, Chalice, with his identity as Tian Luo Empire's three big clan's number one Pasa Clan's patriarch's son, would

actually be called a toad. It was an unendurable situation.

“Kill him!” Chalice only felt that killing intent in his chest, he yelled at Kasuo, “Hurry up and kill him, kill him!”

As Chalice’s loyal lackey, Kasuo responded to Chalice’s words, obedient as always, without thinking of what kind of unnecessary trouble it would cause, stepped forward.

He was of the Lower Spirit Level.

His strength was much greater than Chalice’s.

While moving forward, an epee appeared in his hands, waving the sword to attack Xie Aoyu, the sword edge excitedly emitted a radiant yellow qi, sending people chills. [\[1\]](#)

Facing the oncoming attack, Xie Aoyu slowly raised his fist.

The fist emitted a faint golden light.

He was using Overlord Dragon Boxing!

Having just had the epiphany for Overlord Dragon Boxing’s meaning, he could finally appreciate Overlord Dragon Boxing’s number one style...If not I, then who!

Before this move hadn’t been used, it had been an indomitable force. Now it released an irresistible aura, causing the Four Armed Magic Ape once again roar, continuously trying to retreat.

Receiving the impact of Xie Aoyu’s aura, Kasuo let out an angry roar, the epee exploded out sending out a two meter long cold beam, the beam piercing the sky, letting out an audible screech of metal against metal attack, the ringing sound carrying with it killing intent.

“Strike!”

Xie Ao shouted once, sending his fist out.

Overlord Dragon Boxing’s if not I then who!

The fist clashed against the epee!

“Boom!”

Blinding light like a bursting sun, within a hundred meter radius, every inch of space was lit up. Surging energy rampaged everywhere.

A tragic cry rang out, an earsplitting shrill roar; a person's figure came flying out of the blast, bringing a wave of blood that flew through the air.

Qin Yueyi frantically stared at the scene. Discovering that it was actually Kasuo, but now Kasuo was not in very good condition. His epee was broken, and some of the debris had gotten lodged in his body, his hair was completely disheveled, the clothes on his chest were ripped apart. A picture of misery.

“Despicable person, shameless scoundrel, how could you win.” Qin Yueyi stormed into the field, pointing at Chalice, “You should understand how to behave now right.”

Chalice crawled up from the ground, pushing aside the people trying to help him up, coldly staring at Xie Aoyu, then left.

“Hoho...”

Qin Yueyi excitedly began to cry out strangely towards the sky.

Her current appearance completely destroyed her originally lovely and pure image.

Qin Doug shook his head. For their clan, children were meant to be married off, rarely were they able to control their own destiny.

Like Chalice was one of the Qin family's choices.

But it was only one of the choices, thus even after Chalice was beaten and sent away, he paid it no attention. Instead, he had generated a strong interest in Xie Aoyu, especially since he had been able to scare off the Four Armed Magic Ape.

It really made him feel surprised.

“Second uncle, how was that. The madman’s pretty good right. A lot stronger than those so-called men that you found.” Qin Yueyi said proudly like a small mother hen, “Hehe, help me talk with the old man and chase off all those so-called suitors.”

Qin Doug smiled and said: “With just this alone, it won’t work.”

Among the ones that could be selected by the Qin family, most had good background. Not only did the individual’s condition, they also needed to look at their wealth, status and so on.

“Hng, this beauty will definitely think of a way.” Qin Yueyi bitterly said.

Once Qin Doug and his men came together, Qin Yueyi also joined them and went together towards Forest City in order to participate in the Big Treasure Hunt Assembly. Since Xie Aoyu had come to gain experience, for this kind of big event, naturally he wouldn’t miss it. He joined up with the Qin family.

Forest City in itself was not that impressive, but the place’s peculiarity was that it was covered completely in vegetation, not a single stone. It was apparently made by many of Heng Duan Mountain Range’s forest dwellers collaborating together. They were naturally inclined to be together with the flowers and the trees, thus the city’s buildings were completely made from vegetation.

Speaking of the Big Treasure Hunt Assembly, Xie Aoyu had heard of it long ago.

Almost every year the Forest City would have a Big Treasure Hunt Assembly, each time it would attract countless participants. Even Tian Luo Empire’s three big clans all dispatched core clan members to go, demonstrating the attractive power of the Big Treasure Hunt Assembly.

Outside of Forest City’s city gates there were Forest City patrols guards. Even during the Big Treasure Hunt Assembly, average

people still couldn't enter, but when the Qin family said the four words Tian Luo Qin Family, immediately there were people asking them to come to a nice quiet house to rest. Xie Aoyu once again experienced the benefits of a large clan.

Inside the house, Xie Aoyu was separated to a single person room.

The room was completely built from tress. It had a fresh scent to it.

Entering the room, Xie Aoyu closed the door, and then lied down on the bed. Since the fight with the Four Armed Magic Ape and understanding the meaning of Overlord Dragon Boxing, these days, Xie Aoyu was thinking about Overlord Dragon Boxing every day.

This fighting skill, it seemed like a punch, but in fact many things were very complex.

Xie Aoyu was now testing the insight the he had gained from Overlord Dragon Boxing... If not I then who, how to make that kind of aura and how to unleash it. Its force was created in a moment. The produced force was absolutely amazing.

Since he could defeat Lower Spirit Level Kasuo in one hit, it could be imagined that this move's terrifying degree. And this was only Xie Aoyu's first evolution of the Overlord Dragon Boxing. This made Xie Aoyu desperately ponder over Overlord Dragon Boxing.

One the road here, he almost completely digested "If not I then who". He was now trying to find new insights.

But he hadn't made much progress.

But still, he had discovered a meaning in one place.

Previously when using solely Overlord Dragon Boxing, it looked like drawing a ladle by the gourd, there wasn't a single bit of understanding of Overlord Dragon Boxing. Now that he had gone deeper into Overlord Dragon Boxing's essence, he found that it was very braod. [\[2\]](#)

And vaguely inside the “If not I then who” fist, Xie Aoyu felt as if he were using a weapon, not just using the fixed form of a fist.

When he thought of this point, he began to feel restless, unable to wait to test it, but afraid that others would see it. He withheld until they reached Forest City.

Then he began testing it on the spot.

Naturally it didn't use too much qi, using less than ten percent of his qi. Overlord Dragon Boxing required qi to use, and in the end it aggregated onto the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, and he swung.

[3]

It was unlike trying to cleave with a sword, but was more of a casual swing.

The sword raked.

Shua!

A gleam of sword light slashed through. Following that, Xie Aoyu felt the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword seemed to have come alive for a moment, as if the sword suddenly had life, letting out a deep dragon's growl.

The dazzling light from the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword's blade flashed. It was a ball of light. As it left the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, the ball of light broke apart like a dragon egg breaking open, like an overlord dragon coming into existence. A small-scale powerful dragon entered into the air, cutting through the air, causing the room to shake, as if the room had been penetrated.

Seeing the spectacle, Xie Aoyu excitedly began to violently swing his fist.

Since then, he hadn't understood, to become a generation's fighting skill grand master Ye Chao Feng number one masterpiece, this fist called Overlord Dragon Boxing, in truth contained many

methods of using a fist as a sword, use it for swordsmanship, for marksmanship, and even archery. It absolutely did not lack in any aspect, it was all-encompassing.

“Pa pa”

There was a knock on the door.

Xie Aoyu put away the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword and opened the door to receive the gust.

It was Qin Doug who was smiling as he looked at him, “Your excellency acutally has a holy sword. Could you afford to give it to me?”

Xie Aoyu hearing this, his face suddenly changed.

[1] (TN: Hard to say if 重劍 is the fencing sword or the heavy sword. Kinda like SYWZ. For now, just picture him with both.)

[2] (TN: 葫芦画瓢 anyone got a better explanation/translation?)

[3] (TN: Sorry guys. Couldn't really translate this part. You might get the general idea though?)

Chapter 48

Seeing Qin Doug's kind look on his face, Xie Aoyu not only didn't feel any sense of intimacy, but instead felt a chill over his entire body. An unspeakable coldness.

The matter of the Lightning Spirit Sword, by logic only Qin Yueyi knew about it, others didn't. How did Qin Doug learn of it and even asked for it? This made anger gush out from the bottom of Xie Aoyu's heart.

Without speaking that he was Qin Yueyi's friend, he had saved Qin Yueyi and helped her obtain the Amethyst Spirit Water. Qin Doug shouldn't be asking for anything.

Xie Aoyu tried to make his face look as calm as possible.

But he knew, it couldn't be calm. After all, it was the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, and he had actually taken it from someone else's hands.

A Sage Level practitioner, that was an invincible practitioner that could even beat his father Xie Gan with just a single finger. It was something that he as a tiny Advanced Level person could hope to compare to.

"How did elder learn of it" Xie Aoyu asked.

Qin Doug smiled and pulled a pendant off his neck. The pendant gave off a faint light, "This is a divinity detector. As long as there's a holy weapon or better, as long as it hasn't been put inside a space ring, it can find it. Just now I happened to pass by your room and it told me that you have a holy sword." [\[1\]](#)

Divinity detector?

Xie Aoyu glanced at the pendant. The trace of doubt towards Qin Yueyi quietly disappeared. The disturbed feeling also mostly

disappeared.

After all, if it had been Qin Yueyi, then the friendship between the two would become estranged.

But since Qin Doug had pulled out this divinity detector, it made him realize once again how amazing and deep the background of the big clans were, those that had been there tens of thousands of years. At the peak of humanity's greatness, not only were they qi masters, there were other mysterious masters, for example beast warriors, alchemists, enchanters, spirit masters etc.

But later on a lot of the magical arts were lost in the flow of time.

But divinity detectors, water spells, were things for enchanters. The divinity detector was rumored to have been a small thing for enchanters during humanity's peak, and even though it was only a simple thing for them, divinity detectors were considered as magical and mysterious. One could only imagine what a significant item would be like, an incredibly mysterious item.

"Elder came really prepared for this Big Treasure Hunt Assembly, ah." Xie Aoyu faintly said. With this divinity detector, if there was a mysterious treasure, it would be easy to find it.

"Hehe, it's just a small toy." Qin Doug obviously didn't intend to continue that conversation. He glanced at Xie Aoyu's space ring, "I know that holy weapons are rare, the entire continent has very few, and the number of holy sword-types are even rarer. As long as younger brother agrees, if you have any request, I'll use all my strength to fulfill it."

Xie Aoyu said: "Elder please forgive me. I cannot trade this sword."

His voice wasn't loud, but it had a tone of decisiveness to it.

Qin Doug's eyebrows rose. He had originally thought that Xie Aoyu would at least consider it for a moment, then he would take out some valuables, but he hadn't imagined that Xie Aoyu would

refuse so quickly.

Speaking of weapons, Qin Doug had always wanted a holy sword, but never had a chance. Now that there was an opportunity in front of him, how could he let it go.

“Little brother, think about it again. I can give you anything you want, even some high level techniques or some high grade pills.” Qin Doug said.

Xie Aoyu shook his head and said: “No trade!”

The second he finished speaking, a chill spread out from Qin Doug’s body. Although the weather was currently summer, at the hottest time, Xie Aoyu still felt like the room’s interior temperature plummeted straight to below freezing. His entire body was shivering. It was indescribably cold.

Xie Aoyu felt as if he had fallen into an ice hole. [\[2\]](#)

Even so, he had a relationship with the cold, his skin naturally then formed the kind of aura an overlord dragon might have, contempt for the world, in order to resist.

The two didn’t exchange blows, but their auras collided.

Neither gave in.

Qin Doug’s eyes narrowed, secretly surprised. He could see that other than Xie Aoyu’s aura being a bit special, clearly his strength wasn’t high, but he still had an aura the level of a Sage Level practitioner.

“Little brother, I think I understand, this Heng Duan Mountain Range is spirit beast infested, has countless practitioners, and even more enemies. For a tiny Upper Advanced Level practitioner like you, gaining experience in the Heng Duan Mountain Range is very dangerous.” Qin Doug’s voice was calm and level, as if to remind Xie Aoyu, “If it becomes known to others that you’re carrying a

holy sword, you'll definitely suffer a disaster, and at that time, not only will your holy sword be taken, but even your life."

Shameless!

Xie Aoyu felt a surge of anger, but he knew that he couldn't show it. Due to Qin Doug's identity and status, he could only endure it.

This was clearly a threat.

"Life and death are decreed by fate. Since I chose to come to the Heng Duan Mountain Range for experience, I have already disregarded life and death." Xie Aoyu said in a strong tone.

"Good. Your words are good. Indeed you've got a lot of vigor." Qin Doug's eyes hinted a flash of cold, "But as far as I know, it seems that your father still has not woken up from his coma and is waiting for you to win the Continental Youth Competition, in order to win the Water of the Holy Spirit, right?"

Xie Aoyu suddenly lifted his head, staring at Qin Doug.

Qin Doug was gleefully looking at him.

"You investigated my background already." Xie Aoyu suppressed his anger.

"That's right. You were with Yueyi. Of course I investigated you, making sure you didn't have an ulterior motive. Fortunately, you didn't have any evil intentions." Qin Doug said.

"If there were evil intentions, then I'm guessing you would have made a move and stopped me?" Xie Aoyu couldn't help but say.

Qin Doug wasn't moved to anger, "That's right."

With such a simple confession, it made Xie Aoyu feel even more that Qin Doug's degree of shamelessness was amazing. His thoughts were racing. The Lightning Spirit Holy Sword could definitely not be traded, but if it wasn't traded, would Qin Doug forcibly seize it?

This thought process was quickly rejected. There was still Qin

Yueyi after all.

With the little devil Qin Yueyi's degree of cleverness, without speaking of Qin Doug trying to grab it in broad daylight, even if he tried to secretly take it, it would still be discovered. If he had to get the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword, it would be best to do it after they had parted.

That is to say, for now he was still safe.

But the second they parted, then Qin Doug would probably show his true face.

Then what could be done?

Xie Aoyu let out a bitter smile. He had long since known that large clans rarely talked about feelings, even the Xie family, this sort of small clan was the same, not to mention a super large family like the Qin clan.

Tell Qin Yueyi? This was an obviously stupid idea.

That would only bring him Qin Yueyi's contempt. After all, the relationship between him and Qin Yueyi compared to the relationship between Qin Doug and Qin Yueyi was incomparable.

"Have you decided?" Qin Doug gleefully said, "If you give me the holy sword, not only will I give you whatever you want, I'll even let you become one of our Qin family members. From then on your Xie family will become part of our Qin family's high branch and will inevitably rise." [\[3\]](#)

Xie Aoyu stared at Qin Doug for a while, then said: "No trade!"

Qin Doug hearing this, suddenly burst out with killing intent.

Before the aura was merely oppressive. Now it contained a chilling killing intent. He icily stared at Xie Ao Yu, "Are you sure about this?"

"Second uncle, you're also here, ah."

Just at this time, Qin Yueyi lively voice came in.

Qin Doug immediately retracted the killing intent, the smile on his face reemerged, his appearance seeming very good-natured. This smile could give others a very friendly impression, but Xie Aoyu felt an indescribable cold.

“Hehe, that’s right, second uncle should go to the front lobby.” Qin Doug smiled and patted Xie Aoyu’s shoulder as if nothing had happened, “Since you’ve come, why don’t you also come with us to the front lobby. I have some things to tell you, and will at the same time introduce this little brother to the others. For the younger brother, the more people who recognize him the better.”

If these words had been said before Qin Doug’s threats, then Xie Aoyu have been very glad, but since it was said now, it was equivalent to a threat.

Xie Aoyu said: “Then I’ll have to thank you Elder.”

Qin Yueyi shouted: “What is this? I wanted to go to the Big Treasure Hunt Assembly with old Xie to test our luck.”

“Hehe, this time after the Big Treasure Hunt Assembly, the auctioned items at the finale of the auction will attract many of the continent’s empires large clans to observe.” Qin Doug laughed.

[1] (TN: 神咒探测器divinity detector? Anyone got a better name?)

[2] (TN: Like for fishing in winter.)

[3] (TN: Maybe it should be translated as main branch 高枝?)

Chapter 49

“What is it?” Qin Yueyi asked.

Xie Aoyu also perked up his ears, he really wanted to know what could possibly attract so many people for the finale of the auction. He wanted to know what was so important that it would attract these clans.

Could it be a holy weapon?

Xie Aoyu then thought of Qin Doug trying to obtain his Lightning Spirit Holy Sword. He couldn't help but glance at Qin Doug with a hint of anger in his eyes.

“It's a fighting technique.” Qin Doug replied.

Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi were startled at the same time. The two looked at each other, feeling that it was a little unbelievable. Qin Yueyi couldn't hold back and asked: “Second uncle, what fighting skill could attract all these people?”

“Infinite Spinning Sword!” Qin Doug said word by word. [\[1\]](#)

“Never heard of it.” Qin Yueyi muttered.

As they were talking, they arrived at the front lobby.

Qin Doug sat at the head of the table, Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi sat at the position below that. Some people brought up tea, and after they left, Qin Doug then said: “This Infinite Spinning Sword is kind of similar to the once sensational Overlord Dragon Boxing.”

Xie Aoyu’s heart began to beat uncontrollably.

Since the creation of Overlord Dragon Boxing, among the sensations that it had caused, there was at least one time when the entire continent and its various forces fought over it. Rumors had it that even some of the most hidden and ancient clans became involved.

After all it was the masterpiece of a generation’s Grandmaster of Fighting Skills Ye Chao Feng. No matter who it was, if they obtained Overlord Dragon Boxing, they would all receive unimaginable benefits. In the end Xie Gan managed to obtain it.

And now that Xie Aoyu had the Overlord Dragon Boxing, even though it was not too long ago, he had just gained in an insight into the fist’s meaning, and he had already undergone unbelievable changes. One could only imagine the power of Overlord Dragon Boxing.

And now there suddenly popped up a fighting skill that could be compared with Overlord Dragon Boxing. How could it not make a person feel amazed.

And also this fighting skill seemed to be a sword technique.

“Is the Infinite Spinning Sword also a ten thousand year masterpiece of the Grandmaster of Fighting Skills Ye Chao Feng?” Qin Yueyi asked.

“Of course it isn’t. The Infinite Spinning Sword is the number one fighting skill of the continent’s number one clan of the three great clans, Southern Palace, for the past thousand years, its power is definitely not inferior to Overlord Dragon Boxing.” [\[2\]](#)

Sounds from outside the main hall could be heard.

Someone was walking over.

The person had dark face, his eyes were sunken, his nose was high, his age was at least over forty, he walked with a seeming majesty, and seemed dignified. Behind him was the person who Xie Aoyu had defeated, Chalice.

“His name is Greed, Chalice’s uncle, this time’s person in charge for the Pasa clan. His strength is comparable to my second’s.” Qin Yueyi seeing the person quietly explained to Xie Aoyu. As she spoke, she also grabbed Xie Aoyu’s hand. [\[3\]](#)

Xie Aoyu immediately felt something staring at him.

There was no need to ask who it was, it was obviously Chalice. He couldn’t laugh in his heart. This was done on purpose by the little devil.

“Little devil.” Xie Aoyu whispered.

Qin Yueyi bent her head as she looked at him.

“There’s a certain matter, I want you to me keep it a secret. You can’t tell anyone, even the people you’re closest to.” Xie Aoyu said in a very serious tone.

“What is it?” Qin Yueyi hadn’t seen Xie Aoyu have this sort of appearance very often, her face also stopped carrying the little devilish smile appearance.

It’s the Earth Escape Technique.” Xie Aoyu looked at Qin Doug from the corner of his eyes, “This fighting skill is my insurance. If you leak this information, then when you and I separate, for someone trying to gain experience in the Heng Duan Mountain Range alone, I’m afraid that I’m going to meet with disaster.”

Qin Yueyi patted her chest, and promised: Don’t worry. I definitely won’t say anything. This is a secret between the two of us.”

Obtaining Qin Yueyi’s promise, Xie Aoyu quietly let out a breath.

Qin Doug desired his Lightning Spirit Holy Sword. Once they separated, if a Sage Level practitioner made a move against him, there was no way he could fight back.

Thankfully there was the Earth Escape Technique.

This was his ace in the hole!

Seeing how Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi were pretending to not see him and were talking secretively, Chalice's heart was twitching. He secretly ground his teeth, clenched his fists, and quietly said, Adulterer, you just wait for this young master. Once you've fallen into the palm of this young master, see how this young master won't be the death of you two.

“Haha, Greed, it seems like you already have some understanding of the Infinite Spinning Sword.” Qin Doug said with a big smile.

Greed smiled indifferently and said, “Not quite yet Brother Qin.”

“I only know that the Infinite Spinning Sword for the past thousand years has had amazing power in the hands of the Southern Palace clan, but nothing specific was known. I was currently preparing to look for people to investigate this, to find where the Infinite Spinning Sword came from.” Qin Doug let Greed and the others sit down.

“Brother Qin probably wants to know if they had discovered any other belongings of the Southern Palace family right?” Greed's eyes narrowed, the corner of his lips curled up into a smile, “Us big families are all old acquaintances, Brother Qin why are you being so modest.”

Having his thoughts been seen through, Qin Doug didn't have any sort of angry expression, just smiled indifferently. That sort of

shrewdness made Xie Aoyu secretly raise his guard.

This person was definitely a crafty old man.

“I’ve heard that other countries have also sent people to come to the auction. I think that we should work together, against the others, and think of a way to first obtain the Infinite Spinning Sword. What do you think?” Qin Doug said.

“Of course.” Greed nodded his head and said, “Does Brother Qin have a plan?”

Without waiting for Qin Doug to speak, Chalice began to say: “Two uncles, I feel like this is a secret between our two big clans. It wouldn’t be appropriate to have outsiders here and would not help towards obtaining the Infinite Spinning Sword at all.” As he spoke, he deliberately glanced at Xie Aoyu.

Qin Yueyi fiercely glared at Chalice.

“The Infinite Spinning Sword is a collection of countless sword skills combined into a peerless fighting technique. With this fighting technique, for any clan, if they obtain this they will all receive indescribable benefits. If a clan has this sword skill and distributes it to their family members, then many of the top-class techniques they already have can evolve with the Infinite Spinning Sword. For such an important item, how could an outsider be involved.” Chalice said logically and callously, then coldly said, “Besides, what qualifications does an ignorant lowly peasant like him have to sit with our clans. It would tarnish the air here.”

Xie Aoyu's anger's reached its limit in an instant.

And Chalice was smiling while looking at him, provoking him.

But Xie Aoyu calmed down very quickly. He had just come out. Before when they had encountered Valencia's Imperial Crown Mercenary Group's small division, and had been forced to give the map, that was because there was a bigger opportunity later.

Then there was Qin Doug openly demanding the Lightning Spirit Holy Sword.

Now there was another run-in with Chalice. Since Chalice had reason his side, Xie Aoyu could only be patient, because in this world, only strength was logic.

If you have the power, you can speak the logic!

Without power, you can only admit defeat.

The continual experiences made Xie Aoyu desire for power even stronger. He secretly vowed that he would definitely become strong, and would definitely place these people beneath his foot!

But for now, he could only endure, coldly facing Chalice's ridicule.

“Little devil, let’s leave. I’ve heard that in the Big Treasure Hunt Assembly, lots of people can find top-quality items.” Xie Aoyu held down Qin Yueyi who has about to explode. He didn’t like having a female save his face.

Qin Yueyi fiercely glared at Chalice for a moment, then, without paying Greed any attention, turned and left.

“You uneducated trash. After seeing these two uncles, you’re just saying a word and leaving. Country bumpkin, peasant.” Chalice taunted.

Xie Aoyu paused for a second, then left.

Seeing the two figures from behind, especially Qin Yueyi purposely hugging Xie Aoyu’s arm, acting intimately, Chalice ground his teeth.

Greed’s lips were curled up into a smile as he looked at Qin Doug, “Brother Qin, that little brother doesn’t seem to be so simple.”

“That right. Able to stay calm at such a young age. That’s pretty rare even in our two big clans.” Qin Doug chuckled.

The already angry Chalice, hearing these two praise Xie Aoyu, became even angrier. His eyes stared at the disappearing backs filled with poison. After a moment, he recovered, “Two uncles, this little nephew is a little tired, I plan on going back to rest.”

Qin Doug and Greed naturally didn't say anything.

Chalice walked out quickly, catching up to Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi after a distance. Then, with a faint smile on his face, he disappeared around a corner. [\[4\]](#)

[\[1\]](#) (TN: Got a better translation? 无定飞旋刀)

[\[2\]](#) (TN: 南宫世 what do you guys think for that name? Later on they don't always have the 世 character so I didn't know if I should include it. 世 usually means world.)

[\[3\]](#) (TN: Chalice's uncle. 古利特. Greed? Gu Lite? Guilt?)

[\[4\]](#) (TN: Don't grow up to be like Chalice. And if you're already grown up, examine yourself and make sure you're not like Chalice.)

Chapter 50

The Big Treasure Hunt Assembly in truth was a test of a person's eyesight and luck because there were countless experts hidden in the Heng Duan Mountain Range there were also many ruins which had some top-quality items, although some were simple ordinary goods. Therefore for the people that came here, most of them were depending on their luck.

The Big Treasure Hunt Assembly started in a large hall. [\[1\]](#)

The area inside the hall had at least a few thousand coming and going, there was haggling going on and was very noisy. Scattered everywhere were a variety of items, large and small.

There were fighting techniques, weapons, heaven and earth spirit essence, pills, alchemist techniques, etc.

Standing at the entrance, seeing the crowded hall full of bustling people, the anger in Xie Aoyu's heart vanished. He didn't want to always be affected by these external emotions.

Stepping into the large hall, just in front of them was a counter that was selling weapons.

There was a variety of weapons on display, with all sorts of swords in every form; there was even a row of eye-catching gloves.

Xie Aoyu picked up a slightly yellow glove.

The appearance and weight of the glove was deceiving, it was at least 30 jin. What made Xie Aoyu feel even more surprised was that these gloves had the earth attribute. [\[2\]](#)

Gloves weren't the best choice to use against a person using a

weapon.

Since Xie Aoyu used Overlord Dragon Boxing, he naturally would use gloves, but the biggest reason why he chose the gloves were for the sake of the Medical Spirit Finger.

The Medical Spirit Finger on his left pinky had already changed colors. Although Ziyan had promised to return it to its normal pink color, but method had limits, and if he encountered a difficult battle then the pink color could easily come off. He didn't want to accidentally leak out the huge secret of the Medical Spirit Finger.

“What was this glove made out of?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“Naturally it's made from refined iron as its base and then mixed together with some other materials. For practitioners that like to fight in close combat, it's pretty good. Honorable sir, you have the earth attribute right? This pair of gloves really suits you.” That vendor immediately warmed up and recommended it.

Fitting the glove on, it fit very well.

Xie Aoyu said: “May I check how the quality is?”

“Here I have some weapons, give it a try.” The vendor pulled out an at least sixty or seventy jin heavy saber that gave off an ice cold light throughout the blade to Xie Aoyu. [\[3\]](#)

Xie Aoyu raised the heavy saber and chopped down on the earth attribute gloves.

“Peng!”

As the heavy sword made contact, it suddenly felt soft.

Looking at the glove, it was entirely intact without a trace of damage. Xie Aoyu then put on the gloves again and slid his hand

across the heavy saber's blade. It felt alright.

“How much is it?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“Ten gold.”

Xie Aoyu didn't haggle, pulling out ten gold and gave it to the vendor. With gloves in hand, he turned around to see that Qin Yueyi was currently talking with a young handsome man.

“Old Xie, hurry up and come over.” Qin Yueyi said with a delighted expression.

Seeing that happy expression, Xie Aoyu's brain suddenly came up a single sentence: Sucks to be that guy!

The time he had spent with Qin Yueyi was less than a month, but he deeply understood that this little devil's ability to cause trouble when there were no problems. When she was about to cause trouble for others, she would have this expression.

“Come, let me introduce you.” Qin Yueyi pointed at the handsome man, “This is Tian Luo's Desai clan's patriarch's son Yasuke. He came here to participate in the auction.” [\[4\]](#)

Yasuke stretched out his hand and said with a smile: “Yasuke.”

“Xie Aoyu.” Xie Aoyu smiled and said.

The two were now acquainted.

Yasuke gave off a different first impression than Xie Aoyu's first meeting with Chalice. Chalice at that time had that expression of disgust that would leak out. Yasuke was always trying to keep a smile on his face.

As if he was friendly with everyone.

Except there was a bit of an arrogance in his eyebrows. [\[5\]](#)

“The gloves that sir just bought was ten gold right? It doesn’t seem like it.” Yasuke’s eyes settled on Xie Ao Yu’s recently purchased gloves.

“That’s true, ah.” Qin Yueyi reached out and grabbed the gloves, “Old Xie, did you buy these gloves for me?”

Xie Aoyu hesitated, but after Qin Yueyi blinked at him a few times, he immediately followed up and said: “Aren’t there better gloves here? Then I’ll buy that to give to you.”

“I’ve already come here once. There aren’t any better gloves here. They’re all that kind of garbage.” Yasuke lightly said, “But there are a lot of materials here to use to create better gloves. I can scrape some together for Miss Yueyi.”

“Okay. Then I’ll have to thank you.” Qin Yueyi smiled.

“To be able to assist Miss Yueyi would be Yasuke’s honor.” Yasuke smiled, which had a great attractiveness for women. In addition to that was his noble air. He was definitely a lady-killer.

Finished speaking, Yasuke went straight to a counter.

Behind him Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi’s eyes met, at the same time leaking out delighted expressions.

Without any need for words, they knew what they should do.

Xie Aoyu also knew, this Yasuke and Chalice’s objectives were the same, both were Qin Yueyi’s suitors. Of course it was also for the sake of the clan’s bonding.

“I want this largest piece of gold iron wood. No need for change.” Yasuke in front of the vendor picked up a half meter long piece of wood. He gave the vendor a few dozen pieces of gold, then he turned and said, “Does the sir know what can be this gold iron wood be used for in making gloves?”

“I don’t.” Xie Aoyu shrugged.

Yasuke smiled and explained: “Gold iron wood is incomparably tough. Since it has wood attribute, and with the gold entwined in it, it increases the gloves durability. For the sir to not know isn’t anything embarrassing. This is just a bit of useful trivial knowledge.”

He then walked to another vendor.

He grabbed three Flower Rain Stones and placed down some gold. Yasuke once again explained, “These Flower Rain Stones are usually used by people to construct armor. What they don’t know is that inside the Flower Rain Stones are a type of metal, though the quantity is very small. Through a special refining technique, once it has been refined, it can be used to upgrade your gloves by multiple levels.

After that, Yasuke was also eloquent.

Xie Aoyu couldn’t help but secretly admire this guy’s broad knowledge. Even though he had read many books, there was still a lot he didn’t know.

Although he considered himself well-read, his entire knowledge of books came from the Xie family’s book collection as well as some ancient texts from Langya City. Comparing how well read he was against Yasuke who was from a large clan, the two weren’t even on the same level.

Facing Yasuke’s constant stream of words, Xie Aoyu was not only not angry; instead, he looked at him in a funny manner because Qin Yueyi had an expression of constant admiration.

The more expression they had, the more excited Yasuke became. He began speaking with even more vigor.

Without pausing, Yasuke collected a couple dozen things, other than the things everyone knew about, the rest were all top class items.

“These are the items you should make gloves out of. If there’s a

high-level enchanter that use these things to make the gloves, I imagine that while it won't be holy equipment, it will still be superb equipment." Yasuke delightedly said.

Qin Yueyi reached out her hands to receive it, "Thank you so much."

"To be able to help Miss Yueyi is my honor." Yasuke happily said, very satisfied with his performance. He had an unspoken opinion, which is when dealing with women, he was an expert. The pitiable Chalice could only admit that he was out of luck compared to Yasuke.

"Really?" Qin Yueyi sweet beautiful face was full of surprise.

"Of course. For Miss Yueyi, whether heading into a mountain of knives or a sea of fire, Yasuke would die a hundred times without hesitation." Yasuke patted his chest, speaking in a respectable manner.

Qin Yueyi said: "I want that bracelet."

"Alright, I'll buy it." Yasuke immediately went over to that stall.

Qin Yueyi immediately gave those materials that could create the best gloves to Xie Aoyu, "Do you want anything? Quickly say it. There's someone giving it to us for free, don't not take advantage of this."

Placing those materials into his space ring, Xie Aoyu swept over the surroundings, "I haven't spotted anything at this moment."

At that time, Yasuke had already bought that bracelet.

"It's really pretty" Qin Yueyi grabbed the bracelet. She then pointed to a stall on the left, "I want that pendant. Oh, it's so expensive, ah. It's five hundred gold."

"It's only five hundred gold. I'll buy it." Yasuke quickly said.

"Ah, this necklace isn't bad. It would look good on my white skin."

“Wao! This ring is so pretty, ah.”

“Ha, this is something good. This is a top-class armband, ah.”

“Hey, a top-class hairpin. It’s not only pretty, it can even be used for hidden weapons.”

“Oh, it’s too beautiful. This coral sword is too beautiful. It’s too charming. It suits this beauty the best.” [\[6\]](#)

[\[1\]](#) (TN: I took some liberties here with the translation here... 淘宝大会是一个大厅)

[\[2\]](#) (TN: 30 jin approximately 33 pounds)

[\[3\]](#) (TN: 66-77 pounds.)

[\[4\]](#) (TN: Desai 德赛 , Yasuke 亚什科)

[\[5\]](#) (TN: When that eyebrow game too strong.)

[\[6\]](#) (TN: I ain’t saying she’s a gold digger, but she ain’t dating no broke... I’ll stop there.)

Chapter 51: A Dead End

In just twenty minutes with Qin, thirty items have been purchased. The cheapest items were worth more than one hundred gold coins, while the most expensive reached more than nine hundred gold coins.

Yasuke has spent thousands of gold coins.

These figures, for ordinary people or for a family of three, could let them live comfortably for a lifetime. However, according to this little devil, this is still not enough, there will always be more .

“Wow! You’re so talented Yasuke!” Qin Yueyi expressed her admiration .

“Miss Yueyi, you praise me too much. I just wanted to see the books in order to understand and explore the deeper things.” Yasuke is indeed very talented, being able to explain in detail about every item they find.

Qin Yueyi gently stroked Xiao Bai’s hair and asked, “Xiao Bai, what about you? Do you want something too, like clothes?”

“Yiya!”

Xiao Bai looked at Yasuke with his shining eyes full of intensity.

Xiao Bai, who is already adorable originally, appeared twice as adorable than usual when he does that expression.

“Of course, as Miss Yueyi’s magical pet, he needs the best clothes and items, which are not just beautiful on the outside, but also suitable to use too.”

Yasuke looked in every direction within the large hall and finally his eyes fell on a booth located on the east side of the hall. “I have found something that is very suitable for Xiao Bai.”

Qin Yueyi looked excited to hear it and ask, “What is it?”

“Let me lead you there.” Yasuke said with a smile.

Xie Aoyu, while following them from behind, secretly shook his head and can’t help but think about this pitiful person.

Qin Yueyi, on the other hand, was actually full of enthusiasm.

Making fun of fellow human beings will always be the thing she loves the most.

As soon as the three of them arrived at the stall, Yasuke picked up a seven color feather, which had seven different colors, and a small jar.

“How much is all of this?” Yasuke asked.

“800 gold coins.” The stall keeper stated his price.

Yasuke knitted his eyebrows, and without saying anything, he took out 800 gold coins to pay the fee.

“What is that?” Qin Yueyi asked Yasuke.

When Xie Aoyu saw the seven color feather, he already knew what it was, and he couldn't help but see Yasuke with a new light, as the guy really has a wide range of knowledge.

Yasuke said with a smile, “This small jar contains the blood of the Seven Color Hawk and this is its seven color feather.”

“Seven Color Hawk? I have heard that it is only an intermediate lower ranked, preliminary evil spirit beast.” Said Qin Yueyi while bringing her delicate eyebrows up, somehow looking slightly disappointed.

“Yes, the ranks of the Seven Color Hawk are very low, however, its blood and its seven color feathers are beneficial to white spirit beasts like Xiao Bai.” Yasuke said with a smile on his face while picking up the seven color feather. “This seven color feather belongs only to the Seven Color Hawk and is its life essence. If this seven color feather is stained with the blood of Seven Color Hawk, and then smudged on the body of the white spirit beast, it could change the physique of the white spirit beast by making it have a metamorphosis, which enables them to perform more than one magic at a time.”

Qin Yueyi stared with a surprise color on her big eye, "There is such a thing?"

Hearing this, Xie Aoyu slightly nodded, because he has seen and knew that Xiao Bai was able to use all kind of magic. Therefor, he concluded that it is the variation of evil spirit beast, and then he turned to looked for some old books.

"Here it is, young lady." Yasuke gave Qin Yueyi the seven color feather and the Seven Color Hawk's blood.

"Oh my! Really? Thank you very much!" Qin Yueyi accepted the different items.

Yasuke said: "You're too polite, Miss Yueyi." He looked out at the sky and said, "It's noon already. How about we go for lunch?"

"It's no good. I promised to have lunch together with Uncle." Qin Yue said with a subtle hint of tactful rejection.

"That's really regrettable."Yasuke said, feeling disappointed. "How about this, if young lady want to, tonight, I am more than willing to be your tour guide, to enjoy the beautiful night scenery of the forest in the city?"

"Thishow about, if I have space in my time, I will look for you?"Said Qin Yueyi politely.

Yasuke, with the thought of how unexpected it was for the young lady to have her own initiative to personally look for him; he felt suddenly elated. “Really?!”

Qin Yueyi nodded seriously, and then said, “Certainly, because your manner of speaking is good, it was so charmingly humorous. I am fully satisfied with your performance.”

“Miss Yueyi...”

“Moreover, you also have the virtue of the true aristocrat, which is hard to come by.” Qin Yueyi continued with her compliments.

Yasuke could not control his excitement and finally revealed the color on his face. “I will make sure to not disappoint you, young lady! I will give my best in the future!”

“You must work really hard, because I really favor you so much.” Qin Yueyi replied.

“I will!” Yasuke clenched his fist.

“That is good!” Qin Yueyi said with emotion. “There are really few men like you, so I will consider letting you be one of the members of my very own male harem.”

“?!!!”

The excited Yasuke suddenly felt like he was struck by lightning, and uttered a scream that resounded through the hall.

“Have some self control as an aristocrat will you!” Said Qin Yueyi to educate him. “For me to consider you as my harem prince again, you must not be excessively excited like this.”

“Harem.....” Said Yasuke as his handsome face twisted and distorted.

“Right! To have a big male harem is my lifetime ideal!” Said Qin Yueyi while raising her clenched fists up in the air as if to announce that such a dream was ordinary.

“I don’t want to live anymore!” Yasuke covered his head and ran away.

When he ran out of their sight, Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi looked at each other and laughed heartily.

Xie Aoyu, while pointing his finger at Qin Yueyi, laughed and said, “Little devil, you really are the devil!”

“Well, the old man is forcing me to marry these so-called children of the nobility, but whether I like them or not, I’ll just use my own way to solve it myself.” Qin Yueyi proudly said. “Chalice and Yasuke were the two hardest candidates to deal with, while others were easier to cope with.”

They left the large hall to return to their homes. On the way, Qin took out a bunch of things that Yasuke had purchased. There are some with practical value and some that are purely aesthetic, but the price is high, because Qin Yueyi deliberately made Yasuke spend his money on pricey items.

They started to divide the booty. [\[1\]](#)

There are many practical items, after all, Qin Yueyi was from a respected family background and being blessed with the good eyesight, caught the gauntlet, which was very much to Xie Aoyu's liking.

Even though the gauntlet cannot be said as 'very good', it is actually high-quality goods.

Initially, Qin Yueyi noticed that this gauntlet was good in terms of the size and weight. Since she personally wanted it for him, Xie Aoyu would not be polite. He grasped the gauntlet, and then place it above his left arm.

Xie Aoyu's gauntlet can be used as an offensive weapon, and definitely useful as to shield the attack of the sharp weapons. It protects almost the entire left arm, while his right hand holds the holy spirit sword to attack.

There is also one pair of knee pads.

“What kind of kneepads are these that conforms to the natural

disposition of the devil so much?” Qin Yueyi asked as she took up the two kneepads to give to Xie Aoyu.

Xie Aoyu inspected the kneepads while grinning. The knee pads are good quality and have a row of small, sharp spikes. Each spike, while not considered long, will cause decent damage, especially if it bumps into your other leg.

It's no wonder that Qin Yueyi thought these knee pads were demonic in nature. He did not hesitate to put the knee pads on, because even if it if bumped into his other leg, it would not cause him any harm.

“Pa Pa Pa.....”

While the two were busy dividing the booty, the sound of applause came from behind.

Xie Aoyu turned back to look, only to find, “Chalice!”

Standing behind him is another one of his personal servants and all of his henchman, totalling up to 15-16 people.

Meanwhile, at the other end of the street, there are more than 10 people blocking the way.

“Guess what? You both will beg for my mercy!” Chalice clench his teeth.

“Chalice! What do you want to do?!” Xie Aoyu glanced at all of them. There are a few powerful masters, but there are many more low level henchman.

If there is only one or two, he really didn’t care.

However, this looks like a small army!

With just him and little devil alone, it seems like there is no chance of winning at all.

“You ask me what I want to do?!” Chalice looked towards Xie Aoyu furiously. ”You fucking wild boy! How dare you humiliated me. I, your father, will make you taste the consequences of messing with me!”

Qin Yueyi got angry. “Chalice! Instead of having a one-on-one match, you shamelessly decided to bring numbers against two people! Are you a man or what?”

“Shut up!”

Chalice roared like a madman. Since he was defeated by Xie Aoyu’s single punch, and even the summoned Four-Armed Magic Ape was scared to death, he wanted to hide while trying to find a chance for him to get even.

“You little bitch! Wait for me to fuck you later!”

Qin Yueyi heard that and flew into a rage.

She is mischievous and cunning for sure, but after all, given her identity, who would dare to humiliate her?

Xie Aoyu quickly stopped her and said, “Chalice! She is the beloved daughter of the Qin. Don’t you fear the retaliation of Qin?”

“Fear? Ha! You really do not understand anything, huh? Such an ignorant country bumpkin who knows nothing but shit.” Replied Chalice with mocking tone. “She is the beloved daughter of the Qin. So what? Would they be willing to have a strife with my family? Also, if I rape her, the Qin’s most possible solution is to let her marry me. Like this, our two respected families can walk in the same place together. Ha! This is how it is. I will get what I want!”

Xie Aoyu knows what Chalice just said is the truth.

In a big family like this, family interest takes the utmost priority. It is not possible to get the family into conflicts with another family just for the sake of one person.

Anyone who saw this knows this is a dead end.

Chapter 52: Battles

Trapped in a dead end, Xie Aoyu did not feel panic at all, even he was a bit puzzled for his heart to not have the slightest trace of panic.

He just calmly look at Chalice who is there screaming.

“Little devil,hear me out..I will fight them to distract their attention, and then when you find the opportunity, take that chance and run away.”Xie Aoyu urged, “Only when you manage to run away safely, only then, we can be safe.”

“How about you?” It was Xie Aoyu that Qin Yueyi was worried about.

Xie Aoyu smiles, “It would be much easier for me to escape, so no worries and do not forget our secrets.”

Secret?

Qin Yueyi’s heart was moved, and at the same time her worries started to fade away as she remembered Xie Aoyu mysterious technique, Earth Escaping Technique, which can make him disappeared without a trace in a split second, making it seems impossible for people to block his path, she knows that if she stays here, she would be just a burden.

Scanning the group of people that Chalice has brought,Xie Aoyu

can't help but feel somehow relieved, and a little bit lucky, because of this auction, it seems regardless how large the family is, they would only sent one elder to led out the juniors to see the world, and those elders are just on Earth level, where most of the supreme expert choose to not follow and stay behind. Even so, with nearly twenty of his realm or a level higher, the combining power is enough to compare with ten high supreme masters.

“What’s wrong,. have you lost your will to fight back, you ignorant being.”Chalice ferociously said.

Xie Aoyu coldy said: “Killed one not to compensate, kills two to gain, had the opportunity, I will make sure to drew you from back to front.”

“Fuck, anyone who dare threaten me deserves to die.”Chalice is in an uncontrollable rage, loudly shouted to clear the way, ” Remember to not kill him, because the right to end his live is on me, I will be the one to give him the final blow!”

“Kills!”

Kazo rushes ahead.

Other people also rushed forward leaving no one behind to protect Chalice who is overconfident that he did not need others to protect him as he do not believe that Xie Aoyu can run away or do anything to him.

With more than 30 people, the combined level of strength is uneven.

Even if it is the lower level spirit, it makes no different because the combined strength, and some of them even have good legs, so this immediately forming three groups of people with different speed and strength.

Rush at the front was a short skinny men, followed by Kazo.

The lower level realms are in the back.

Xie Aoyu eyes become cold, a boundless imposing aura erupts instantaneously from his body, which is similar to the prestige of a king, a result from his new deep profound understanding of Overlord Dragon Fist!

If I cannot do it, who can!

Xie Aoyu's cold eyes sweep Kazo indifferently.

Kazo who have fought with Xie Aoyu before, were frighten and his complexion become pale, that imposing aura were able to absorbs deep through a person heart and soul, making him feel incomparable alarmed and afraid.

His seemingly healed chest wounds seemed to be aching suddenly, which shows how Kazo's body and mentally, unconsciously learn his lesson.

Xie Aoyu has expected this effect, his body remain motionless, and then he go to the side of the quickest short thin person and launching his fist, the fist “If I can not do it,who can” of Overlord Dragon Fist!

Previously when Xie Aoyu defeated Kazo, although he also used the same punch,but Qin Yueyi, Chalice and others have not seen it clearly, only Qin Degu noticed it

At this time when he displays the same technique once again, everyone saw a shade of an image of giant fist formation.

“Roar!”

That punch shade from out of the blue, half the air burst, forming a vicious dragon shadow, it is like a dragon was born, ferociously wanting to eat the short skinny man.

The short skinny man level is a spirit lower position, but does not mean that he is in the front, he is the strongest among his levels, it is because he excels in the speed, therefore he is quicker than others.

Seeing Xie Aoyu’s punch, he swung his sword to resist.

But then, he felt that there was an unspeakable force, suddenly there is a “click” sound, and the sword burst into pieces, innumerable fragments breaks into his body under the tyrant of

the Overlord Dragon Fist impact, and the short skinny man were violently killed at the scene, his corpse was thrown by the vigor fist impact, and the impact numerously pounding the two people behind.

Unable to block from being pounded,the two responded with pitiful yells sound, and fell down.

A fist that knocks down three people.

And the three is on the spirits-lower level.

Xie Aoyu turned his body in flash,towards Kazo, while shouting: “Kazo, this time you will die without a burial ground!”

Kazo previously has been defeated by Xie Aoyu, a completely disastrous defeat.Witnessing Xie Aoyu unparalleled invincible might, when he saw how the devil single handedly kills the three spirit lower level master, he who have been frighten by all of this, turns his tail around to escape unexpectedly.

Actually the enemy has more advantage in terms of numbers, true if this is a one on one combat,there's no match, but they can holds that overwhelming superiority of his by taking full advantage of their numbers, even Xie Aoyu won't be able to resist such collaboration attacks. Kazo who has been traumatized by Xie Aoyu, cannot think rationally, allowed the fear to control his mind and run away, thus created a series of reactions among the people who follow him.

The spirit lower level master who follows Kazo on the side were the one who is startled first.

Somehow he knew that he is no match for the monster in front him, subconsciously wanted to run away, but some of people have different opposite reactions than him, it shows how even their thoughts are not unified.

Xie Aoyu is bullying.

Two spirit levels lower master went mad and rushed forward.

Two two swords attacked from two directions towards Xie AoYu's chest, back, and ribs.

Even though Xie Aoyu is arrogant, knowing that the two are spirit lower levels, he still not dare to fight recklessly, let alone if the side also have other high level masters.

His body, crashed into one of their arms.

" Taste this! " And the man behind him trying to stab him in the back with the sword, Xie Aoyu spun, block the sword with his hand resulting him to bleed, and while tolerate the pain, he fiercely smashed that man's body with his fist. "Bang ! " This spirit-level master was smart and manage to pull back but still his left arm by Xie Aoyu's punch, causing the arm to break on the spot, the other guy on the back seeing this chance, trying to fiercely kick on Xie Aoyu crotch. Xie Aoyu lift up his top left knee to block the kick.

He just want to resist that kick but forgot that on his knee, there are still wicked spikes knee pads, and the result, the man screamed in pain when his foot pierced with those sharp spikes on the knee pads .

Seeing this, Xie Aoyu is suddenly glad when he remembers that the knee pads and the gauntlets that this Yasuke gives are not in vain, but before that, the other spirit level master who his arm were broken by Xie Aoyu before, try to seize the chance to cut him with the sword from the left.

Xie Aoyu does not look, he just take one step, lift the left arm forward, to resists and block the attack, while lift the right leg, line on top to his lower abdomen.

“You courts death!” This spirit level person sneers while slashing his long sword.

If he use his sword earlier, even if Xie Aoyu attack, he can also cut Xie Aoyu arm, taking advantage of his sword being longer.

“..what.!”

“Puff!”

Different sound comes out, the spiritual lower level master face was green.

Xie Aoyu without even looking at him, because he knew this guy is dead, given by that unfair play by that wicked sharp spikes knee pads stabs on his stomach, it would be very difficult to for him to stay alive.

He only has a small wound, in exchange for the victory, Xie Aoyu still cannot believe, because it seems so easy, certainly that with Kazo being scared out of his wits, he have less one rival, but what got his feel delighted is how functional and useful that knee pads and the gauntlet in the battle, giving him a cruel advantage toward the enemy.

In one breath, the other side losing six spirit level slave master.

Two of them were killed and one seriously injured, one surrender due scared out his wits(Kazo), and two people were injured, and such situation left Qin Yueyi and Chalice dumbfounded.

Xie Aoyu seems to be far more powerful than they thought he would be.

“Trash, idiot, fool, rush forward together, do not separate, teamed up to kill him!” Chalice growled.

In order to have a shot in situation like this, need sufficient preparation.

“Kazo, you bastard, if you don’t want to die on my hand, then don’t make me!” Chalice shouts at Kazo, abusively.

Pitiful Kazo can only lift his bitter face, prepare to strike again with his sword.

Obeying their leader order, more than 20 people, including spirit lower level masters, spirit high level masters, besiege on one person.

The fresh breeze wind moves, blows Xie Aoyu uncombed hair, he pulled out the sword, ready to have a deadly battle, and then his voice echoing on the battle street, loud and clear: “Out of my way or.....kill by me!”

Chapter 53: Returns To The Original Self

Every corner of battlefield surrounded with an aura that makes everyone feel like harder to breathe, this high-energy imposing aura, Xie Aoyu at the time looked like a War God that looks so majestic and heroic, while holding the holy sword on his hand, and his cold fierce eyes glance able to make all their enemies feel shivers on their spines.

He is facing towards Kazo this time, and lift up his holy sword high.

His understanding of Overlord Dragon Fist's If I cannot do it, who can, started to revolved.

By using the holy sword as the carrier, to fiercely display the majestic might of the fist through it, this is now Xie Aoyu's most formidable offensive force.

“Out of my wayor kill by me!” Xie Aoyu looks like a madman, raising his sword and prepared to strike.

Brush!

The sword glows, with a light similar to electric light, able to make everyone's eyes blind briefly.

The cold yet dazzling brightness made everyone cannot help but to close their eyes and when they open their eyes, they see that

there's a dragon roaring from the sword emitted light.

“Boom! ”

That seemingly dragon broke into the crowd.

It seems like it pierced through all obstacles, and all the experts that were hit by it, collapse on the ground, it feels like being pushed by a strong earthquake, leaving a channel in the middle.

And that ground in the middle have dented ravines with a depth of nearly one meter.

There are lots of painful cries, Kazo who was faster than everyone, was not injured, but unfortunately not everyone were lucky like him, from the spirit lower level master to the High level spirit master, there's no one that can match the ferocious and majestic power of Overlord Dragon Fist that was integrated into the holy sword, which is now more powerful, stronger than using the fist.

“Kazo!” Xie Aoyu shouted.

“..!!”

Kazo trembles in fear, the epee sword(a fencing sword) in his hand losing the grip and fall down not on the ground but on his foot instead, making his eyes almost pop out because of the pain. After all it is an epee sword with more than 70 Jin weight that

smashed on his foot, and the guy have no choice but to screamed painfully while holding his feet.

“You two! “Xie Aoyu suddenly looked towards the two spirits level masters from the other side of the street.

He instantly vanished as soon as he lets his voice heard.

Earth Escaping Technique!

“Where is he? “The two men rubbed their eyes and dumbfounded.

“Here. ”

Sound of blizzard coming from the back, the cold chill makes them feel that their whole body broke into sweats, they almost spontaneously turn to leap forward, trying to escape.

Xie Aoyu ghostly appeared in front of them, the holy sword spread a cold chill, sweeping over the battlefield.

Even with the strength stronger than Kazo, the two men still feeling helpless. Xie Aoyu’s Earth Escaping Technique is too mysterious, nobody would expect that there was such marvellous technique. If their strength stronger, naturally it easy to dodge, but unfortunately, they are not.

The holy sword slash across the two bodies.

Red blood splatters from both of their necks.

Two corpses landed in unison.

Xie Aoyu slowly looked up at the other two spirit slower led by the high level master.

“Ringing! Clatter! ”

The result is they were frighten by the looks of his cold blooded eyes, they put down the weapons, turned and ran, right now no one dare to stay, all were gone.

“We won! We won!..hey,Chalice,don’t run!”Qin Yueyi suddenly saw Chalice who is running away, immediately took out daggers and rushed up, shouts,” Chalice, this little beauty will pay to you back ten folds today! ”

Seeing Chalice try to run away, Xie Aoyu gets angry and hate Chalice to the core, he determined to not ever let him get his way that easily, so he uses the Earth Escaping Technique, consecutively, for five times, and arrived at the distance of beyond more than 50 meters, blocking Chalice’s way.

“You, what do you want to do. ” Chalice become panic and restless.

Xie Aoyu do not answer but walk towards Chalice, step by step.

Chalice is constantly retreating.

“My father is the Pasa family householder, if you lay a finger on me, my father would make you want to die.” Chalice thought given their identities, he will escape from death.

Indeed, this is the capital.

Sometimes with just you alone would not be enough, the world is not fair, Xie Aoyu again experienced the true meaning behind these words.

To get the world to respect them, they will need to have enough power.

“Are you scared now, just let me go, I will not care about you killing my people.” Chalice who thought that the reason XieAoyu is not talking because he was afraid, laughed proudly.

Xie Aoyu glanced at those corpses,,thinking the possibility for Chalice to seeks revenge for the slightest grievance, this person is easily offended,not the type to forget and forgive, and so to avoid the future from being troublesome, he lifted his foot.

Chalice thought he has escape death, but what he don't know is

that Xie Aoyu would against his prediction.

The results is his body were rolling in the air, being kicked by Xie Aoyu.

“Super sword castration! ”

A clear, female voice rang.

No way?

Xie Aoyu heart shakes and he looked up, see the little devilQin Yueyi wielding the stiletto while grinning wickedly, and strike on the private parts between his legs...

“Poof! ”

The blood spatters in all directions..

Between Chalice’s legs, there’s a deep red..

“..aaa..!!! ”

Chalice clutching his crotch, his eyes were wide open, there’s a blue vein on his forehead, his face pale, a second after, he fell to the ground, and fainted.

“Well, this is the invincible sword technique that took this young beautiful lady several years to practice.” Qin Yueyi knows that Chalice was the son of Partha main family home, but yet don’t even have the slightest fear and casually wipe the blood on the broken sword with Chalice’s body. [\[1\]](#)

Looking at Qin Yueyi, Xie Aoyu came to have a sudden insight

A person needs to quickly grasp the meaning of something.

I’m always too self constrained, too concerned about what others might think, and such, only resulting me to narrowly move forward, I need to release myself, I need to let myself to get loose, to return to my original condition, I must let loose the heart, that was the proper way, the correct path..

Returns to the original condition.

Release myself.

When he thinks through all of these, Xie Aoyu felt that his whole body was relaxed, he even felt a faint change of this mood, are related to Overlord Dragon fist.

He felt like as if he has grasped a thorough understanding of the key for Overlord Dragon Fist.

Xie Aoyu since the age of seven, because he unable to practice

resulting for him to feel lot of pressure, and then he saw how his father running around so hard to find a cure for him, after that his father,Xie Qan has been in coma for three years, and then comes the bullies, the ridicules, so on, all kinds of pressures, humiliation, seems to be flooded in his heart, it almost overwhelmed him.

Although he looks like he doesn't care, in fact, deep down he still care about all these very much.

Because of this, that he was always felt depressed.

Long-term depression will cause him collapse sooner or later.

Now thanks to Qin Yueyi unique characters, her being carefree, her unbridled and open heart, make Xie AoYu was also willing to let go this big ego of his.

At this moment, Xie Aoyu really felt that he has become one with himself.

He is Xie Aoyu.

“What’s this? Old Xie, I seem to sense that you have changed.” Said Qin Yueyi while tilts her head.

Xie Aoyu knew that this was because he could no longer be chained by those constraints, and pressures, smiled: “It probably because I have become more handsome each day. ”

“Wek! ”

Qin Yueyi looks like she wants to vomit.

“Don’t vomit, it seems like we will be having a visit from the victims families.” Said Xie Aoyu.

Qin Yueyi turned to look, and find that was Chalice’s uncle, Greed, and accompanying him were Qin Doug, they got together to discuss how to get the indefinite swirl-knife.

“Chalice! ”

Greed received news that Chalice siege failed with his people at most, being ass-whipped, but now he found Chalice, unconscious with blood between his legs.

“What is this? “Qin Doug thundered.

Xie Aoyu lightly replied: “Chalice wants to against us, so I’m giving him lessons for him to remember for a while.”

Qin Doug eyebrows furrow, he looked Xie Aoyu, and felt a slightly strange feeling like Xie Aoyu does not fear him, not like before when he threatened him, at least he can felt some fear from him, but now it seems like he is a new person. What’s the reason for this change? Is this the reason for Qin Yueyi to find him

reliable?

“A lesson? A lesson,like this? “Greed angrily shouts.

“You can shouts how much you wants, but this little beauty still suppressed plenty of injustice in her heart, having no place to vent it. “Qin Yueyi shows her strong side again, adding oils to Greed’s rage.

“Yueyi,do not be rude. ” Elder Qin Doug frowned.

Qin Yueyi said: “This little beauty today feels like she wants to be rude! ”

So direct, making even elder Qin Doug feel to lose face, but he know clearly that, once this small aunt angry, not to mention him, even his brother, the Qin family owner cannot handle her.

That Qin Yueyi status in Qin Jia, is a bully.

“You!” “Greed was furious.

“Don’t ask this young beautiful woman how this happened.” Qin Yueyi raised the stiletto and walk, ” You should ask that idiot fool nephew of yours, he actually dare to wants to sully this beautiful body,he even bring people to harm this beauty, so lucky for him this beauty decided to just castrated him, and you still not satisfied? Now this beauty has to dirty her hand to kill him.”As she finish her talk, she lifts the sword to chop Chalice’s neck.

Seeing this, Greed feel incredibly anxious. He quickly grabs Chalice, his eyes look at her with rage.

“What are you looking at. “Qin Yueyi wielding a stiletto to stab Greed’s eyes,” your nephew is not a good thing, and you are not any good bird. ”

Xie Aoyu pats his fore head, he just wanted to say, little devil, you are too awesome!

[\[1\]](#) T/N: Chu Feng female version, anyone?

Chapter 54: Conspiracy

Brush! Brush!

That three consecutively strikes, actually made Greed to draw three step back. He does not dare to hit back, afraid what others would think of him, bullying younger generation, let alone with Qin Doug beside him.

“Little Aunt,stop!” Even though Qin Doug said that, he still does not want to personally join the battle.

Qin Yueyi actually ignore him,and keep on attacking.

She launch more than ten strike consecutively, each strike become more vicious and ruthless as it does not target Greed’s eyes anymore, instead the focus is actually on the spot between his leg, it is definitely a devil attack.

“Little devil, come on, let’s get out from here. “Xie Aoyu know it’s better to quit when you are ahead, because a really nasty Greed is bad for everyone. [\[1\]](#)

Qin Yueyi looking unwillingly, said: “Greed, bear this little beauty words, this matter are still not done yet! ” She pulled the stiletto, and then she trampled Chalice’s injured spot by foot and casually walks away.

“I, I, I.....” Greed opened his mouth three times but didn’t say

anything.

He feels really depressed and helpless!

Qin Doug was also forcing a smile, it must be said, what Qin Yueyi did was very excessive indeed, but the way Chalice done his deeds does made him furious, not to mention if something really happen to Qin Yueyi, he would be beaten half dead by their family ancestor.

“Greed, it’s okay..your nephew also is to blame for why this happened.” Said Qin Doug, try to calm Greed’s heart a bit.

Greed who is also aware of Qin Yueyi status within the Qin family, looked at Chalice and then with a forced smile, he said: “This boy is indeed at fault, but he is after all is my brother’s biological son, Qin Doug bro, you also knows that Chalice is a waste, but his mother is actually the woman who my brother loves the most, and for that reason he values him, so much that he willing to find a four arm ape beast to have a contract with Chalice’s soul..but now with his current state..Qin Doug bro, I have something that I want to know.”

“What is it?” Elder Qin Doug asked.

“That small devil of yours, I would not dare to provoke.” Greed’s eyes looks cold, “..but that Xie Aoyu, are you protecting him as well?”

Qin Doug heart start to pounding, he wanted that Holy Sword which is currently in the hands of that Xie Aoyu boy , but because of the relationship between Qin Yueyi and Xie Aoyu , he had to bury his desire. However, when he heard what Greed said, an idea started to emerge in his mind.

.....

Their both have returns to their residence.

Xie Aoyu and Qin Yueyi continued to divide the booty.

After they have done divided every single thing that Yasuke have bought, Xie Aoyu said:”Little devil, you turn that Chalice into an eunuch, do you not fear for his Partha family retaliation?”

“In the past, I even make the emperor’s nephew an [eunuch](#).” Qin Yueyi curled her lips, carelessly saying, “that nephew, is the son of the emperor half brother, but still nobody dared to punish me.”

Xie Aoyu was very surprised and impressed at the same time .

“Never mind all that, from now on we should concentrate on building that pair of master glove for you.” Said Qin Yueyi, grinning, “Hopefully these materials that was selected by Yasuke are good, because he can be a very deceptive person.”

“It should be real.”Xie Aoyu could tell the functions of some materials clearly.

Qin Yue still stands with her principles: "It better be so, otherwise, he would wish that he better off dead."

Xie Aoyu grins, even if it false, this little devil should stop going her way castrating others.

In the following days, Xie Aoyu also occasionally went out with Qin Yueyi, to the places like the assembly hall to see if there is any good materials they could find, or appreciated the scenery of the city forest. [\[2\]](#)

In the blink of the eye , 78 days have passed .

These days, Xie Aoyu, when he has time, he will studies Overlord Dragon Fist.

Since he is free from the pressure of his past, and gained insight, the learning process becomes easier, and Xie Aoyu then also discovered a lot of similarity within Overlord Dragon Fist, and felt that somehow perhaps the second type of this technique would be able to perceived through meditation.

The day of Large Assembly also come to the end.

And the Auction General Assembly was about to begin.

Everyone who wanted to bid for indefinite swirl sword fighting

skills, have also come to the forest city, makes the city to become livelier.

“Old Xie, Old Xie, thank you.....”

Xie who were practicing Overlord Dragon Fist, stop immediately upon hearing the voice, open the door and saw Qin Yueyi, rushing from the outside.

“There are something good happening? Because I see a happy word written on your face.” Xie Aoyu said with a smile.

“My uncle found a top weapon casting master hidden in this city forest. “Qin Yueyi ran excitedly to Xie Aoyu and said,” HA HA, it is said that he was able to cast out a king level weapon. ”

Oh, really?

Xie Aoyu was very excited to hear the news at the beginning but thinking that the one who discovered this is that Qin Doug, an old man with a friendly face on the outside but on the inside is very crafty and vicious, so he began to think rationally and cautious.

“In this continent the King-level weapon seems to be few? Doesn't seem to have been built in recent years, one weapon, rumored to be built more than 2000 years ago. “Said Xie Aoyu .

“HA HA, you don't know anything, the number of King class level weapons in this continent ,are actually more than the rumor,

but many people do not disclose it, just like the one in our family ancestral home, it was 600 years ago when the ancestors finding someone to build it. “Qin Yueyi laughed.

What a family! Xie Aoyu was only able to remain silent, as he followed Qin Yueyi heading to the place that her uncle spoke of. He do not afraid of Qin Doug craftiness, because he will not be able to harm him with the presence of Qin Yueyi by his side. Leaving the residence, they passed the two streets. They arrived at a relatively quiet place.

“See, the house at the front, it is belong to that reclusive master. “Qin Yueyi pointing to the middle of the street, a house and other buildings generally,” HA HA, with this you can let him create your gloves and I will gather all the material needed to build a King class level weapon, I will be going to the the auction the General Assembly. ”

If you really have a King class weapon casting master to build you a pair of gloves, Xie Aoyu believe that he would at least be at Sage level, or maybe even higher.

Thinking of this, Xie Aoyu’s mind started to move again.

They quickly move forward.

“Young lady. ”

At this moment, someone ran up.

It was one of Qin's servants.

“What's the matter?” Qin Yueyi asked.

This man looked at the Xie Aoyu, then whisper on Qin Yueyi's ear, and the latter showed an anxious color on her face, “Old Xie, thank you, you can go ahead, I have told the master, he will make you the glove, and as for me, I need to go back. ”

After saying goodbye, she then left in a hurry.

Xie Aoyu's heart began to wonder , what makes Qin Yueyi anxious like that?

He would like to go into the house, but then this house was discovered by that Qin Doug, and somehow strangely, Qin Yueyi received an urgent call at the same time, all of this enough for him to be suspicious of Qin Doug.

And there will nothing happen to Qin Yueyi, right?

Qin Yueyi is his best friend, and it seems like she really have an emergency or some urgent matter have occurred, how can he not be by her side,who knows he can a help of something. Thinking of this Xie Aoyu turned to catch Qin Yueyi.

“You will not walk away! ”

He had just moved two steps; and then he heard a familiar voice came from behind.

Xie Aoyu looking at his back, his expression changed, the voice that came from a so-called King level caster master's house, belong to none other than Greed!

[1] (meaning when he determine to put down his face and honor, and start to seriously attack)

[*] (she personally castrated him)

[2] T/N: Sound like a date to me 😊

Chapter 55: Escapes

This is a conspiracy.

A bare conspiracy!

Xie Aoyu's face expression turned ugly, his heartbeat is also accelerating, even with his new practiced insight, enable him to face any problems and still remain calm, but now he cannot calm himself like usual.

Now in front of him, is nothing but a powerhouse with highest sage level!

In front of this master, he did not have any way of resistance, not even his father, Xie Gan, can be his opponent.

“What do you want. “Xie Aoyu trying to calm himself.

Greed lightly said: “To kill you! ”

Xie began to understand what actually happened,” You are not able to do anything about her , Qin Yueyi so you switch your focus on easier targets ,me?”

On Greed's face reveals a light of happy expression, gradually walks toward Xie Aoyu.

He wants to start his move.

Xie Aoyu 's heart was initially not able to calm down, suddenly become calm .

When he entered the mood for a battle, his conditions will be much more relax , his mind is now began to think and see rationally , it is clear that this incident has to do with with that old man Qin Doug. If he find Qin Yueyi , he will enter the lion's den , only to be killed by Qin Doug. Right now, he can only depend on himself.

“Squeak.....”

The door of the so-called master's house opened.

Looking pale, and hideous, Chalice with his people came out from the inside and look at Xie Aoyu, with his venom eyes.

“Uncle, do not kill him, catch him alive, I want to slowly torture him for a lifetime! “Chalice said with a dark, vicious and scary tone, even the people around him having a sudden chill on their necks.

Xie Aoyu curled, “Chalice, you are not a man, to come and doing this to me, are you not afraid of this being known, and spread, tarnish the reputation of your Partha family?”

“You're so fucking dead! “Chalice is now like a madman.

Greed sighed, taking one step forward, while his hand is ready to grasp Xie Aoyu.

A very simple move, but that speed to Xie Aoyu is like a speed of lightning, he cannot even respond to this move, this is the strength of the highest level sage.

Even if he only uses 2-3 tenths of his strength, he is still not the person of Xie Aoyu's level can fight head on.

In a second, Greed getting close to him.

The distance of the hand from his neck now only up to 20 cm.

Even for the incomparably calm Xie Aoyu, have his heart to fiercely jumped, pounding hard!

He also understands that any attacks, in front of Greed, are useless, perhaps his attack would only gives Greed a single itch.

However he is will not give up without a fight.

Because he has the earth escaping technique!

As he stomp his foot on the ground, Xie Aoyu's figure disappear out of thin air.

“What’s this?” Greed is surprised, when he asked Chalice before, he knew that Xie Aoyu have this mysterious technique that enable him to disappear from his opponent sight, but he thought that was only because he were being too quick, Chalice and others might not able to see due to their level difference, but he didn’t think that move can deceive his eyes as well.

“Watch out! ”

“At your back! ”

Feels strange, Greed listen to the voice of his subordinates, turned back, only to have his expression changed , he shouted angrily , as he had been negligent , because he thought with the difference of level between him and Xie Aoyu being so much, there should be no problem for him to handle Xie Aoyu.

In his at heart, he wants to stab Xie Aoyu to death several hundred times.

Just now to get rid Xie Aoyu, he only used 20% of his strengths, even so, it is not something for someone at the level like Xie Aoyu to be able to fight with.

But to his wonder, unexpectedly that Xie Aoyu did not seize the opportunity to escape.

Indeed, this was never in his thought before.

Even Chalice did not expect that to happen.

For Xie Aoyu to have a courage to actually to try to kill Greed, a highest sage level powerhouse at top of that, he must use the psychology to make the overly overconfident Greed to think he was an easy prey to catch.

Of course, to make it happen, to realize it, one must have a great idea to execute.

He was fully realized even with the Earth Escaping technique, with his current strength, at most he can go up to 11 meters in distance.

Based on Greed's strength, he can easily overtake him.

Therefore running away constantly, is not an option.

Appeared right behind Greed, Xie Aoyu's holy sword flashed, ready to give him a direct killing blow of one of his most profound Overlord Dragon Fist technique, "If I cannot do it, who can".

The sword emitted a bright light.

Xie Aoyu's speed is really out of Greed's expectation.

Greed's body surging a vindictive wave, to protect him from the

sudden attack.

“Bam!”

The result is nowhere near of Greed’s expectation, Xie Aoyu’s assault managed to penetrate the protective layer of his body, blood gushing from his left shoulder. The impact strength of that protective layer also managed to throw Xie Aoyu flying backwards.

“A Holy Sword!” Greed was furious. “Damn you Qin Doug!”

He can resist Xie Aoyu attack easily if not because the Holy Sword, which was able to break his protective layer. Because it’s a Holy Sword, its strength itself is comparable.

“!”

Formidable impact strength have thrown Xie Aoyu flying backwards upside down, the blood coming out from his mouth, his body fall, crash on the ground, he feels like the bones of his whole body were crushed.

Tolerating the pain, Xie Aoyu body once again perform the Earth Escaping Technique.

“That boy went into the ground!” Greed were surprised and this time he managed to see the secret of how Xie Aoyu being able to disappear in instant, it is not his agility, or his speed being too fast,

but it is because he can get into the earth ground.

This technique really made him flabbergasted and weird but his eyes did not deceive him.

He saw how Xie Aoyu disappear using that strange technique.

His face expression suddenly change, if Chalice who is not far from here, less than 20 meters, being kidnapped or killed under his nose, a level sage master, he would not be able to live since he would be a laughing stock.

As soon as he realize that, he moves quickly, to Chalice's side, to protect him.

Kazo also pulled out his weapon, fully alert.

Greed's focused solely on the environment surrounding, he carefully listening to any sound attentively, hoping that he can find Xie Aoyu's position through his unusual hearing.

"We have been deceived !" Greed looked for a while, but still did not see Xie Aoyu, being angry, he finally understood, Xie Aoyu make himself as the bait, making him, Greed to think that he will kidnap Chalice, and then seized the opportunity to escape.

That was Xie Aoyu's idea.

His accurate grasp of the situation, making use of the fact that no one knows about his mysterious technique, or even if they knows, they certainly don't know how far the distance with his Earth Escaping technique, so even though he can't get near to Chalice due of him fell on the ground nearly 20 meters from him, he managed to make Greed into thinking the possibility of him attacking or kidnap Chalice, so the latter decided to went to Chalice's side to protect him.

Then he can take the opportunity to escape.

“Swish! ”

Greed soar into the sky.

Sage level master can fly in the air easily, so he just stood in the mid-air, his naked eyes looks really vicious, he view the surrounding if he can find that boy, because if this news spread out that Xie Aoyu not just managed to fled before his eyes but also wounded him, he will shame to death.

By make use the Earth Escaping technique fully, Xie Aoyu directly escape into the house on the left side of the street.

It was someone else's room.

Xie Aoyu want to hide here for a time being.

He came out of the ground and his head bumped into something.

“What is that sound?”

Xie Aoyu looks up, he hurriedly lie on the ground, carefully observe his surrounding, prepare to use the escaping technique once again.

Someone approached the bedroom to look, discovered that there was nothing and then left.

Xie Aoyu let out a breath.

After determining there is nobody, he soundlessly walks from the bed, to the window, secretly looks on the outside, only to find out that Greed currently on the mid air, observing his surrounding.

He will obviously be discovered if he stays on this direction.

He walked to the other side, looking out of the window, and want to see if there is a hiding place within ten meters.

“The two of you must remember, and follow the plan accordingly, make sure to not commit any mistake, otherwise we will waste our previous efforts.”

“Rest assured, what we want to do is relatively easy, but you only saw the indefinite swirl knife fighting skills once, and that’s only for three seconds, are you sure you still remember how it looks

like? ”

“Nonsense, if I am not sure, why must I waste my time to find you guys.”

“That is good, the day after tomorrow before dawn, we will meet in the south mountain 20 miles from the forest city.”

Xie Aoyu who is hiding, were listening to their conversation, quietly, surprised because of the phrase “indefinite swirl sword fighting skills”.

That skill has managed to attracts all the masters from all kind of levels and background, to come to the auction, it is said that this skill are not inferior compare to Overlord Dragon Fist.

These people actually want to steal that Indefinite Swirl Sword Fighting Skills?

Chapter 56: Induction

As for the sword skill, of course Xie Aoyu was interested with it but he would not put his bet on these people since all of them only have the strength of ordinary people.

That infamous sword skill, suits with its credibility as the main attraction, will be strictly guarded.

Perhaps even the guards will at least be on sage level or maybe even higher, and that certainly explains, even if there are more than 800 people trying to steal it, they won't succeed.

Xie Aoyu was thinking about all of this while using his Earth Escaping technique to escape further.

He went up to 7 meters distance.

He arrived at one bunch of flowering shrubs, there are flower-decked, even the lowest has more than half meters high, Xie Aoyu comes out, then lie down on the ground, to prevents from being seen.

Then he use the earth escaping technique once more.

With the help of the Earth Escaping technique being executed consecutively 56 times, he left the place, he did not dare to stay at the luxurious courtyard for too long, while Greed still looking for him back and forth.

With the aid of his escaping technique,Xie Aoyu who was exhausted with all the things that has happened today, is now managed to distanced himself far away from that place, arrived at the south gate of the Forest City.

Xie Aoyu looked back, his feelings were mixed about a lot of things that have happened today.

He knew that this matter, Qin Doug most likely involved, if he go back and find Qin Yueyi, the possibility for him to be killed by Qin Doug is high.

So he had to leave.

But the thought about Qin Yueyi makes his heart became hesitant , because even though she is a little devil , they both still able to work well together , to him she can be consider as one of his best friend .

Xie Aoyu sighed, all good things must come to an end, he turned and disappeared from the forest city.

Leaving the Forest City, although his heart was not happy, he have to go far away, by hook or by crook, in order to prevent him from continuing to be pursued by Greed.

Until the sun sets, he didn't stop.

“Xiao Bai, lets get something to eat. “Xie Aoyu’s stomach is growling.

“Yiya! ”

Xiao Bai jumped with excitement.

Excited on hearing Xie Aoyu’s words, without delay, Xiao Bai constantly looking for dry woods .

Xie Aoyu grabbed a few turkeys.

They eats until their stomach were full, and since it was already late at night, Xie Aoyu have no urge to practice, he lay on the ground, with a grass in his mouth, looking at the bright moon in the night sky.

Under the curtain of the night, on this desolate barren hill, the night wind blows gently, the weed branch that sways exudes the intermittent sound, occasionally you can hear the cries of some evil spirit beasts.

Xie Aoyu looked at the moon, an image of familiar figure doing ice dancing appear before his eyes.

His heart is now thinking about his childhood friend, and worried about her being under the same place with that Butterfly Queen, Yao Lan Ruo.

Until now, he cannot understand why Yao Lan Ruo wanted to kill him.

Although the reason is unknown, the fact remains the fact, the fact that she tried to kill Xie Aoyu . Even if he tell Bing Wu the truth, she would not believe it.Xie Aoyu himself found that it was also difficult for him to believe that the ice queen Yao Lan Ruo tried to kill him when they only met for the first time.

The screen flashed, a peerless beauty emerges in front of Xie Aoyu.

It is Zi Yan.

Xie Aoyu smiled when recalling the memory with Ziyan , when he was with her , he felt all his problems, his fears, his sorrows, disappeared.

Especially when he remembered how Ziyan willing to cross the mountains, to looked for the herbs to cure him, his heart become warm. [\[1\]](#)

That last picture turn into Qin Yueyi.

“Hey, little devil, I do not know if you ever miss me right now.
“Xie Aoyu sighed.

Thinking about all this , Xie Aoyu finally fell asleep soundly.

His sleep was disrupted by the sudden chill he felt on his chest.

With him still in daze from sleeping, he suddenly sit up and take off his jacket, to have a look at his chest.

The cold chill came from the Tri Colors balls.

Xie Aoyu felt, for the first time, an active response from the tri color ball, like what happened before, when it reacted to the effects of the water, and the fire elements, and then there is also that strange blue beads.

The sudden reaction means that something is near him .

Xie Aoyu stands up, looked around, and found nothing, but the tricolor ball still vibrate, and Xie Aoyu began looking around carefully.

The result of him checking around in a circle, he discovered nothing.

“Tricolor ball vibration speed changes when it near the source. “Xie Aoyu recalled back then when he searched for the previous elements, he always felt subtle changes from the Tri Colors ball when he came close to them, so he decided to keep walking.

This time he clearly feels that in the west direction, the tricolor ball fiercely vibrates.

Xie Aoyu then wake Xiao Bai up, and together they walks towards the west.

He walks approximately less than 100 meters, with a mountain blocking the way.

This mountain is similar to a sword, with the peak cut into the clouds in the sky.

Stands before the mountain, Xie Aoyu felt the vibration of tricolor ball was getting more and fiercer as if it sensed that there is something within the mountain, he then starts to search in all directions, to see if there are any entrances.

When Xiao Bai arrived at the mountain, his eyes became bright white cold, but it was quickly vanished.

Following the tri colors balls vibration, Xie Aoyu walk along the foot of the mountain to the south, and not long after, they find an extremely secretive entry.

The entrance was seven or eight meters away from the place, it was covered with weeds and trees, it was hidden very well, even if you look around you would not be able to see any difference of it from the natural surrounding, unless you walk closer.

Xie Aoyu then entered the cave.

Who would have thought that he just walked not even two meters ahead, and already arrived at the dead end.

But that tricolor ball become more fiercer than ever, Xie Aoyu, seeing this, then he immediately pulled out his Holy Sword, to break through the wall.

It seems like it will takes time to break through, but for the tricolor ball to have such a rare strong reaction, it must be a priceless treasure that can make one jealous of him, so how can he give up.

He controls his breathing slightly, Xie Aoyu then brandished the sword and cuts.

“Bang!.....”

The sword flashed more than 20 times consecutively.

Each slashes has a very powerful force, two-sword slashes chopping nearly one meter distance and enough for only one person to enter, so they marched almost ten meters ahead.

The further he walks, the more powerful and fiercer the vibration of the tricolor ball have become.

As a result, Xie Aoyu fasten his steps.

From the midnight to the sunrise.

Xie Aoyu feels really tired, his whole body is sweating. They have come nearly one hundred or two hundred meters, rest several times, to regain his energy.

But he still did not reach the end.

Just tricolor ball still seems to vibrating fiercely, Xie Aoyu felt this is a must find item, because every time the tricolor ball became strange, he always benefited from it, like in this case, the fire and water element that he have managed to obtained.

After eating some food, and recuperate, Xie Aoyu pulled out his holy sword and started to move forward once again.

“Bang Bang Bang Ka! ”

Cutting through forward dozens of times, suddenly when he cut the next mountain wall, it is split into two, because this seemingly hard mountain wall was surprisingly thin, with just one slash, it splits and crumble.

And with the obstruction have been cleared, in front of him currently is a strange fantasy-like existence.

[\[1\]](#) T/N: woot~an older woman in harem? That's news to me, but Ziyen is hot for sure 😊

Chapter 57: Spirit Realms

In front of him is a world of ice.

Crystal-like ice is everywhere, glittering like real crystals, the cold wind blows, and Xie Aoyu can't help but chills over the cold temperature.

Xie Aoyu has cleared his head.

He carefully watched, and found that the space of this place is really wide, the area is more than thousands of square feet, but there is nothing here but ice sculptures.

The ground was frozen with no way of knowing how thick the ice was.

Xie Aoyu can feel the presence of cold wind but cannot determine from which direction it blows, he could not find the entrance of this place except from the wall he broke through by force, even if there is an entrance, it would be weird and not normal since the weather outside is still in a hot summer day.

Xie Aoyu feels suspicious.

He began looking around for, hoping to use the vibration from the tricolor ball as the guide, but he was disappointed when it turns out there is no change of frequency from the tricolor ball vibration.

In other words, the tricolor ball vibration source is this whole space.

Xie Aoyu wonders, what is so special about this place?

He was puzzled, but since he cannot think of anything, he end up sit on the floor, as the time running, the external wind began to wrap his body.

Now that makes the tricolor ball to slightly tremble, he somehow can feel the difference.

Xie Aoyu does not intend to give up, and so he still keep looking and found nothing, so he decided to just stay and sit here, to see if anything changes.

Regarding the mysterious tricolor ball, he has so many questions inside his head.

While he sat down, suddenly the cold wind raids and piercing through his body.

Xie Aoyu screamed due to the extreme coldness he felt inside his body, he immediately increase the cold resistance in his body, and constantly examine the tricolor ball, there was slightly tremor but other than that, there is no change at all.

But still this is too much for Xie Aoyu to handle.

The colds really unbearable, but the tricolor ball made him endured it patiently time to time, because he also wants to know and see what will happen, with such a thing inside his body, he need to study it more thoroughly.

He sits on the floor for an hour.

The cold ice is piercing through his body nonstop, and within one hour; Xie Aoyu's body looks like it were frozen.

The strong cold winds is like a knife, unceasingly baptism Xie Aoyu's body, making his resistance become more and more weak, due to the rapid consumption.

Xie Aoyu furrowed his brows; he discovered that with the speed of the consumption rate, he would not be to stay here for too long.

Moreover the tricolor ball still only have a slight tremor.

"I will try to hold a little bit longer, if nothing good happen, then I will stop." Xie Aoyu said with a low voice, he knows that it would not be worth for him to waste more energy if he gain nothing from it.

The time passed.

Xie Aoyu feels like it has become more difficult for him to hold on any longer than this, his energy consumption rate was fast, making him to feeling an extremely cold inside his body, as if his bones were frozen.

“Forget it. “Ao Yu Xie sighed, he cannot resist anymore, he then decided to get up and prepares to leave.

“Bzzzzzt! ”

Suddenly Xie Aoyu’s spirit let out vibration sounds.

His eyes lit up , because it is not only because the tricolor ball vibrates, it’s also rotates, and then Xie Aoyu discovered those cold energy he have been consumed and absorbs, have reverted into the tricolor ball, but the tricolor ball did not ingest all the energy, instead the remaining cold energy were spread into his internal body. It do not damage his body, instead it circulate into his meridians,dantian,and started to fuse and strengthen it.

Because of this fusion, inside Xie Aoyu’s mind suddenly the scene of him eating the spirit beast egg emerged.

At that time when he ate the egg belong to the Black Scale Wyvern, he felt a trace of warm energy flowed into his body, and became part of his Qi, since then Xie Aoyu also tried to look for many spirit beast eggs, but he felt there were no effects at all like before.

Xie Aoyu concluded that this must be similar like what had happened to him before.

But since he has the experience, this time Xie Aoyu immediately sitting cross legged and starts to absorb the remaining energy.

Xie Aoyu forced a smile.

The tricolor ball must be the reason of why he still able to hold on, because he cannot resist the coldness by solely using his own energy, this extreme cold could freeze him to death within an hour.

Right now, whenever the cold energy piercing through his body, the tricolor ball will absorbs most of the coldness, and as the result the energy doesn't feels cold at all.

“Whistling

The cold wind blows lets out whistling sounds whenever it gets through the ice holes on this place.

He do not know where the wind comes from, but it is unusually cold, blowing through the ice around him, making the ice smoother like crystal jade, forming grotesque sculptures.

The cold wind then piercing through Xie Aoyu's body.

The tricolor then absorbs the cold energy and the remaining will be spread into his body, making Xie Aoyu to feels that his qi strength increase rapidly.

This kind of growth, make Xie Aoyu feel excited.

Xie Aoyu also find a nice place where the cold wind always blows, he immediately went to the place, greedily absorbs the cold energy to bits.

Xie Aoyu continues to absorb the cold energy to increase his qi without fear, he absorbs without wasting any of it, he knew this opportunity is rare, all because of the tricolor ball.

“Whoosh.....”

The cold wind blowing stronger than ever, Xie Aoyu immediately rushes directly into the center where the wind blows violently.

When Xie Aoyu enter the area where the wind was blowing strongly and violently, he feels his body went frozen in an instant, but luckily the tricolor ball immediately absorbs the cold winds.

And it doesn't feel cold anymore compare to his first time absorbed the wind energy.

Xie Aoyu falls to the ground and his qi strength again increase significantly.

He feels happy, and then without any worries, he chases the wind.

And so, probably after more than 10 times, Xie Aoyu feels his qi expanded more and more, his upper dantian seems to have reached its limit.

Xie Aoyu is full with happiness, his dantian are indeed special, and the reason why he was considered to have extraordinary talent in cultivation is because of his special dantian.

Most of dantian have the same size and growing through cultivation.

The larger your dantian, the more energy can be fill in, and the higher your natural strength will be, but Xie Aoyu's dantian is much larger than average person by nature, he even have two lower and upper dantian region.

In fact, right now he only filled his upper dantian region.

And the lower region has never been touched.

When the upper region is full and complete, Xie Aoyu knew that it would later impact the next lower dantian region.

Most of the average people dantian,will expand when they

advanced into spirit realm, and it would expand more when they step up a level, and then when they reach the cloud realm, the impact started to become less and lesser, finally it would stop expanding when it would either be a two points dantian region or a upper and lower dantian region, this is all the process to have a complete dantian.

Xie Aoyu, since he was born, he already have the complete version of dantian, upper and lower dantian.

Everyone fills their dantian naturally through step by step at a time, but Xie Aoyu currently has almost break through the gap between the upper and lower dantian.

Feeling the dantian actually became bigger, Xie Aoyu got more and more excited, he started to absorb the cold wind energy once again.

One.. two.. three..

Until the ninth time, Xie Aoyu body start to trembled, the barrier between his upper and lower dantian burst, break into the lower dantian.

“Finally I have entered the spirit realm level! “Xie Aoyu screaming excitedly .

At this time, the tricolor ball still absorb the cold wind, and he absolutely would not let this opportunity going to waste.

[1]

[1] T/N: OP, he just too OP!! 😊

Chapter 58: Unexpectedly Succeed

That strange extremely cold wind has brought unexpected benefits.

Xie Aoyu repeatedly chasing the wind, until the tricolor ball stop vibrates, and as time passed, Xie Aoyu stopped, at this time, Xie Aoyu already reached the bottleneck of the lower spirit, in other words, there is a fine line, a barrier, a gap between his lower and the intermediate spirit level and it seems that he will break through into intermediate level any second from now.

After he calmed himself, Xie Aoyu starts to examine his current situation.

He must observe thoroughly the true nature of this mysterious tricolor ball.

Of course there is no doubt that the level promotion is important too, but the mysterious powers of tricolor ball were extremely surprising, therefore he must carefully study it.

After the tricolor ball absorbs that cold wind, there is a faint trace of the blue light on its surface.

This blue light is really weak and pale, compare with the other three colors, yellow, purple, and green, it is does not stand out, and you need to take a closer look to see it, since it is on the surface of the ball, connected with the other three colors.

Xie Aoyu sends his spirit force to examine it.

The result was really disappointing.

The spirit force was rejected, it showed that the tricolor ball is an independent existence, it would not let him to get closer, and this made Xie Aoyu somehow feels helpless.

Xie Aoyu must study the nature of the tricolor ball, so that he can be more adapt to the feeling after the breakthrough.

Compare to higher stage realms; it is harder to breakthrough when you reach the bottleneck of the spirit level realms.

Xie Aoyu launched a few punches in the air, using the If I cannot do it, who can, the profound technique of Overlord Dragon Fist.

This fist rumbles, immediately an image of a dragon soaring from the punches he shoots, somehow it looks more realistic than before.

When he reached the spirit level realms, the power will be much more powerful than when he ever was at the Advanced realm, the dragon image naturally will looks more like a real dragon.

“Bang!”

His punches hits hard on the air, the dragon forms attacks have caused a five meters giant ice sculpture to ruptures and crumbles loudly, into innumerable fragments of ice, scattered into all directions.

Xie Aoyu is really happy with the result.

The ice sculpture might not necessarily bigger than the stone that Xie Aoyu had destroyed before but after being in this extremely cold environment for who knows how many years, the degree of the hardness of the ice sculpture is many times over than the stone.

In other words, the might of Xie Aoyu's fist has at least become more powerful than before due for him being promoted into higher realms.

“The effects from being promoted into spirit realms are rather big.” Xie Aoyu feeling really excited.” I want to know how much it influences the distance of my Earth Escaping technique.”

This place is completely freezes, so the Earth Escaping technique cannot be use here.

Xie Aoyu then leaves this ice world and goes to experiments at the outside.

“Whoosh

Cold wind blows, Xie Aoyu did not felt any coldness, moreover this cold wind obviously weak compared to when he came for the first time.

As if the essence of the cold wind has been fully absorbs and extracted by the tricolors ball.

When he sure that Xie Aoyu has left, Xiao Bai stands in this ice world, his mouth lets out a deep sigh while saying, “It should come from the first continent that formed the elements of fire, water , wind, unfortunately it is only a fragment of a prototype that have been destroyed , well,why should I complain now .. I have already select my master, so I should not mention this mere cold wind.” [\[1\]](#)

Xie Aoyu lets out an emotional sigh when he walks out from the cold place.

As soon as he left that ice world, he immediately uses his Earth Escaping technique through the 200 meters tunnel that he has broke through by force before from the cave entrance.

The distance now should be more than ten meters.

Xie Aoyu turns his head to check, and discovered that the distance unexpectedly only about 12 meters, he scratches his head, uses the Earth Escaping technique once more, this time he utilized all his qi.

“Whiz!”

When he comes out from the ground, he quickly measures with his eyes the distance once more.

12 meters!

Xie Aoyu cannot help but laughed, “It looks like each time I rise to the next level, the distance will only increase up to one meter.”

Although he expects more than that, Xie Aoyu did not feels depressed, this Earth Escaping technique is very useful in the fight, although the distance is only increased by 1 meter, one must know with that additional one meter distance, can change the direction of a fight.

He stretches his body, since he has been practiced for such a long time, has somewhat made him hungry.

He walks toward the exit.

He thought he cultivated in the cave for a month, but when he saw outside of the cave, the time he has spent inside was apparently only a day.

“Xiao Bai.”Xie Aoyu said.

“Yiya!”

Xiao Bai came from behind; and then he jumped on Xie Aoyu's shoulder directly.

Xie Aoyu puts his hand on his stomach, meaning that he wants to eat, Xiao Bai understand immediately, there is no need for words when it comes to eating.

Going out from the cave, Xiao Bai then looking for dry fire woods, while Xie Aoyu going to catch the turkey.

After Xiao Bai left , Xie Aoyu who just about to move in search of food , saw shadows flashing in the foot of the mountain, two figures quickly ran up to side by side, walks while observes their surrounding, seems to be afraid of being discovered.

One of them is holding a jet black box.

“We wait here for Luo Kun.”

“Good, this is a remote place; we should be safe if we hide here.”

They both sat without realizing at the boulder 2-3 meters above them, there is Xie Aoyu hiding while eavesdropping on their conversation.

How come they sound a little familiar? Xie Aoyu said in his heart.

The person on the left side took a bottle of wine, drinks a few mouthfuls, and then used his sleeve to wipe, “Take out the box, and see if we can open it.”

“Open it?” The person on the right sneers while saying that “, If we can open it easily, do you think that Luo Kun would willingly giving it to us?” As he finished his words, he took out the box.

Taking advantage of the moonlight, Xie Aoyu sees that the box color is black, exudes a hint of sandalwood, and some strange patterns on the surface.

Based on its outside appearance, it looks really elegant.

Because of curiosity, Xie Aoyu continue to watch secretly, but somehow he felt that the voice of their both seems very familiar, but he could not remember where .

“We might as well try.”

“If you want to try , you can , but I know that Luo Kun , he will not arbitrarily give this stuff to us if it can be opened by anyone , so there is no point for us to trying to open this box , we would only wasting time , better we wait for our money , then we will be happy.”

“Hey, it seems that Luo Kun is very deceitful.”

“Deceitful? Far more than deceitful! Do you know that for the

sake of this thing, people are willing to do anything, cast out their humanity? He has done the preparation for three years! I suspected he purposely spread the news about the existence of this skill, so that he can create a chaos and seize the opportunity of having it solely to himself.”

“He would go that far, even if this thing is good, it is only have one type of fighting technique.”

Xie Aoyu who were listening secretly, suddenly remember why their voice were so familiar, he accidentally eavesdropped them when he hid himself in the house to avoid from being pursued by Greed before, he had heard about their plans to steal the indefinite flying sword skill.

Initially Xie Aoyu did not believe they would succeed, therefore he decided to not care.

And now, he really was surprised, because currently before his eyes, there is the mysterious black box, does this meaning that their plan went well? Is that infamous sword skill really that easy to get?

Listens to the words of these two, it seems it's likely to be truth.

Although their strength is not as strong as guards, but with that Luo Kun carefully scheming, it appears to be not impossible at all.

Most importantly , Xie Aoyu still remember that Qin Doug once

said that the news about that the infamous sword skills were mysteriously spread, with no one even knows who passed it first.

After all, who's stupid enough to tell others about the existence of a skill comparable to Overlord Dragon Fist? Xie Aoyu concluded that the thing inside the box was indeed capable to shake the whole continent, making all of the major forces to went crazy, willing to kills and spills bloods ,all of this because..... The Indefinite Flying Sword technique!

[\[1\]](#) T/N: Xiao Bai can talk? Whoaa..O.O

Chapter 59: Inside The Box

When he thinks that inside the box is the infamous Indefinite Flying Sword skill, Xie Aoyu's heart starts to accelerate uncontrollably, an idea also starts to emerge inside his head.

The Indefinite Flying Sword skill, to become the treasure of the aristocratic family, Nangong Clan, would naturally make it very extraordinary.

The clan's treasures are different from each other and you must see who it belongs to. If it belongs to a declining and small clan like Xie Clan from the Lanya City, that treasure wouldn't be able to scare any large clan; they would not even bat an eye at it.

But the Nangong Clan is different.

Since thousands of years ago, the Nangong Clan is recognized as the number one clan in the mainland.

A treasure that belongs to such super big clan naturally would be able to make anyone hearts to move and pounding hard.

“You did not say, but based on your saying, I also thought it was strange, I know that this is not an ordinary thing, but to make a person like Luo Kun to not dare to move for three years?”

“I think that perhaps this technique has some problem.”

“Should be, but then it is not related with us, we do not possess the strength of an expert, does not have Luo Kun’s brains, these should not be our concern, it useless to us, lets waits for Luo Kun to come back, pay us the money, and then we can go have fun for all day long.”

These two men actually not greedy, Xie Aoyu did not expect them to have some self-restrained.

Greediness, corruption has always been the driving force for the fall or the death of any human being .

After waits for about half an hour, Xie Aoyu noticed that there is a person walking towards here.

This person is young, the age is around 16 or 17-year-old, the appearance is very delicate, it looks like a big boy, but no one can guess that this delicate looking young boy is so shrewd and crafty inside.

It was difficult to believe that this whole 3 years grand plan were designed by this seemingly delicate 16-17 years old boy?

Xie Aoyu thinks it is very inconceivable.

“Luo Kun.” The person on the left spoke.

The person on the right taking out the box, stands up, and waves his hand to Luo Kun and said, “It is here.”

“Come.”

Luo Kun replied with one word, and then quickly walks forward.

Through what he has heard before, he found that both men seemed fearful of Luo Kun, and now they seem nervous and alerts.

“You came much later than promised, you’re not scheming anything weird right?” The person on the right as if wants to get rid of fears in his heart, sneered while said that to Luo Kun.

“I have been preparing the escapes routes for us, since perhaps we would not be able to come back.” Luo Kun calmly saying like he does not care at all, “Gives me the thing.”

“Is the money ready yet?”

“Of course.” Luo Kun puts out a spatial ring conveniently, “The gold coins that you need is inside.” He throws the spatial ring to the person on the right.

The person on the right catches the spatial ring and grasps it in the hands, without any intention of having it examined.

Luo Kun said with a smile: “Not checking?”

“It’s good to be careful. ”The person on the right gives the box to the guy on the left, and then put his hand into the spatial ring, carrying out a fistful amount of gold coins.

Under the moonlight, the gold coins are glittering.

Unable to shift his eyes from the scene, the person on the left swallow his saliva.

“Give him the box.” The person of right told the person on the left.

The person on the left always follows the words of the person on the right, lifts his hand and throw the box to Luo Kun, “The amount of money.....ah, what is wrong with me.”

The complexion of the person on the right who is hold the spatial ring suddenly turned green.

The person on the left hurries to support him, and then he shouts at Luo Kun, angrily, “You poisoned him!”

“I do not like to have some people knowing my secret; the best means are for you eliminate potential threats.”Luo Kun calmly saying, not even look at them, with his hand gently stroking the box.

“I will kill you!”The person on the left is roaring, brandishes a sword to kill.

Luo Kun does not pay the slightest attention to him.

That person soar to jump, but then he falls to the ground, his complexion actually turned into the paint black.

“Did you...How did you poison me?”The person on the left cried.

Luo Kun calmly said: “The day before yesterday.”

Soon, both of them with their mouths foaming, die without being able to do anything.

Luo Kun since acquiring the box, never once he looked at the two of them, because everything is according to plan, he has even accurately calculated the time when the poisons will fully spread throughout their body.

The looks on Xie Aoyu’s eyes suddenly cold.

Luo Kun ‘s strength lies not only in planning, but also his ability to ensure everything is under his control, what a fearful person!

He must be killed with one strike!

Xie Aoyu think she should kill him as soon as possible, do not give Luo Kun the opportunity to escape or to do anything.

Disregards two corpses, Luo Kun left hand holds the box, his right hand pulls out a tall and slender gold needle, he do not insert the needle into the box metal lock, instead he looks at the design on top of the lid, there's a trace of smile on his face, he then insert the needle on the lid.

“Ka!”

That box exudes clear sound immediately.

What a clever design, Xie Aoyu whispered secretly.

Then he see Luo Kun turn the golden needle left three times, and turn right two times, then pressed down the needle, after a “Ka” sound, vibrations sound coming within that box.

The lid separates from the middle.

Luo Kun's calm and expressionless face finally reveals a hint of excitement, he take out the gold needle back, and then put his right hand into the box.

He grabs the scroll, pull it out, Luo Kun put the box into his spatial ring, and then while holding a scroll with his hand, he finally cannot control his feeling any longer and burst out laughing.

“HA HA, I did it, I did it!”

For a calm person like him, to show his excitement, it is very rare, apparently it is because Luo Kun finds no one here beside him that he able to let out his emotion.

A cold flashed inside Xie Aoyu’s eyes.

This is a good opportunity!

Inside Xie Aoyu minds, however, a scene emerged when the two poisoned men were talking, that for someone as cunning as Luo Kun, to stay dormant for three years, and without backup plan under his sleeve, this seems unlikely.

Thinking of this, Xie Aoyu again suppressing the urge to kill, endures it patiently.

“The Indefinite Flying Sword skill, because of you, my parents died, I did not dream for it to finally obtain by me.” Luo Kun holds the scroll tightly, “Father, mother, you are now at the other world, but do you see how your son have completed your wishes, attained this The Indefinite Flying Sword skill on your behalf?”

As he finishes his words, Luo Kun opens the scroll.

Xie Aoyu narrows his eye to look.

He discovered that Luo Kun casually open the scroll, without being aware and cautious of his surrounding, he unfurled the scroll flat on the ground , and then reach out and touch it , seems curiously wants to know what is in that scroll.

After he touch the scroll surface one time, an embarrass color reveals on Luo Kun's face.

He touches the surface once more.

This time, he touch the surface cautiously, wipe it bit by bit, after he finish wipe the entire scroll, his face reveals an anxious color.

“Impossible, it is impossible, in this scroll, father once mentioned that within the scroll will have one of the three greatest skills belong to the Nangong aristocratic clan, they don't have the other two, but that one skill should be in here.”Luo Kun complexion becomes very ugly.

He looks closely once again.

That anxious complexion, turns into anger..

“Damn, I have been prepared for this for three years, and finally when I have it, it turns out nothing.”Luo Kun fist pounds hard on the ground.

At this moment, Xie Aoyu launches his attack!

Chapter 60: The Amazing Flying Sword Skill

Luo Kun seems to be looking for something other than the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword skill within the scroll, Xie Aoyu decided to stop listening, and stomped his feet on the ground.

Earth Escaping technique!

A mysterious and an unpredictable technique.

It can be said, that this technique are suitable for a sneak attack, or assassination, and coupled with its ability to disappear into the ground in just a split second, it would certainly produce unexpected results.

By using Earth Escaping technique, he slipped behind Luo Kun. The holy sword that was pointed at the back of the Luo Kun is the sword with the intent to kill.

Luo Kun, much to his chagrin, even if he is a shrewd and cunning person, for him not being able to get what he wanted, even though he had been dormant for three years, just to prepare a plan for this day, at the end turned out to be nothing, is too much shame to bear.

But he is, after all, Luo Kun.

A person as deep as Luo Kun, despite being in a state of anger, or frustration, will stay steady within his subconscious mind. So

when the holy sword get closer and almost hit his body, his mind subconsciously responds.

Danger!

Luo Kun facial expressions changed suddenly, and he almost did not want to roll down as there is a hill down to his left side; but then still with slightest unwillingness, he rolled himself down the hill.

However, there is no way that Xie Aoyu attack could be avoided by just like that.

The sword was able to hit his hips, make it bleeds. Luo Kun moans in pain, and while he still cannot stand firmly, Xie Aoyu disappearing from his sight again.

This time he show up to the Luo Kun left side.

He holds his holy sword high, ready to split the body beside him into a half.

Heavens, what with his agility, he almost swear on Xie Aoyu as because of him, he is now within a state of life or death situation. Since he cannot avoid, he raised his arms to block the attack.

“Slash!”

A hand flung to the ground.

With an arm as an exchange for his life, Luo Kun took the opportunity to once again jump forward.

This person needs to die!

Xie Aoyu's heart was shaken, because this Luo Kun is really dangerous, he is not only cruel and ruthless towards the two hired men, but he also cruel to himself.

“Whew!”

Luo Kun almost losing his conscious because of the pain, his face looks pale, his forehead covered with sweat, even so, he still able to remain calm, he then let out a cold mist from his mouth.

Xie Aoyu holds the holy sword tight, ready to slash his body.

“Take this!”

A cold light burst.

A white mist appears around Luo Kun body.

Xie Aoyu's left hand's Medical Spirit Finger started to tremble a bit, before that white mist starts to dissipate, and so as he managed

to break through, he swing the holy sword towards Luo Kun.

Luo Kun in the end, with his arm injuries, is simply unable to resist the attack.

“You are poisoned, if you kill me, you will die.” Luo Kun said as he hopes to stall for a time, for Xie Aoyu to die by his poison.

Xie Aoyu ignored him.

Dealing with such people, it was given, to not give him the slightest chance; otherwise, they will turn to be your own bad luck.

Xie Aoyu not only has no intention of stopping, but instead he swung the sword faster.

“You” Luo Kun screamed.

But the holy sword was simply too fast, he only able to let out a word from his mouth, Xie Aoyu sword chops Luo Kun’s neck, and his head fly out.

After killing Luo Kun, Xie Aoyu is now taking one deep breath.

He takes off Luo Kun’s spatial ring, and then he goes back, to pick the scroll. His eyes focused on the five words inside the scroll Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword (无定飞旋刀)!

Thousands of years ago, one of the three treasure of the Nangong clan, the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword!

“Dup, dap, dup dap.....”

He thought he has calmed himself, but when his hands hold the scroll, his heart beat suddenly accelerates, racing out of control.

Almost all major and minor forces in the mainland come to the Forest City just to get this skill, but at the end, the scroll still end up on his hand.

How can he not be excited?

Xie Aoyu jumped for joys.

But he soon calmed down; he should not stay on this place for too long. He picks up the spatial ring filled with the gold coins, he then looks for Xiao Bai, find the right direction and ran down.

He wants to find a safe place, and start viewing these things.

After running through the night, they stopped at a small valley. Xie Aoyu then felt relieved that he has caught two fire rabbits on the way, so they do not have to worry about food.

“Xiao Bai, we have to stay here for a while.” Xie Aoyu wants to learn this Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword skill before they leave

this place.

Xiao Bai then looks for dry woods and carries it to their place.

Xie Aoyu began to roasting the two fire rabbit, he puts out the spatial ring previously belonged to Luo Kun, he force his way to break through the ring security barrier, and then he take out everything from the inside.

It was a mess.

“This seems to be a token.”Xie Aoyu grabbed a diamond-shaped sign.

It is not made of iron, he have no clue on what kind of material it was made of , but when placed it on the hand , it's very heavy , weighing about 30 or 40 pounds .

At one side of this diamond-shaped sign, engraved a design of the black lotus, it is indeed a strange pattern.

Xie Aoyu thought for a moment, he had never heard of Black Lotus as the family mark, so he decided to puts the sign away, he is somewhat understand that Luo Kun is likely came from a mysterious background.

So he needs to be careful.

Beside the most noticeable item, the diamond-shape sign, the other things are just ordinary daily necessities, it is clear that this Luo Kun was on undercover; he didn't have any special things on his body.

Xie Aoyu wants to take out the gold coins from the spatial ring.

The spatial ring is not poisonous, Xie Aoyu knows that there should be poisons smudged on the gold coins; so he stretched out his left hand's pinky finger.

There is a faint of light wave coming from the surface of the spatial ring.

Xie Aoyu moves his pinky finger forward slowly.

This caused the light waves to break gently, and the poison to dissipates, turning the spatial ring back to normal. Xie Aoyu can't help but sigh, this is the power of Medical Spirit Finger, absolutely powerful even if he only able to use the most basic technique, this Medical Spirit Finger truly lived up to its name.

When viewing the spatial ring, Xie Aoyu couldn't help from laughing, "I'm rich, there are at least more or less five hundred thousand or six hundred thousand gold coins here."

Xie Aoyu shift the focus on the scroll.

The content is naturally the detailed instruction on how to

practice the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword technique. Not only the instruction, even the illustrations are detailed.

Xie Aoyu has simply drawn into his study, and lost track of time.

He continues to devote his full attention to understand the contents of the scroll.

Xiao Bai who was waiting to eat, seeing this situation, has broad wide smile on his face. Slowly, without making any noise, he takes the two fire rabbits that are almost ready and continue to roast it again on his side. Because he always ate together with Xie Aoyu , he is somehow manage to learn how to cook , although his technique was a bit disappointing , but in the case of roasting , it should not be a problem.

As for the other side, Xie Aoyu continues to study this Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword technique.

While Xiao Bai secretly eats the two fire rabbits.

Two fire rabbits, each fire rabbit are much larger than normal rabbit, but he casually eats everything, as if his little belly still has some space to fill in.

“Burp! ”

Xiao Bai burps, and then a second after he done eating, he found a comfortable place to sleep soundly.

As for Xie Aoyu, he still in his full study mode, studying the fighting technique that the scroll has recorded, seems to not aware that the two fire rabbits both have been eaten.

As if he had forgotten the outside world, he continues to be drawn by his thoughts while studying the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword skill.

This Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword is an amazing fighting skill, the practitioner will be armed with a long sword to fight, and somehow, it is similar to the ordinary flying sword technique.

But this flying sword technique is different from ordinary flying sword technique.

The difference is the word spinning.

According to the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword instructions, a throwing sword, is not only faster, the trajectory can also be change, you can make it to fly backwards (imagine a boomerang), thus creating a powerful attacking range.

No matter if it is the hidden dagger, a sword or arrows, as long as it is the long-distance range, the trajectory of the ordinary flying attack will always be a straight line.

But Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword technique simply breaks the idea, according to the instructions on the scroll, it can be on

the straight line, it would be able to arc, this really defied the nature. It made Xie Aoyu to feel excited, knowing that when he throws a sword, unexpectedly he can also make it return to his hand, without need to be worried of any movement being waste or risking losing his sword.

Xie Aoyu looks so excited, and then he starts to practice immediately following the instructions on the scroll.

As for that two fire rabbit, it was already gone beyond the highest level of heavens. The thought of him who is still did not eat anything all day long; have not across his mind yet. Because the attraction of this Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword skill have managed to suppressed his hunger.

Chapter 61: Encounter Ziyang

In a small valley, the scenery is quite beautiful. The soothing and serene sound of mountain streams. While in one corner, a creature that looks small and cute, Xiao Bai rolled on the ground to play. Once in a while, he will look for small creatures to fight.

Xie Aoyu is standing on top of a stone, his eyes squinted. He looked at the tree trunk on the ground at a distance of about more than 30 meters. His hand is holding a pebble, and then he shook his hand, ready to throw it.

“Swossh!”

The pebble with a speed that can split the wind, soared forward.

The pebble arched through the air towards the tree trunk and with a very sharp precision it hits the targeted parts. After that it spins and turns back towards Xie Aoyu ‘s hand, and then he used his other hand to throw the pebble again but this time towards the other direction. His goal is this time he wants to control the pebble and hits both the left and right sides of the tree trunks.

“Pow!!”

The first hit on the first section was easy.

And then the pebble once more revolves afterward, lightly hits the second section.

The pebble spinning diagonally and flies back to Xie Aoyu's hand.

This is the mystery of the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword skill.

It can launch continuous attack while it still on the air, and later once more return to the user hand.

“Xiao Bai!” Xie Aoyu shouted. To improve and sharpen his accuracy on target, he needs to training with bigger and harder difficulty than ever.

Xiao Bai got up and rolled on the ground. He takes as many pebbles as he can and throwing them high into the air.

Five-six pebbles thrown into the air.

Xie Aoyu jumped up, and shook his hand to throw a pebble.

“Sou!”

That pebble moves with incomparable speed, this time it is moving in a straight-line.”PA!” It hit a pebble, then by using the force of impact, it revolves, drawn an arc, “PA” and it hit the second pebble, borrows the strength to revolve once more.

All the pebbles thrown by Xiao Bai have been successfully shot down.

Having practiced for 40-50 days, Xie Aoyu has found a new way to polish his skills. He's using pebbles now instead of weapon.

Ever since pebbles became his main practice tool, the effect is quite good, especially the way he handle the strength. It must be known that it is difficult to control the strength but it is more difficult to control the accuracy of the throw towards the target.

Because it must hit all the other targets in one continuous rotation, and then finally it must return back to your hand.

So, it requires the most perfect combination of the eyesight, the strength, as well as the technique. If the target is moving with speed, he must determine the appropriate position to target through the eyes, and simultaneously launches the continuous rotation attack.

In terms of strength, however, it must be controlled and balanced steadily, because otherwise when he hit the first target, the force of the rotation will render it to be unable to hit the second target, not to mention the power to control it to return back to your hand.

The principle of this Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword technique is its most important characteristics, the long range attack.

“A pebble capable of shooting down 5-6 goal at a time, meaning that if I control three or four sword, I would be able to target more than that, the problem is I need more swords, while the pebbles

doesn't have the same strength that I needs, so I can only use the holy sword to attack for now." Xie Aoyu talk to himself.

He draws out the Holy Spirit Sword, shook his hands to start the throwing.

"Sou!"

The Holy Sword is moving fast, crushing the hill 10 meters ahead, and then rotates; it turns back into the hands of Xie Aoyu.

This is the long-distance attack method of the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword.

"Yiya!"

The Xiao Bai anxious cry resounds.

It looks like a white silhouette was running from the distance.

"Roar!"

It is a Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf who come flying from behind them. The roars of this fierce beast is very strong, it shook the whole sky, and the air filled with ice arrows forming from the roars.

Xie Aoyu laughs saying:”What a delicious find.”

Recently, Xie Aoyu is just so into practicing, while hunting and cooking is now done by Xiao Bai.Xie Aoyu once even suspected that Xiao Bai has changed towards more human nature , he is now able to cook anything , although it still cannot be compare to Xie Aoyu but still quite delicious. [\[1\]](#)

They also discovered that the most delicious meat is not the turkey, or the fire rabbit, but the meat of this Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf. The delicacy of its meat made them to crave for more.

This makes Xiao Bai tries to lure one or two Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf to come.

Xie Aoyu take one step forward, with the holy spirit sword surging up a dou qi , causing a swirling winds to mince the ice arrows , then he launch a kick towards the Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf beast.

“Roar!”

At this time, a shriller roars exploding like a thunder breaking a tree.

More than four meters long, with two meters tall, a snow white body belongs to the great majestic looking Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf appeared in the distance, the head is half a meter long; he opens his large mouth, sends out roaring of anger.

“Ice wind Unicorn Wolf King!” Xie Aoyu becomes cautious.

Ordinary Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf is usually on the high level advanced realm, but the Ice Wind Unicorn King is between the lower spirit level and high spirit level. His strength is no doubt strong.

However Xie Aoyu still kicks that Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf; ignore the king before his eyes.

“Roar!”

Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf king spout ice arrows, this ice arrows obviously based on the ice wind compound by magic, and with the speed of lightning, striking towards Xie Aoyu’s chest.

“Bang!”

Xie Aoyu kick the Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf body, making it plunged toward the ice arrows attack and the ice arrows pierced through the body of the poor beast.

“Flip!”

The corpse of Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf falls to the ground.

Seeing what have just happened, the king raises his head to send

out a wild rage roars.

“Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword!”

The Holy Spirit Sword divide spatially.

And then actually emerges out of thin air, three light resembles the holy sword appears on the left, middle, and right side, spinning, similar to the ordinary flying sword, flies towards that Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf king.

This is the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword’s close combat technique.

It is called Xuan Qi sword.

Based on the records written in the scroll , when this sword techniques practiced at the highest level , the sword can divided into seven sword-shaped light from seven different directions , circling the target , making the target has no room for maneuver or escape.

That wolf has considerable wisdom, when he saw the situation looks unfavorable to him; he launched three ice arrows, and soars to jump to give him more room to act.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

A loud sound echoed when all three Ice Arrows and the three light swords collided in the air.

All the arrows were destroyed but not the swords of light. Either in terms of speed or shape, the swords does not seem to be affected at all, and continues to move forward.

“Sou! Sou! Sou!”

The Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf king was stabbed by the three swords of light in the air. Xie Aoyu then shook his hand, launching the Holy Spirit Sword towards the king.

The Holy Spirit Sword flying toward the Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf king and beheaded him, then spun back into Xie Aoyu’s hand.

The king’s body fell to the ground, with his head.

“Xiao Bai, lets dig in.”Xie Aoyu laughs while saying that.

There are two Ice Wind Unicorn Wolves for one man and one beast.

After the meal, Xie Aoyu whispered, “Xiao Bai, how you can eat so much, you’ve been eating one and a half, half of it is from my share.”

“Yiya!”

Xiao Bai touching his belly, signifying that it is just barely enough.

Xie Aoyu then once more with Xiao Bai, decided that he needs to continue to explore this Hengduan Mountains. From the outside of the small valley, is the view of the endless mountains.

Due to the special nature of this Hengduan Mountain, many evil beasts arise around here, more and more higher level evil beasts. Xie Aoyu has no plans to explore further into the mountains. Areas near the valley have lots of spirit level beasts that appears, so he does not want to bite more than he can chew.

Therefore he then chose to cross the west of the Hengduan Mountain to walk. He walked for several hours, climbed up a mountain; Xie Aoyu intends to take a break, only to see where about a hundred meters away, there is a slim figure, bending over to pick flowers. Even though the distance is one hundred meters apart, he still can smell the exotic scent of her.

“Sister Ziyan!” Xie Aoyu sees that person’s shadow, calling her out.

That person is Ziyan, when she sees Xie Aoyu, there is a smile on her face, “It’s that kid, as I think who he is?”

“How could I forget when every day all I think and dream of is sister Ziyan.” Xie Aoyu is grinning after he said that. Being together with Ziyan, makes Xie Aoyu relax as if there is no need to

think about anything at all.

.There is a light flashes in Ziyan's eyes, "You did not have naughty dreams of me naked, right? "

Her facial expression is full of meaning behind it, intentionally revealing her seductive style. In addition, her words could make anyone minds to be in disarray. Xie Aoyu is no exception; he could feel his lust raised all of sudden.

"Today's weather is really good, and the sunlight is beautiful."Xie Aoyu hurries to change the topic; he does not want to have a boner in front of Ziyan.

Ziyan said with a beautiful smile: "Yes, the weather is very good, but as for the sun, I do not know that the sunlight is that beautiful, hehe"

[\[1\]](#) T/N: You mean a cute, small beast cooking for you? I'm jealous!

Chapter 62: A Gift

They had just met after a while; of course there are so many things to talk about.

Ziyan inspected Xie Aoyu 's medical spirit finger, and then took out some grass and give it to Xie Aoyu, "This is the reason why I find these grass and flowers"

"Thank you so much, elder sister."Xie Aoyu feels really excited.

He immediately starts the process to absorb the essences of these strange flowers and grass. He takes the strange flowers and put his medical spirit finger to move into the centre of the flowers. The finger immediately let out a light yellow luminescence.

The flowers also suffused with a faint white halo, formed a subtle air which flowed from the fingertips, covered the pinky finger, and finally disappear.

So after the essences absorptions of these flowers and grass is done, Xie Aoyu's finger color become slightly stronger, but still as before not looking obvious.

"Sister, do you have anything that needs my help?"Xie Aoyu said with a smile, "I also know that there is no way to compare my strength and elder sister, but I'm sure I can be pretty helpful."

Ziyan's jade-like fingers caressing Xie Aoyu's forehead gently,

“You know, I think your mouth is sweeter than honey.”

“Of course it’s sweet, if elder sister wants to eat it; I can offer it to you, free of charge.” Xie Aoyu blurted out.

Ziyan reached out and twist Xie Aoyu’s ear, “Good, you even dared to let me eat it, soon after I leave, you will soaks to several beauties.”

The fragrance envelops the air; it’s like a crime because it is too tempting. Even when angry, her face still looks pretty and charming. Being in a daze for a while, Xie Aoyu said: “Sister, you are so beautiful.”

“Dup

Ziyan feel her heart beating very fast, her pretty face also turns red. This was the first time she felt a feeling like this. Of course, based on her status, her beauty and her strength, she is pursued by many men who wanted her. Many are throwing compliments and sweet talks , but none have been able to melt her feelings. But with just one sentence, Xie Aoyu managed to make her feelings in disarray.

“Of course, your elder sister with You Lan, are called peerless beauty duo.” Ziyan said proudly, and to cover her feelings and does not want this kind of talk to continue, she changed the topic of conversation immediately, “I remember when I and you separated, you was only in high advance level realm, and now you are in lower spirit level realm, the progress speed is just too fast.”

“It was nothing big.” Said Xie Aoyu, proudly.

Ziyan then pours cold water by saying: “Don’t get too comfortable, I have met many people around this mountainous region, in their way to participate in the youth competition, with strength up to ascension level, I even met two or three people in cloud-level realm.”

Xie Aoyu eyes widened when he heard those words, “Are you kidding me?”

“Younger brother, you must expand your view and get out from your shell. A lot of things you still do not know. On the mainland, there are many large and powerful families, so the appearance of one or two genius is quite normal. These geniuses have the support of the major forces, they receive the best training. So, to reach the cloud realm, is quite normal. Their talent is totally not inferior to your talent. You’ve only started to cultivate for one or two years, imagine those who have broad support and resources over the past ten years, which realms do you think they will be at your age? “She spoke of here, said with a smile, “...However, I am sure, as far as I know, people who have not received nor have any support or resources, at the same time shows talent on par with you, there are only two people.”

When he heard Ziyan said that, Xie Aoyu feels somehow relaxed.

As Ziyan said, just look at Chalice, although he is a thrash, he is not weaker than Xie Aoyu, and to contracted the four arms ape as

familiar, this was the strength of respected family.

“And the two people?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“Can’t you think?” Ziyang slightly tilt her head up, showing her towering peaks.

Xie Aoyu said with a smile: “Of course it is the elder sister, another person is definitely the butterfly queen, that woman called You Lan Ruo.”

“You have a good eyesight.” Ziyang said with a smile, “Younger brother, every time I hear you mention the name Youlan, as if, you dislike and hate her.”

How could I not hate her, that old woman wants to kill me.

Xie Aoyu naturally doesn’t want to tell her about that, he does not want Ziyang to find Youlan and fighting merely to avenge what was done to him. If there any form of hatred between her and Youlan, that would not be good, at least to Ziyang, he will risk of endanger her.

“She’s always being a bother to you, that’s why I subconsciously do not like her.” Xie Aoyu was actually smart, to found an excuse.

“Really, she is the master of your lover, that childhood friend of yours.” Ziyang said with a faint smile on her face.

Xie Aoyu also reply with a smile and said: “If the relations of me and Bing Wu, the childhood friend of mine, are lovers, but wouldn’t that also make the relationship between me and elder sister Ziyan, lovers too?”

Ziyan twisted Xie Aoyu’s ear once more, “You smelly younger brother, we haven’t seen each other for a while , you already know how to talk like this, wait until later to see how I’m going to straighten you back.”

They joke for a while and then find a place to sit.

“Why don’t you tell me if you have any other business to be dealt with here. “Xie Aoyu said.

“Nothing big, I just want to participate in the auction of the Forest City General Assembly, to bid on something.”Ziyan keep no secret.

The auction?

Which also to bid the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword fighting skills?

Xie Aoyu gives no second thought, took out the scroll and said, “Are you interested, in this?”

Ziyan took the scroll and opened it, surprised:”How is this end up in your hands? They told me that it was lost, so was it stolen by you? It’s not possible, ah. ”

Xie Aoyu then tell her how he managed to get his hands on this infamous Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword skill from the start to the finish.

“You’re lucky.”Ziyan said, lightly laughed,” People said luck is also a strength, this is indeed true. ”

“If you want it, you can just take it.”Xie Aoyu laughed. He has learned everything already, there’s nothing more left for him, right now he only needs to cultivate and polish the skill further.

Listen to the words of Xie Aoyu , Ziyan become speechless.

This skill that can make all the major and minor powers to behave like a madman, but Xie Aoyu willingly to give it to her without a slightest hesitation. Although he does not know anything about the truth behind this scroll, at least the prowess skill should be able to make him to continue hold this scroll.

“Younger brother, do you know the real truth regarding this scroll?”Ziyan asked him seriously.

“I know there might be something hidden behind this scroll.”Xie Aoyu still being indifferent

Ziyan stares at Xie Aoyu and curiously said, “Knowing that you still want to give it to me?”

Xie Aoyu said with a smile: “Certainly, because you are my beautiful elder sister Ziyan.”

When she looked at his sincere eyes, Ziyan ice-cold heart trembles, she immediately turns her head to look elsewhere; trying to calm herself back.

“Do you really don’t know what is hidden behind the scroll?” Ziyan asked him again seriously.

“I don’t know, but it doesn’t seem that there’s anything other than the instructions .”Xie Aoyu suddenly remembered Luo Kun last expression of being disappointment, an expression that indirectly said there should be more than meets the eye.

Ziyan said with a smile: “Look at here.”

Xie Aoyu watches Ziyan curiously.

Ziyan put the scroll,facing the sun, “There, look again.”

Xie Aoyu lowers his head to watch, but he still could not find anything, so before he could ask what is it that she wants to show him, his gaze focused on a section of the scroll and suddenly he become surprised.

He takes the scroll, and lifts it up, towards the sunlight, “Is this a map?”

“You’re a lot smarter than I thought.” Ziyan did not think that Xie Aoyu was able to see the mystery behind the scroll so quickly, “As you can see, this is a map.”

Originally the content of the scroll is the fighting technique of the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword, but it also has pictures and so on, making it looks like any common scroll and every single things has been arranged accordingly in particular order.

“What’s in your mind when you see this map?” Ziyan asked.

“This scroll is one of the three treasure belongs to Nangong Clan, so there is no doubt that this map is related to the Nangong clan.” Xie Aoyu said.

Ziyan nodded and said: “Right, millenniums ago, the Nangong clan were erased from the face of the earth mysteriously. No one knows how or what happened, but the Nangong clan once was known as the mainland number one clan, not only in the clan has countless wealth, it also has innumerable fighting techniques, compounded drugs, weapon and so on. Only after the extermination of the Nangong clan, actually people discovers these things, and spread the news afterwards. It seems that the treasures of Nangong clan hidden in a secret place, but with this map, it will show us where exactly the treasure was.”

“No wonder all the big powers decided to come here. Apparently it is because of this reason.” Xie Aoyu then begins to understand the real objective of people like Qin Dou and Greed. It was because of this map.

Ziyan smile and said: “Now you knew, do you still want to give it me?”

Xie Aoyu said: “Of course, something that has been sent out, how is it possible to come back, I am not that kind of person, let alone since it is in the hands of such peerless beauty as Ziyan sister.”

“Aren’t you excited?” Ziyan stares at him intensely.

“I would be lying if I said I was not excited at all, but I also know there is a truth behind all the truth. The truth is my current strength is not enough for me and the Xie clan to deal with all major forces in this mainland.” Xie Aoyu smiled, “This will gives the elder sister, a great opportunity. Moreover the elder sister is a good person, even if you obtained these things, you would definitely not make it as your sole possession, and still leave some for our Xie clan.”

After looking at Xie Aoyu’s face for a few moments, Ziyan smiled and said: “You have grown up.”

I am an adult, and so Xie Aoyu respond by saying: “Ziyan sister wants to know what kind of thought I have right now? “

“What is it?”Ziyan asked.

Xie Aoyu answered seriously: “If I can make elder sister as my woman, wouldn’t that mean that all the treasures will also be owned by Xie clan?”

“Good, when you can defeat me, I will agree to be your woman.”Ziyan said with a smile, “Younger brother, it is not that the elder sister wants to pours cold water on you, your talent is indeed high, but mine is not worse than you, moreover right now I am in the highest level of sage realm. For you to defeat elder sister, perhaps you can only hope that I intentionally let myself to lose.”

“What is it with intentionally to lose?”

Someone interrupt their conversation from behind.

Xie Aoyu and Ziyan turn their head to look. It is a male about thirty years old, tall and is very charming. On his face, there’s a light smile, giving an impression of having self confident.

Ziyan smiles, and said in a low voice:”This is your love rival.”

Chapter 63: Taking Advantage

Listen to the words of Ziyan , Xie Aoyu also began to understand . This guy apparently was one of Ziyan's pursuers. In fact, she seems to have a good impression of the man.

It seems that I must act a little.

Xie Aoyu starts his calculative moves.

“Ziyan sister, why not you introduce him to me?” Xie Aoyu holds Ziyan beautiful white hand, and he firmly interlocks his fingers with hers.

Such a move is usually an intimate action between couples.

Ziyan look at Xie Aoyu and gently squeezed his hand, she naturally can see what is Xie Aoyu up to. She laughed and said: “This is the youngest elders of Pasa clan, Dalla.”

“Pasa clan?”Xie Aoyu did not expect at all that after he struggled to escape from the Forest City due to Pasa clan, he is now, currently dealing with one of the elders from Pasa clan.

What a bad luck!

Although Dalla gives a feeling of elegance to all who looked upon him, but the Xie Aoyu who has experience dealing with two men of

Pasa clan , Chalice and Greed , obviously he would not have a good impression of this man.

Seeing the change in Xie Aoyu attitude, Ziyan's heart whispered, he couldn't be feeling jealous, would he?

“Ziyan,why didn't you introduce him to me?” When Dalla saw Xie Aoyu and Ziyan holding each other's hands, he felt very uncomfortable, but still tried to maintain his gentlemanly demeanor.

Xie Aoyu said: “My name is Xie Aoyu, I am Ziyan's man.”

“What?”

Dalla's gentlemanly demeanor once again shaken. He became speechless and his mouth gaping wide due to hear the shocking revelations of young men in front of him. His behavior made him to look very silly.

Ziyan almost laughed, she whispered, “I say brother, you really are quite daring. ”

“I just want to help my sister to keep the flies away.”Xie Aoyu said with a smile. He loosened his grip on the Ziyan's white hand, and then put his arm on her slender waist.

Despite Xie Aoyu being quite young, he is not short, with his height one and a eight meter higher than Ziyan, the scene of him

hugging Ziyan does not seem to be awkward at all, instead it looks natural and appropriate.

“You took advantage of me.” Ziyan’s beautiful face flushed red, whispering in a low voice. She did not reject his act at all, but instead her expression looked like a young girl who is very shy and timid.

The scene before him has made Dalla to feel crazily jealous.

He has pursued Ziyan more than ten years. He had met her at the age of 20 years old; he ignores all the beauties who want to get close to him. Now at the age of thirty-three years old, he tried desperately to pledge his thirteen years of love towards her. But currently, before him, the woman of his dreams is in the arms of another man.

Especially since Xie Aoyu seems very delicate and weak, and obviously younger. All of these made Dalla’s mind to become crazier. In his eyes, Xie Aoyu’s appearance was not charming, compare to him.

He loses to such a mediocre person unexpectedly. “Haha, I do not know which family this little brother from.” Dalla has chosen to counter-attack verbally. He who came from Pasa clan, one of the imperial clan, despite not being in top rank, his clan still one of the major force in this land. That is why he wants to show how “small” Xie Aoyu compare to him.

Xie Aoyu shrugged and said, “Old timers, for you to not know

who I am, I'm afraid my clan is just a insufficient lower rank clan. Perhaps if you are Pasa's clan patriarch, I would consider of telling you. ”

Old, old timers? Dalla's face muscle twitches. Although he already over 30 years old, but Dallard is confident with his appearance, his utmost lethal weapon to charms most woman, unexpectedly is now called an old timers.

What annoyed him the most was, Xie Aoyu unexpectedly said that he did not have the qualifications to know his status.

Does he come from some ancient families?

Dalla knows there are many ancient clans established and expanding their influence in every corner of this continent for over thousands of years. But average person would not know of the existence of these ancients clan.

He feels that if this young man is not from an ancient clan, how could he possibly win over Ziyan ? Dalal whispered to himself.

When she saw the bitter expression on Dalla 's face, she cannot help but raise her thumb to Xie Aoyu secretly and said,”You really are a blast .”

“If it is for sister Ziyan's sake, I'm even more than willing to sell myself.”Xie Aoyu said.

Sell yourself?

Who is selling who? Ziyan pinch Xie Aoyu 's hand that wrapped around her waist gently, this brat, how long will you took advantage on me.

Dalla looks at their actions, enviously.

“Ziyan, you really are with him?”Dalla’s suppressed jealousy is almost making him to go crazy.

Ziyan , who had long annoyed with Dalla, do not want to miss this golden opportunity to get rid of him from her life, and so she said with a smile: “Yes, I am.”

“Why!”Dalla’s handsome face becomes twisted.

“You and I are not compatible.”Ziyan casually said, “I hope that you can find your happiness.”

Dalla clenched both of his fists in anger and said: “But I pursued you for thirteen years!” For thirteen years, this guy surely does have a strong passion, Xie Aoyu felt a bit surprised. He turns his head toward Ziyan. It seems that Ziyan unexpectedly was not moved at all.

“That is your one-sided wishes, I have told you more than once, that we are not compatible and never will be!”Ziyan looks like she cannot hold anymore. To her, Dalla actions of pursuing her are

extremely annoying and bothersome.

“Are you throwing me out of your life just like that?” Dalla desperately asks.

Xie Aoyu gives him a cold look and firmly said: “Stop your shit talks, she is my woman!” After he expressed these words, he embraces Ziyan slim waist more tightly than before, as if to say that she belongs to him and only him.

This bold action makes Ziyan’s heart to jump fiercely.

In the past, all her pursuers have always acted cautiously, for fear it would anger Ziyan. Ziyan certainly do not like when they are too overbearing. But Xie Aoyu bold actions, give her a totally different feeling.

“You fucker, I will kill you!” Dalla since before have the urge to kill Xie Aoyu , clenching his fists and launch it forward. With the strength of his high level Rainbow realm , Xie Aoyu would certainly die with a single blow .

“Dalla, you went too far!”

Ziyan is really angry right now, she also move her fist to block the attack.

It must be known to oppose Ziyan who is the highest level Sage, with the level difference being too significant, it is likely courting

your own death.

Ziyan annoyed by the attacks leveled against Xie Aoyu , since the attacks appeared to be particularly strong.

“BAMM!”

Their punches collided. The impact of these encounters make Dalla plunged five to six steps backwards. Visible blood flowing from his mouth, but the strange thing is he just smirked like nothing happened.

“Ah!” Unlike Dalla , Ziyan does not seem affected by the impact, her body still stand firmly on the ground , but what has changed is her face complexion , when she saw a silver white long needle punctured her fist.”A poison..!!”

Xie Aoyu sees that curses angrily: “Dalla,your Pasa clan really are full with cowards and shameless trash, proven by your dirty way of fighting.”

“Shut up!”Dalla shouts angrily, “Damn, you smelly whore, this father has pursued you for thirteen years, you were not even once try to open your eyes to see me, instead you took a liking for this boy, fuck, you really like an old cow who only eats tender grass(meaning that she like fresh and younger man).”

Ziyan stops the furious and angry Xie Aoyu , then she grabbed Xie Aoyu ‘s left hand pinky finger and said, “The poison that you gave

me is capable of destroying my Qi.”

“Right, later when you turn into an ordinary woman, hahaha, you will see what I am going to do with you.” Dalla laughs as he said with a perverted smile on his face, “After all, you will be an exclusive toy for me to play with.”

Xie Aoyu’s head almost exploded when he heard that.

This Qi poison is one of the most vicious poisons, and within three hours, it will spread all over the body, destroying the Qi. Ordinary people, even the King-class level expert, could not compete with this kind of poison.

“Trash!” Xie Aoyu clenched his fist; how he wishes that he could punch him hard with this fist of his.

But he knows that he is not a match, moreover their level difference is just too big.

Dalla said with a sinister smile: “Even if you are from some ancient family, ha, so what, that would only add more reason for me to kill you here, since no one will know. As for Ziyan, hahaha, how’s the feeling of having the poison eating you? Now since you will soon descended from the highest sage level, be a good girl and accept your fate, just wait for me to play with you for three days and three nights. I cannot wait to announce the whole continent that the peerless beauty Ziyan is now waiting under my crotch, hahahaha.....”

Chapter 64: The Dispersed Qi Poison

“People from Pasa clan really are despicable!” Xie Aoyu nearly went insane because of his patience level has reached the limit, but his heart keep on telling himself unceasingly, calm down, calm down!

Dalla is giving a cold stare towards Xie Aoyu.

“Dalla, just tell me what do you want!” Ziyan shouted angrily.

“I see...so she wants to protect this brat so much.” Dalla was unable to put out the fire that fueled his jealousy, he clenches his jaws, “Good, good, since you care about this boy, I ‘ll make you to cry and beg for me to fuck you hard in front of him , this would certainly give him a real good time , hahaha!!.....”

That’s it; I will stake my life to kick his sorry ass!

Xie Aoyu is planning to use the Earth Escaping technique to hold Dalla and lead him far away from Ziyan, even if it means he have to die, as long as Ziyan is safe, he don’t care about anything else.

“What is wrong? Don’t tell me that you are planning to oppose me with your meager level?” Dalla said in provoking manners.

Good, the more you look down on me, the better, XieAoyu said in his heart.

Greed, a level sage expert was also looked down on him, but as the results, he was wounded by him, gave Xie Aoyu an opportunity to escape.

This Dalla is just a rainbow level, so the success rate to seize an opportunity to escape should be higher.

“Dalla!” Ziyan’s eyebrows furrowed.

“Go to hell.” Dalla is losing his temper, he reached and pushed Ziyan, and then he look at Xie Aoyu with eyes full of mockery and contempt. He wants to let him know that he is entitled to do anything he wants.

The level difference between spirit level realm and rainbow realm is just too big.

Even so, nobody knows about the mysterious Earth Escaping technique belongs to Xie Aoyu, this is his trump card, the only advantage he has to provide him with single opportunity.

An opportunity to kill his enemies with one strike.

If this one strike cannot kill Dalla, then he would be the one to be killed instead.

“Brat.” Dalla lifts his palm.

When that palm almost reaches him, Xie Aoyu quickly moves aside.

Earth Escaping technique!

Everything happened in a flash, with Xie Aoyu disappears suddenly. This sudden change of events makes Dalla and Ziyang surprised, and leave them in astonishment.

After all, this Earth Escaping technique is just too mysterious and strange in the sight of those who only see it for the first time.

Xie Aoyu slipped behind Dalla, he raised his Holy Spirit Sword, with the intent to kill him with one strike!

He will only have one chance.

If Dalla can dodge his attack, with the level difference between them, his Earth Escaping technique would be useless, and he would be the one to be killed instead.

“Damn it!”

Dalla let out a furious roar, he hastily gathers his qi to create a protection layer to defend his body from Xie Aoyu's surprised attack. He turns his body and prepares to shoot his fist toward Xie Aoyu.

Because his level is higher ten folds, the speed is also surprisingly

fast, moreover he is not like Greed who prefer to dodge, instead he decided to attack him head on.

“Ah!”

Dalla's speed is extremely quick, however he did not succeed to fully blocked Xie Aoyu's attack as the latter manage to leave a wound on the back of his body, but he takes advantage of this opportunity to turn around and punched him. Xie Aoyu manage to barely blocked the punch but the impact from the explosive strength of the punch makes him to spurt a mouthful blood as him plunged backwards.

The difference of strength between both sides was just too big.

Xie Aoyu can only fight the higher level opponent with the aid of Earth Escaping technique which gives him the opportunity to finish the enemy with one strike.

“Brat, you court your own death!” Dalla's face contorting in pain because of the injuries on his back. He seems to have lost his mind; he rushed toward Xie Aoyu with unmatched speed. Even if Xie Aoyu uses the Earth Escaping technique, he will not be able to compete.

Obviously the experience when Xie Aoyu faced Greed before, taught him that his decision to not run away directly is correct.

“Dalla!”

Ziyan's voice filled with anger echoes suddenly, and then like a ghost, she appears behind Dalla's back, moves her fist toward Dalla.

This sudden unexpected events once again makes Dalla's to feels extremely anxious.

The poison can be said as the most vicious, and ruthless poison. As long as it enters someone body, he or she would be unable to use his or her Qi within three hours, and after that, the Qi will rapidly dissipate from the body permanently.

Unforeseen by him, Ziyan is still able to control her Qi.

This unusual and fearful existence of the highest sage level, Ziyan has caused Dalla to choose to jump forward, decided to run from the fight with his tail between his legs. He do not want to counter-attack, since he understands the level of difference between them.

Even so, his back was still pounded hard by Ziyan powerful punch.

“BAM!”

Dalla's body was smashed, trembles and shakes heavily. His previous wound on the back burst open, and due to the punch formidable strength, he crashed on top of the boulder.

Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword!

Xie Aoyu, seeing this opportunity shook his hand to throw the Holy Spirit Sword.

“Sou!”

The Holy Spirit Sword flew, arching out cleave the air, and heading towards Dalla ‘s neck.

The after effect of Ziyan’s punch caused Dalla to still in a daze , but then he felt a sudden chill on his neck , and his body move aside almost reflexively dodging the attack.

“Swoosh!”

However, with injuries on his body, making it difficult for him to move and dodge the attack completely, thus as the result, the Holy Spirit Sword severed his right arm from his body.

The Holy Spirit Sword turn and fly back to Xie Aoyu’s hand. Xie Aoyu then moves his sword, ready to launch the next attack. The next attack is also from the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword skill.

But this time, it would be the strength of the close combat.

The sword divides and three sword-shaped lights appear in three position.

Dalla desperately tried to gather his Qi to protect his body and also to fight back, but he failed to do so because his internal organs were seriously injured. He knows the reason why his body failed to gather any Qi is because Ziyang's formidable punch, which not only have damaged his internal organs, but it also distributes the vicious Qi poison into his body through the punch.

He is now unable to use and circulate any Qi.

The current he is not even a match for Xie Aoyu because he could not gather any Qi, he is now just an ordinary person, who has severe injuries on his body. So, in this situation, Dalla have no choice but to clenches his teeth and start to gather all his remaining strength.

“Warghh!”

His mouth was spewing a mouthful of blood, then regardless of how much pain he suffered, before the attack Xie Aoyu could reach him, Dalla immediately rush back and fled.

“Swissh, swish, swish!”

At the moment, his body is not covered by any Qi layer, and was not tough as before, so he was stabbed on his back, his waist, and his left thigh by three sword-shaped lights causing him to fall to the ground.

Dalla tried to get up but he fell down once again. From his increasingly blurry vision, he saw Xie Aoyu throws his sword at him again. Dalla knows it is unlikely he will be able to avoid this attack, so he suddenly rolled backwards.

But there's a cliff on that side.

Dalla screamed and fell down.

With the Holy Spirit Sword in his hand, Xie Aoyu immediately rush to the edge of the cliff to make sure there was no possibility for Dalla to be alive. The cliff is about thousands meters height, and foggy, makes it difficult for him to see the bottom clearly.

However, thinking about Dalla severe injuries, Xie Aoyu convince he must have died. He let out a breath of relief.

"Ziyan elder sister."Xie Aoyu turns around and run towards Ziyan.

Ziyan forced a smile, and leaned on Xie Aoyu softly.

"Ziyan elder sister, do you know how to get rid that Qi poison?"Xie Aoyu asked.

"There's nothing can be done."Ziyan closed her eyes, because she did not want him to see her cry.

“No way, because I saw when you were fighting Dalla, you’re still able to use Qi.”Xie Aoyu said.

She let out a long sigh and said:” It is because of your Spirit Medical Finger, but no matter how powerful and potent it is, it is still not able to get rid of this poison, only able to hold the poison enough from spreading for a while.”

So that’s what happened.

Xie Aoyu said: “So there’s no hope at all?”

“There is someone who perhaps can, but” Ziyan did not continue her words.

“Who is it?”Xie Aoyu feels excited.

“An heretic sect expert called Batulu.” There is a bitter expression on Ziyan’s face when she said that.

Xie Aoyu also had heard about this person before,”I see, alright, I will carry elder sister to look for him now.” After he said that, he put Ziyan on the back of his body.

Ziyan forced a smile and said: “His residence is located far from here, and personally , this person is an eccentric and unreasonable human being, to ask him to get rid of this poison , is an almost impossible matter that probably will never happen . Let’s just forget that I ever mention this.”

“It is not good, even if there’s only shred of hope, I will not give up!” Xie Aoyu firmly, he then put down Ziyan, “Elder sister, can you wait for a moment, I will be right back.”

As soon as he is done speaking, he speeds up, leaving no trails.

After a while, Xie Aoyu’s figure reappears in Ziyan’s sight.

Xie Aoyu rode a full four meters long, two meters height Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf, while whipping its body.

If you just rely solely on speed, Xie Aoyu’s Earth Escaping technique is more than enough, but the Qi consumption is too big. Besides, he will not be able to carry Ziyan when using this technique. The best method that he can think of is to find a wind spirit beast like the one he is on right now.

When the Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf arrives, Ziyan discovered that its body is full with scars. It seems caused by Xie Aoyu, as to tame the beast so that it will always comply with the orders.

Xie Aoyu hugs Ziyan, put her on the back of the wolf beast.

During this time, Ziyan is always watching Xie Aoyu , as the latter seems to have benefited nothing from helping her, and yet still looks quite anxious of her well being.

This makes Ziyan's heart to deeply moves.

If any man , upon seeing a woman with a peerless beauty, with tantalizing body at that , in a state of helplessness , will surely have evil intentions. But Xie Aoyu who embraced her, had no other intention except sincerely wanted to help her. This is the first time she met such a person.

“Elder sister, in which direction should we be heading to find this expert called Batulu?”Xie Aoyu asked.

“Hold me tightly.”Ziyan placed herself comfortably in XieAoyu's arms, “Batulu's residence is located in the south-eastern direction, about 2000 miles away, and from here you can just go straight forward.”

Xie Aoyu placed his left hand on Ziyan's stomach, “Elder sister,you hold my Medical Spirit Finger to suppress the poison as long as possible from spreading further.”

Ziyan let out a light respond “En”, and hold Xie Aoyu's left hand.

“Move!”Xie Aoyu whips the Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf body.

The poor wolf can do nothing but let out a long howling, and then speed forward crazily. Right now, the only thing it has on its mind is to quickly reach the destination, and escape from the clutches of this devil called Xie Aoyu.

Chapter 65: Moves

There are no other mounts that has skills like the Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf, its speed is first-class, moreover it can use the wind magic, although it cannot fly, it is still able to maintain its highest speed constantly while sped away.

As for Xie Aoyu, even if he uses the Earth Escaping technique, he would not be able to go far, because by then he would already exhaust his Qi consumption.

But what Xie Aoyu does not know, Xiao Bai has secretly use the wind magic to give an extra push to the Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf's wind magic, resulting the speed to be quicker.

And gallop all the way.

Shortly, before the poison within Ziyan's body start to become active again, the mountains have become distant and disappear from their sight.

The speed seems to have reached its limit.

Xie Aoyu use his Qi to wraps him and Ziyan's body, to prevent the strong winds due to being too fast from reaching and making her uncomfortable. His deeds, even if it is just a small and simple deed, it still makes her heart to feels slightly touched.

It shows how caring and details person he is.

Faster! Faster! Faster!

This is the only thing inside Xie Aoyu's mind.

But less than 60 miles ahead, the route is blocked.

Their path was blocked by the forces of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group, led by a man named Valencia, who is currently look at Xie Aoyu with a cold and sharp eyes.

"Sir, you should explain the matter regarding this map!" Valencia cold voice resounds.

Xie Aoyu eyebrows furrowed. He doesn't have time for this, but he doesn't want to delay the time further either, and so he said: "That is the only map inside Tela's spatial ring. I have given it to you, so I don't think that I need to explain anything at all."

"You lied!" The guy next to Valencia's roar furiously.

Previously, they forced him to hand over the map, and led Xie Aoyu to suppressed his anger. But now Ziyan is with him, so he cannot act recklessly and wasting more time here. He gives a cold stare towards that arrogant guy, and said: "Believe me if you want to, I don't have much time to spend with you guys here."

Valencia still not opens his mouth, remain silent.

That arrogant man seeing that Valencia not saying anything become more bold, he look at Xie Aoyu and said: “Brat, you should know who we are, so you better hand over the real map to us, otherwise, don’t blame us for being impolite.”

“I told you that is the real map!”Xie Aoyu grab the hilt of the Holy Spirit Sword tightly.

He would use the Holy Spirit Sword if he has to, since he did not harvest anything from Te La’s spatial ring before. If they continued to block his way, he would not hesitate to use it to eliminate their lives. Xie Aoyu looked coldly at Valencia and all his followers.

He feared them before but that was because he was not strong enough to face them back then.

But now his level is the lower spirit level, and so he does not need to fear them anymore because of the difference of strength. Only this time what concern him the most is that if he acts recklessly, it would affect Ziyan condition.

“You fart, you know what happened to us when we went ...” Arrogant man furiously said.

“Shut up!”Valencia hurriedly interrupts the arrogant man words. He does not want the shameful incident that happened before known to others. What he does not know is that the mastermind behind the incident was Xie Aoyu.

The arrogant man also seems to understand, and so he closed his mouth.

Xie Aoyu said: "I have told you so many times that map is the only map inside Te La's spatial ring, but if you still do not believe me, there is nothing that can I do about it. Now I really have no time to waste here since I need to be hurry."

"Hurry? Hahaha! Hurry to go to play with women I would say." The arrogant man looked at Ziyan with his lewd eyes, "This woman is really beautiful and attractive, just looked at her make me feel so itchy."

"Valencia, is this the way people from the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group forces behave?" Xie Aoyu angrily said.

Valencia calmly said: "As long as you hand over the genuine map, I will not block your path, or you surrender the things that you have found and attained from this map."

"This will be the last time I repeat my words, that map is the real map!" Xie Aoyu cannot hold his anger anymore, "Move!"

The Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf listens to his order and moves forward.

"Want to run away? It would not be that easy." The arrogant man comes at Xie Aoyu side, and with his perverted looking eyes, his

hand try to touch Ziyan's chest.

The other people from the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group forces also form a circle around them.

“Stay out of my way!”

Xie Aoyu become furious, he punches the arrogant man left hand who tried to take advantage on Ziyan.

That arrogant man pulls back his hand and jumps backward immediately.

“Sir, just hands over the map.”Valencia said.

A murderous intent flash within Xie Aoyu's eyes, “You think that I really afraid of you? I just do not want to waste my time, dirtying my hands with people like you.”

The arrogant man laughs saying:”Haha,what an ignorant boy!”

Other people also burst out laughing.

Valencia also showed a facial expression that seems to ridicule him. He casually put his hands on his back; simply ignore Xie Aoyu as the latter holds no importance in his eyes.

“Die!”

Xie Aoyu knows that it is impossible to solve by using words. He draws his Holy Spirit Sword, and shook his hand to throw it off.

This long range attack belongs to Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword skill.

“Sou!”

As the Holy Spirit Sword speedily flying forward towards the arrogant man, who is currently unable to react on time, everyone subconsciously close their eyes for a moment. In the split second, the Holy Spirit Sword cut his head off.

The Holy Spirit Sword revolves, and returns to Xie Aoyu’s hand.

“How dare you, to kill a person from our Imperial Crown Mercenary Group forces!”

“Brothers, kill him!”

“Everyone, charge forward and cut off his head!”

The mercenary soldiers, who follow Valenicia orders, shout loudly and marched forward.

Valencia who is also furiously mad pulls out his long sword, prepare to rush towards Xie Aoyu.

Xie Aoyu holds the Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf, and his voice echoes through the air: “Out of my way orDie!”

“Brat,you court your own death!”Valencia shouted angrily, ” Before this I feel a bit pity to kill you because you are still young, but now since you asked for it , do not blame me, your father for not being soft anymore.”

The arrogant man is the son of his friend, now he was killed. What is he suppose to tell his father?

The furious Valencia, wields his sword and rush forward.

This time it would be a close combat technique of Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword!

Xie Aoyu shook the sword on his hands which then divides into three sword-shaped lights, positioned in three position, left, middle, and right. This mysterious sword skill has made the furious Valencia to be surprised, and so he hurriedly wields his sword to resist the attack.

“Swissh, swish,swish!”

Triple hits. He barely blocked the sword shaped lights. The triple attacks had numbed Valencia’s arms, and his heart was shaken

crazily. He somehow knew that the youth before him is a bad news.

Xie Aoyu rush forward, to deliver his most profound killing technique.

The techniqueIf I cannot do it,who can of Overlord Dragon Fist!

Once the sword integrates with this profound technique, Xie Aoyu's attacking powers will be doubled.

“Roar!”

An image of a dragon emerges out of thin air, along with its majestic roars.

Valencia barely able to resist the previous sword attack, which caused his arms to numbs. Now, Xie Aoyu moving too fast and cause him to not have the space and time to dodge. So once again he had to resist the attack by using his sword

“Crack!”

Valencia 's sword easily broke , a powerful forces impacting his chest . Startled, he cried out in pain, and plunged backwards. The broken sword also has fallen from his hands.

Rustle!

The Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf leaped forward.

Since it is a wind beast type, its speed naturally would be quicker, able to dodge the attacks of other people with ease, before landing directly in front of Valencia.

Valencia's mouth spurts bloods when he plunged upside down.

Xie Aoyu advanced along with him in a parallel fashion, and brought down a back-hand slash. Amidst the splattering blood, Valencia was chopped in half with a single sword stroke; the image of his death was extremely miserable.

The reason for the way of him doing things is because he wants to leave a deep fearful impression inside his enemy heart.

Since he don't have time to waste here.

All the other mercenaries stunned when they saw the scene. Without further delay, Xie Aoyu whips the IceWind Unicorn Wolf and speeds forward passing through the mercenaries, without given them a chance to stop or block his way.

Xie Aoyu put the Holy Spirit Sword back into its sheath.

“Those are the people of Imperial Crown Mercenary Group, and

you killed their people, don't you fear if they might seek you for revenge?" Ziyan said with a smile.

"They asked for it." Xie Aoyu said indifferently.

Seeing Xie Aoyu under the clear skies, Ziyan felt a bit strange. Previously she only saw Xie Aoyu as a teenage boy, but now he has grown up into a man.

When she recalled during his fight with Dalla , he has a superb agility technique, he could escape by himself if he wanted to , but instead he choose to fought with Dalla, a Rainbow level expert despite the risk of being killed . And now because of her, he offended the infamous merchant group. It would not be worth mentioning if he is from a large clan, but she knows better than anyone regarding Xie Aoyu background. His Xie clan is just an ordinary clan, that does not belong to any major powers in this mainland. This really makes her heart to feels deeply moves.

Still, this is not the time for her to be slightly moved.

More than 2000 miles ahead, even if the Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf goes all out, they will only reach the mountain valley that Batulu resides on the next morning.

[\[1\]](#)

[\[1\]](#) T/N: Remember that she only have 3 hours before her Qi permanently dissipates from her body? She probably can hold longer than that though because of Xie Aoyu's medical spirit finger~

Chapter 66: Shameless Condition

“Is this where that heretic expert Batulu lives?” Xie Aoyu furrowed his eyebrows. As he stood outside, a very strong yet unpleasant smell reached his nose. As for his surrounding, it seems that the colors of the ground, rocks, plants, and flowers of this mountain valley, whether it is outside or inside, were unexpectedly black.

“This is the right place. If other pharmacists produce drugs to save lives, he produces drugs to kill.” Ziyan said, sounding somewhat uncertain. “He is an expert in poisons. Everything inside and outside this mountain valley is poisonous.”

Xie Aoyu’s medical spirit finger, although it can suppress the Qi poison, it had, after all, only changed its color just recently; so at the moment it has already reached its limit.

Ziyan, without Qi energy as her body support, felt so exhausted, especially after the sleepless night.

Xie Aoyu got down from the Ice Wind Unicorn Wolf’s body with Ziyan, who is looking really tired on his back. When the wolf saw that, he let out a long pitiful howl of relief and ran out of their sight as he did not dare to stay here any longer.

The smells from the mountain valley are unpleasantly strong.

The heretic expert Batulu is someone who is very special. His fighting capability may be mediocre, but his poison skill is

incomparably top class. No one in this continent dares to provoke him. Xie Aoyu, with this on his mind, enters the poisonous valley.

The deeper he got into the valley, the more poisonous insects he encountered. However, with his Medical Spirit Finger, none of those poisonous insects dared to approach and attack him.

Xie Aoyu walked probably no more than ten meters, then while firmly standing, he said loudly: “Junior Xie Aoyu request a meeting with the poison master senior.”

“Go away!”

Within the mountain valley, the echoing angrily cursing voice transmits.

“Poison master senior.....” Xie Aoyu said.

“Go away!”

That voice sounded very firm.

Xie Aoyu did not even flinch when he heard that. He simply walks toward inside of the valley, where he saw from afar, an old man with a dishevelled hair and dirty face. He was dressed in all black and squatting on the ground. That is the heretic expert, Poison Master Batulu”Senior, please save Ziyan Elder Sister, I will certainly repay you generously.” Xie Aoyu asked again.

“I said that you go aw... ” Batulu looked angry at first, but when his lewd eyes focused on a peerless beauty before him, without even changing his facial expression, he immediately said, “Ahh, help, of course.”

Xie Aoyu’s body stiffened for a moment, his complexion has somewhat become ugly.

Meanwhile, Ziyan’s facial expression remained calm. She seems to have expected this to happen.

In addition, Xie Aoyu already knows that Master Batulu is weak in terms of combat capability, but he did not think that the latter only ranked in high level Advanced realm. Just based on this, he could tell how fearful and powerful he is in the field of deadly poisons.

“Senior, I desperately need your help. If senior has anything that you want, I will try my best within my capability to meet your demand.” Said Xie Aoyu hurriedly since this person is the only hope to save Ziyan.

The Poison Master Batulu bared his teeth, revealing his mouthful of yellow teeth. With his face full with dirt, his extremely sloppily appearance, and furthermore surrounded by this dark environment, it makes him look a bit creepy.

“I want your right arm!” Poison Master Batulu declared.

He expected that this Poison Master Batulu would want money, gold, or rare raw ingredients, but the man before him unexpectedly wanted his right arm as payment.

This unreasonable demand has made Xie Aoyu feel outraged.

However, if he does not comply with this demand, Ziyan would definitely turn into a disabled person.

If someone who is very strong and powerful before suddenly becomes disabled, it would be many times worse than death. Thinking of this made Xie Aoyu think of his father, Xie Gan.

Once Xie Gan regains his consciousness, he will turn into a disabled person.

Do I want a similar fate to befall Ziyan? Xie Aoyu without even the slightest hesitation, holds the Holy Spirit Sword with his left hand and said, "Good! I'll give you my right arm, but you must treat and cure Ziyan Elder Sister accordingly as promised!"

"It is easy for me, and I also have seven ways to dispel the poison inside her body. She will not only survive with her current strength not reduced in the least, but will instead have a breakthrough." The Poison Master Batulu spoke with an arrogant manner, showing that he is very confident with his own ability when it comes to poisons or his heretic arts.

“Good!”

Xie Aoyu brandished his sword, ready to cut his arm.

“I don’t want that!” Ziyan actually wanted to see if Xie Aoyu was willing to go that far to pay the price for her treatment.

After she saw his genuine response, her heart was filled with a sense of sheer joy.

This joy makes Ziyan feel somehow bewildered. She moves her arms to hug Xie Aoyu’s right arm hurriedly, and said, “I cannot have you lose your arm since there is no way you would get it back.”

“Good, good. I don’t want your disgusting arm either.” Batulu waves his hand and further said, “I just wanted to test you.”

“Are you saying that you are willing to help dispel the poison inside Ziyan Elder Sister?” XieAoyu was pleasantly surprised when he heard that.

Batulu said with a smile, “No.”

“You!” Xie Aoyu almost shouted angrily, but thinking that Batulu is the only hope he has, he decided to suppress his anger., “What does it take for you to agree?”

Batulu withdrew his hand and opened it. On top of his dirty palm, there are two black pills.

“Eat these two pills. Only then I will dispel the poison from her body.” Batulu said with a smile.

“No!” Ziyan’s face suddenly changed. “That is a corrosive drug, that once taken, if you don’t have the antidote within three days, your whole body will decay and die. It is one of the most evil and vicious poison.”

“Your eyesight is unexpectedly quite good to be able to recognize this corrosive poison.” Batulu feels slightly surprised as his hand hold the corrosive pills. “You are not going to comply with my demand?”

“No!” Ziyan firmly said.

She knows that once Xie Aoyu takes the pills, his life will be under the grasps of Batulu’s hand. They would not have any chance or strength to revolt.

Even with his Medical Spirit Finger, it would still be unable to dispel this type of vicious poison.

Xie Aoyu takes the corrosive pills from Batulu’s hand. “If you want me to, I’ll take it.”

“No!” Ziyan shouted as she tries to reach out with her hands to

snatch the pills from Xie Aoyu.

But how fast could she be with just her currently damaged, average strength?

Xie Aoyu puts the corrosion pills into his mouth and swallows it.

“Fool!”

Tears flowed from Ziyan’s eyes. She holds Xie Aoyu firmly, and bites his shoulder. Her mouth also seems to be saying something vague.

“Eat it well, eat it well...Anyway, even if you did not eat it, killing you would still be easy as pie.” Batulu said with a smile.

“Now if master can start the process to dispel the poison, Xie Aoyu would be deeply grateful.” Xie Aoyu said.

“Of course! As long as she lets me play with her first.” Batulu said with a perverted smile.

“Stop your fucking shit!”

Xie Aoyu was unable to contain his anger, and grabbed the collar of the Poison Master Batulu.

This is really outrageous.

He did not think at all that Poison Master Batulu would make such a shameless and outrageous demand. Even when Ziyan has suffered enough because of the poison in her body, the man before him still had the nerve to voice such a request.

Who would have thought that when his hand touched Batulu's collar, there was a numb feeling transmitted through him. Xie Aoyu let it go hurriedly with his medical spirit finger trembling slightly.

“Do not anger me.” Batulu said with a smile as he takes out a scroll. “In this scroll, there is a detoxification method recorded that can not only dispel the poison, but will also give her the strength to breakthrough.” After he finished speaking, he threw the scroll towards Ziyan. “You seem to have an understanding about poisonous technique to a certain degree, so have a look yourself.”

Ziyan open the scroll and read the content thoroughly.

She has a considerably high achievement within this field herself, and then after a while, her face reveals a color of being shocked.

“Right. This can indeed help me, and it can also make me break through, but I would rather die than agree with this kind of method!” Ziyan coldly throws the scroll on the ground.

“Heh, this may be beyond your control.” Batulu laughed and then said, “Those who come to my place, even if someone on King class level, will have to lower their head to me.” His two lewd eyes then sweep Ziyang beautiful face, “What a beauty! It has been more than six months since I last touched a woman.”

Xie Aoyu two eyes squinted, flashing cold and said, “Believe it or not, today I will kill you!”

“You want to kill me? Even if it is not because of these corrosive pills, I can still kill you by just raising my hand and poisoning you to death.” Batulu taunted him. “Furthermore, although the poison in her body had been suppressed by using a certain method, there is no guarantee that a day later it will break and cause her to be disabled. Even if you snatch the scroll, the detoxification process can only be done by someone with a fire attribute, and you’re not capable. By your hand, she is equal to being disabled.”

The words of this man gave him a headache.

There is a technique to dispel the poison before his eyes, but all he can do is to just look at it since he does not have fire attribute.

“You should stay obedient and do not let me begin. You are within my hands, and even if you want to die, you cannot until I say so...As for this beauty, I will certainly take good care of her.” Batulu said with a perverted smile.

Anger!

He is angry but he did not know to whom he should direct this anger.

Xie Aoyu's lungs almost exploded with rage.

“Good. I agree with you, but you must cure him.” Ziyan open her mouth and said.

“No, you won't!” Xie Aoyu shouted.

Ziyan kissed Xie Aoyu on his cheeks gently, then revealed a warm smile on her face, and said, “Meeting you in my life is the best thing that ever happened to me. I will not regret even if I die.”

“What a touching moment.” Batulu really takes pleasure in others misfortunes.

Xie Aoyu's eyes, that are burning with rage, are staring at this despicable Batulu. He wants to kill this man so bad!

“Do you want to kill me? You won't be able to. Even if a King level expert comes, the result will still be the same; a waste of efforts.” The Poison Master Batulu continues to provoke him.

“Clack

Grasping his fists tightly, Xie Aoyu is going to use his Earth Splitting Fist as his attack to kill Batulu from the distance.

Since he dares to claim that even if a King class level expert comes, they also need to lower their head to him, Batulu would naturally have something under his sleeve. He curled his lip, his face full with ridicule, as he flicked his finger.

Then Xie Aoyu feels a surge of numbness spread throughout his whole body.

A poisonous air!

This poisonous air made Xie Aoyu feel his whole body become numb, without any remaining strength.

The Poison Master Batulu, Xie Aoyu and Ziyan have yet to discover that there's a someone who is currently very, very angry, and that the consequences would not be so cute.

It is Xiao Bai!

[\[1\]](#)

[\[1\]](#) (ED: The true MC appears to save the day?)

Chapter 67: Medical Spirit Finger

The enraged Xiao Bai stares coldly at the heretic expert Batulu with a white flame lit inside its jet black eyes and its hair standing straight up.

Although the poisons used by the heretic expert Batulu can affect Xie Aoyu, who even has a Medical Spirit Finger, Xiao Bai was not affected in the slightest.

“Batulu, you bastard!” Xie Aoyu, who cannot hold his anger towards Batulu anymore, furiously shouted. He is very angry, because if he didn’t pose as her lover, Ziyan would not be poisoned by the Qi Poison, and would not be here. Now with Batulu personality being so evil, he feels he has caused Ziyan to enter the wolf’s mouth, which annoyed him to the core.

The heretic expert Batulu said with a cold smile, “No one has ever cursed me and is still alive after that.”

“I’ll fight you!” Xie Aoyu was unable to hold his temper again. However, as soon as he began to act, he felt his body suddenly become weak and aching, causing him to fall to the ground.

“Yiya!”

Xiao Bai suddenly darted up, and jump directly over the top of Ziyan’s head.

The enraged Xiao Bai let out a mouthful of lightning from his mouth.

It is a terrifying lightning magic!

It must be Batulu's misfortune as he did not discover Xiao Bai existence from the start. It is no wonder, because even if his poisonous technique is incomparable, he has a very limited strength. If he had a higher degree of Qi, it would be impossible for him to not able to discover Xiao Bai.

As the result, the lightning hit Batulu's head.

“Argh!”

The Batulu's whole body was paralyzed because of the electrocution and plunged down to the ground.

“Yiya!”

Fire magic!

Suddenly, a fireball pounded him fully, causing Batulu's hair, his clothes and his body to burn.

Batulu, is after all, from the generation that was in the pinnacle of poisonous techniques in this continent. So he flicked his finger, and put down the fire by using strange poison. However, he had

forgotten that this opponent of his is one of the smartest spirit beasts around.

Not long after that, another lightning is passing by.

Once again, Batulu is screaming in pain because of the shock from the electrocution.

Meanwhile, the numbness felt by Xie Aoyu began to disappear. He understands it must be because of Medical Spirit Finger.

Despite that his Medical Spirit Finger is only an initial rank, it's still fully functional. It is just the speed of the detoxification process is very slow and time consuming.

Xie Aoyu held the hilt of his Holy Spirit Sword and readied to throw it.

When the Holy Spirit Sword released from the sheath, it emitted a cold light, and then flew forward.

Batulu cried out in fear, however, despite being attacked by Xiao Bai through magic, he was still able to dodge the attack simultaneously, and then began to activate the corrosion pills that was eaten by Xie Aoyu before.

“Puff!”

Speaking from battle efficiencies alone, once Batulu uses his deadly poisonous technique, no one will be able to handle it.

Faced with the Holy Spirit Sword's continuous attacks, he would rather sacrifice his arm than lose his life. But the sword was flying too fast! It did not touch his hand at all, but instead slipped forward and penetrated through his heart.

“You, how could you still alive.” Batulu fell down.

Xie Aoyu withdrew his hand, “What did you say?”

Batulu looked at Xie Aoyu's palm and saw the corrosion pills that should have been eaten by Xie Aoyu before. His eyes were wide open, and said “I am not willingly.....”

His eyes then turned white and he died on the spot.

Xie Aoyu worried if Batulu had a technique to regenerate his heart, so he took out his Holy Spirit Sword and cut off his head. Only then did he feel relieved.

“Younger brother, you really did not take the pill?” Ziyan held Xie Aoyu's arm tightly, fearing that the latter might leave her.

Xie Aoyu just smiled. He certainly did not take the poison. When he was about to eat it, he slipped the pill under his sleeves and pretended to have eaten it, in order to avoid from being discovered by Batulu.

“Xiao Bai, you did well.” Xie Aoyu said with a smile.

“Yiya!”

Xiao Bai patted his chest proudly.

While they were busy chatting, Batulu corpse starts to melt and seep into the ground.

“Elder sister.” Xie Aoyu smiled bitterly after he picked up the scroll that recorded the method of how to get rid the Qi Poison, and also at the same time, enable Ziyan to break through up to another strength level.

He did not have a Fire Attribute, and the current Ziyan is now nothing but an average person. He must immediately find a way to treat Ziyan, because time was running short and he does not know how much Qi has already dissipated from her body.

“I believe you will definitely save me.” Ziyan reached out and gently stroked Xie Aoyu’s cheeks. “Even if you cannot save me, at worst, you have to take care of me for a lifetime.”

Xie Aoyu firmly said, “I will certainly cure elder sister!”

“Yiya!”

Xiao Bai called, and gives Xie Aoyu a bracelet.

Xie Aoyu took the bracelet and has a look at it. “This is belonged to Batulu...um? It’s an interspatial bracelet!”

This interspatial bracelet does not have any barrier, as it shows how confident the heretic expert Batulu was to believe that no one would be able kill him, even if the latter only had such mediocre strength.

Xie Aoyu looked at the interspatial bracelet and laughed “Heavens really side with me!” He excitedly looked at his surrounding and did not find any suitable place to remove all these objects in this interspatial bracelet, as most of the places are full of poisonous insects. Later he saw a cave not far from here, and he went there.

When they entered the cave, there was a strong and rich aroma.

They walked into the cave filled with the strong aroma, and it turned out that the cave is a passage leading to a place. When they arrived, they found a place full with beautiful flowers and plants as if it was a fairyland.

“Fuck!” When he saw the scene in front of him, and compared it with the entire place outside the cave that is dark and full of the poisonous insects, Xie Aoyu couldn’t help but curse.

Ziyan was also somewhat dumbfounded.

The scenery was just too beautiful.

He used his Medical Spirit Finger to trace if there are poisons in the air, and the result was positive. This is a fairyland-like place; it has a pavilion, a crystal clear mountain stream, a beautiful garden, and it also a place for a rare spirit beast to exist.

It was like a dream.

“Incredible! This is actually the house of that heretic master Batulu.” Ziyan spoke.

“It seems like Batulu still knows how to enjoy his life.” Xie Aoyu arrived at the pavilion. Ziyan then sits on the stone chair.

On top of the stone table, there are jade wine pot and cup, and when the cover of the jade wine pot opened, a strong, rich, and yet refreshing fragrance spread in the air.

“It seems that this is a legendary wine used to get rid of deadly poisons.” Ziyan’s face shows a trace of excitement. “This explains why his corpse had melted. Batulu, in his lifetime, studied all kind of poisons, and during the process he would have to take all those dangerous poisons himself, and then come here to drink wine to get rid of the poison in his body.” She smiles, “But, we actually killed him before he got here.”

That tender and beautiful face, although pale, but with all kind of

beautiful flowers around her, was actually able to stir and move Xie Aoyu's heart and soul to stay fascinated at the view.

Ziyan pushed Xie Aoyu's forehead with one finger, gently, and said, "Silly."

Xie Aoyu face turned red. He immediately removed all items in the interspatial bracelet that formerly belonged to Batulu. It must be said that the size of the space within the interspatial bracelet is very spacious, at least ten times larger than Xie Aoyu's interspatial ring.

"Nine-leaf Zizhi! A thousand year blood-root! Revive grass ..."
Ziyan hugged Xie Aoyu's arm excitedly. "Younger brother, we are so in luck. These things can definitely make your Medical Spirit Finger break through into earth-shaking transformations."

Xie Aoyu is also very excited and said, "Yeah, even if it is not able to detoxify the Qi poison completely, at least it would be able to hold it back for a while. According to the contents of Batulu's scroll, elder sister would not only get rid of the poison, but would also have a breakthrough."

Their eyes met simultaneously and smiled.

Both of them, instead of thinking about themselves, actually were more concerned about the needs and benefit of the other party.

All kind of warmth and tender feelings are spreading.

“Come on, sit next to your elder sister.” Ziyang invite him gently.

Xie Aoyu got up and sat next to Ziyang. He could feel her body closer, and her sweet, refreshing fragrance enveloped him, causing his heart flutter. All of this made him want to pull her into his arms.

This brave thought crazily expands.

“Lend me your shoulder.” Ziyang leaned her head on Xie Aoyu’s shoulder, “Show me the scroll. I want to see whether these materials are sufficient to refine an elixir or not.”

Xie Aoyu took the scroll, opened it, and placed it in front of Ziyang.

“You are like a dead man. It is awkward for me too, but you need to hug me closer so I can have a better look at it.” Ziyang frowned while saying that.

Of course, for her to have a better look on the scroll, he should pull Ziyang into his arm. The problem is, it’s not only uncomfortable, but he also worried that if he embraced Ziyang, it would give birth to more naughty ideas. Furthermore, with what she told him just now, his heart had become restless.

The sound of Xie Aoyu’s heart beat reached Ziyang’s ear. This silly

boy, just yesterday he dared to take advantage of me, and now he has the intention, but no guts.

Xie Aoyu supported Ziyan's body and then picked up the scroll and gave it to her, so she can make the comparison.

After she was done with the comparison, Ziyan's eyebrows furrowed. "We lack two kinds of materials. Needle grass and Blue Moon Flower. These two items are part of the main ingredients."

Xie Aoyu frowned and remained silent for a while, and then said, "Elder sister, so be it. Why don't we focus on the absorption material for my Medical Spirit Finger to break through? While it may not be able to be a cure for that poison, at least it is able to withstand the poison from spreading for a long time. And in the meantime, I will find the two main ingredients."

"Alright. Sister will listen to your words." Ziyan spoke softly.

Afterward, Xie Aoyu starts to refine an elixir for the Medical Spirit Finger.

Batulu has an indisputable reputation, so even if the materials available in interspatial bracelet are not the best materials, every single one of them is still considered as excellent.

Along with the process of absorption conducted by Xie Aoyu, his Medical Spirit Finger began to show great changes.

At the beginning, it was a pale yellow, then it turned into a more pronounced yellow, and a few moments later it turned into a full yellow. It already looks pretty dazzling; though it still only absorbed less than half of the provided materials.

Shortly, the yellow color turns to light golden color.

There are still some flowers and plants left.

The light golden color is finally turning into a solid golden yellow color.

“Elder sister, what was the highest level that this Medical Spirit Finger ever achieved?” Xie Aoyu was excited.

Ziyan said with a smile, “Since 3000 years ago, apart from the first generation of Medical Saint, Yun Dangtian, who created the Medical Spirit Finger, a lot of people have been practising this technique, and so far this is the closest to success.”

A step closer to completing the Medical Spirit Finger.

Somehow it sounds so formidable.

Xie Aoyu could not help but sigh, as if it were not for this opportunity, it is unlikely he would ever get to this point. This is because he would not be able to afford all these rare materials on his own. So hopefully by this, he will be able to become the second practitioner of Medical Spirit Finger. (T/N: The first practitioner

was Medical Saint Yun Dangtian).

“Elder sister, let’s try to detoxify your Qi Poison using this Medical Spirit Finger.” Xie Aoyu showed his pinky finger towards Ziyan with a smile.

Looking at the pinky finger which was suffused with a solid golden color, Ziyan smiled at Xie Aoyu . She opened her rosy lips to suck his finger. (T/N: >///
<)

“Elder sister

Xie Aoyu was taken aback.

Ziyan’s charming eyes looked so radiant, blinking in front of him. She deliberately licked Xie Aoyu’s finger gently.

Xie Aoyu felt that “something” between both of his legs was erected instantaneously.

It seems it was directed towards Ziyan.

Xie Aoyu, suddenly anxious, pushed back slightly and bent down, trying to hide the erection. At this moment, a voice resounded from outside of the valley. “Greed from Pasa’s clan would like to request permission to meet Master Batulu!”

[\[1\]](#) (T/N: When the color of his fingers turned into solid gold color, it means that he is at the peak of the fundamental level. To reach the level achieved by the Medical Saint, Yun Dingtian , the color of his finger must return to normal~~so he is one step away;))

Chapter 68: Greed's Visit

This is not a coincidence, right?

This was Xie Aoyu's first reaction, but perhaps because he hates Greed to the core, his voice had even resonated in his mind.

This is a pure hatred towards one of his enemies.

But this time Xie Aoyu needs to remain passive. Not to mention that Greed will probably bring more experts with him, because even an expert like Dalla lost his arm and fell from the cliff. And with Greed, who is already aware about his Earth Escaping technique due to their previous encounter before, there would be no bigger advantage on his side anymore.

“Master Batulu, Greed from the Pasa clan would like to request permission to meet!”

Outside, Greed's voice resounded once more.

What should I do?

Xie Aoyu frowned. This is a matter of life and death. Should I just escape? Xie Aoyu reviews his surroundings. Even if he tried to flee, there is still Greed who is currently on the outside, which is this valley exit route.

“Elder sister, I’m going out to deal with them once and for all.” Xie Aoyu knows that he could no longer hide or run. Ziyan nodded with a smile, not saying anything.

Xie Aoyu hurriedly ran. After he left, Ziyan stood up. Her body felt light as feathers. In fact, from the very beginning, the Medical Spirit Finger has already successfully restored a lot of Qi energy in her body.

Qi poison was indeed fiercely potent, but Medical Spirit Finger is such a mysterious and powerful technique, as even if it would not be able to fully remove the poison, it is still able to have the Qi Poison to be almost completely detoxified.

“I hope they will not force me to step out, because I still want to be in his care.” Ziyan’s face turns red as she said, “Just now, it seems that there was a reaction from him though, keke.....” [\[1\]](#)

Outside of the cave.

Xie Aoyu arrives at the front. Greed has not come yet, and he knows that Greed will definitely not enter without permission.

Firstly, he took out a powder to change his appearance, and sprinkle it on the surface of his pinky finger.

The pinky finger then reconstructs his facial features. Xie Aoyu looks at the ground which was full of sludge, brimming with disgust, he then move towards the ground to roll. As for the

poisonous insects on the ground, they would not dare to approach him because of the Medical Spirit Finger, so they can only choose to hide in the distance.

He rolled over and over again in the sludge on the ground, until there was no place on his clothes that was not dirty, and then he rubbed the sludge on his face.

The sludge is highly poisonous.

If not because of his Medical Spirit Finger, he would not dare to proceed with this procedure.

Afterwards, Xie Aoyu found a cool place to lie down and pretend to sleep.

“Master Batulu, Greed of Pasa Clan came to visit!”

Greed’s voice resounded once again, this time accompanied by the sound of footsteps. Obviously that Greed could not afford to wait any longer, and moved into the valley.

Xie Aoyu’s heart starts beating rapidly.

His previous encounters with Greed led the latter to suffer injuries. This is a heavy blow to Greed, so it would be strange for him to not remember.

“Uncle, can this Batulu really help me to recover?”

“He should be able to, because I still remember that more than ten years ago when Batulu’s name was widespread across the continent, there was someone that said Batulu has a mysterious body regeneration technique.”

It seems Chalice also came. [\[2\]](#)

Xie Aoyu almost wants to get up and run away. As for Greed, he might be able to fool him, but the situation is perhaps different for Chalice, as the latter suffered more tragically, so Chalice’s memory about him may be more intense.

He has the urge to curse someone.

Such bad luck!

Shortly, Greed and his delegation entered the valley. Contrary to their numbers in the Forest City before, this time they were accompanied with more experts within the Rainbow and Earth realms.

“ZZzz.....Zzzzz.....”

Xie Aoyu snores loudly, but at the same times his heart still unsettled.

“My lords, look. It seems someone is there.” One of the men pointed to the spot where Xie Aoyu lies.

Greed then salutes and says, “Greed of Pasa clan has come to see Master Batulu.”

Oh?

He didn’t notice?

A hint of pleasant surprise surfaced inside Xie Aoyu’s heart. This is absolutely beyond his expectations. For you to not know this Batulu personally truly is a blessing in disguise. It would certainly make my plan smoother.

He continued to snore without any response.

“Master Batulu.” Greed opens his mouth once more.

Still with no response.

Nearby man gave a much louder call, “Master Batulu!”

“Don’t bother me, get lost!” Xie Aoyu turned his body away from them, and resumed his loud snoring.

Greed’s face complexion becomes ugly. He is one of the Pasa

clan's leaders, and yet, was treated in such a way, but he also understands that Batulu is not someone to trifle with.

The man on the right, who gave a call just now, upon seeing that, went forward.

He wants to wake Xie Aoyu.

Finally, not more than ten steps, the man began to feel uncomfortable on his whole body, his skin turning dark, and an indescribable pain transmits from under his feet.

“A poison! Quick eat this pellet to detoxify the poison!” Greed sees that, he immediately flicked his finger, and an antidote pellet flies into that person mouth.

The pain felt by that man completely disappeared.

He went back to move forward and arrived at the place where Xie Aoyu is.

“Master Batulu.” He puts his hand on Xie Aoyu's shoulder.

Xie Aoyu previously deliberately dirtied his clothes with the poisonous sludge, so when someone touched him without any protection, he will be exposed to the poison. After a moment, there was the sound of “Splash!” The man fell to the ground filled with sludge.

That man's body becomes weak and aching, his skin turned dark, he suffered a convulsion and a short while after that, he did not breathe anymore. His body also began to melt and seep into the ground.

"This...." Greed and others upon seeing that, was bristling hairs.

They are all experts, but were still unable to avoid feeling a dreadful fear. They would rather fight against a powerhouse, as they can at least put up a fight, but to be up against such a poison master, they probably would not even know how or when they died.

"Hermmm, what a goodnight sleep." Xie Aoyu stretched his body, opens his eyes and sat up.

"For the offense of offending master, we hope that master can forgive us!" Greed hurriedly apologized.

Xie Aoyu shot a glance towards the people in front of him.

Apart from Greed, Chalice, which resides in the palanquin looks very pale, and everyone seems to have more or less injuries on their bodies, including the two pharmacists, while Greed looked very tired. They all look like they just came back from the war field.

"Forgive? Such a few words can make me forgive everything?"

Xie Aoyu seems cold but in his heart he thought, why not seize the chance to rob the needle grass and blue moon flower from their hands? “How about this, just give me three needles grass, three strains of malice grass, three black lines spiritual roots, three blue moon flower, and only then can I forgive you.”

“All of these except for the malice grass, are heaven and earth spiritual essences, used to refine an elixir instead of poison, so may I know what use of all these materials are to master?” An expert in elixir asked.

“Hey, that is for your ignorant people, but for me, let alone needle grass, black lines spiritual roots and blue moon flower, even if it was a rice wine, I can also turn it into a poison if I want to.” Xie Aoyu said with an arrogant tone. Since that Batulu is an infamous heretic poison expert, he doesn’t need to fear anyone and he can brag as much as he wants.

“Step back.” Greed said, “How could you compare with master capabilities.”

That elixir expert retreat hurriedly.

Greed said, “My subordinate is ignorant. I hope master can forgive me.”

“Forgive you?” Xie Aoyu stares while flicking his fingers.

Looking at the situation, they all tremble in fear. Greed then said

hurriedly, “We are prepared to meet all master demands, as a token of gratitude for master’s forgiveness.” He then immediately gave the signal with his eyes to the two pharmacists, to taken out all of the requested goods

Needle grass! Blue moon flower!

Xie Aoyu felt incomparable joy, because he was worried in case that both items cannot be found, but now he has got both and even that was handed over personally by his own enemy.

Hey, if you guys know that the person in front of you is also the person you hate the most, Xie Aoyu, what would all of your reactions look like? Xie Aoyu thought devilishly.

“Master, we have two needles grass, one black lines spiritual root, one blue moon flower, but we don’t have the malice grass.” Greed took out every single thing.

“Humph!” Xie Aoyu swings his sleeve.

He just wants to set an example. After all, he is now the heretic expert Batulu. But actually deep down inside his heart, he felt very satisfied, as with both of these items are now in his hands, it was more than enough.

“Master should not be angry. We can give master another thing and we can ensure master that this thing is more precious than these heaven and earth spiritual essences.” Greed took out

something immediately.

“What is this?” Xie Aoyu blurted out.

Greed stunned and then asked, “Master, you did not know?”

This is bad!

Xie Aoyu’s heart shakes. Is this a rare heaven and earth spiritual essence?

[\[1\]](#) (T/N: refer to his previous erection lol)

[\[2\]](#) (T/N: He want to recover his little thing back lol)

Chapter 69: Magical Regeneration

To let the cat out of the bag!

Xie Aoyu, who was always proud of his own knowledge, finally had to admit that his knowledge was actually very limited. All of the books read by him were from Xie Jia's own collections. Fortunately, due to have been reading so much, contributed to a substantial difference in his performance, or else it would be impossible for Greed to not notice anything at all.

"Nonsense! Everything is like the back of my hand." Xie Aoyu coldly said, "That toy in your hand, it seemed to my liking."

He was obviously aware that the only thing that can truly move the infamous heretic expert Batulu, is something that cannot be refused, something that is required by a specialist in refining poison, and that is the reason why he said so earlier.

However, Greed apparently just smiled and said, "I presume Master have heard about the Hundred Gold Orchid?"

Never heard of it.

Xie Aoyu deliberately raises his eyebrows, his eyes staring at the Hundred Gold Orchid. "I've heard about it, but never seen it before. Apparently this seems a great find."

Seeing the expression on Xie Aoyu's face, Greed smiled and said,

“This is a token of our appreciation for master’s kindness to forgive us.”

“Um, good.” Xie Aoyu walked over, reached out and took the hundred gold orchid. His heart told him that the item before his eyes, compared with all the material previously belonged to Batulu that he had absorbed while ago, is higher in terms of grade and level, a holy article kind of level. His mouth then said, “So what is the matter that needs my assistance?”

Many said how eccentric and unreasonable this heretic master Batulu was. He will not treat anyone unless he receives any gift that could satisfy him. This kind of attitude, Greed actually did not mind at heart at all. “Well actually, I’ve heard that Master Batulu has a mysterious, immeasurable regeneration technique.”

Regeneration technique?

Xie Aoyu had heard Greed mention this before, but he simply just did not bother with it at all. Now, when he heard the same thing again, he was afraid. He was not afraid of the greatness of this regeneration technique, but rather it was a kind of lingering fear.

He remember that he has pierced the heart Batulu, so imagine if he did not behead Batulu, what kind of consequences he would have to face afterwards? Perhaps he would have been done for!

This has made Xie Aoyu feel a bit of lingering fear.

However, did you really have this regeneration technique?

Regeneration technique? An ability that makes him immune from death? Unless the user head being chopped, even with a damaged heart, this regeneration technique will still be able to restore it to its original state.

“Master...” When Chalice saw that there was no response from the other side, he began to feel worried.

Xie Aoyu really hated Chalice to the core and looked at him with his cold eyes.

That cold stare scared Chalice to death and made him keep his mouth shut. Greed also felt scared and anxious, as the man before him was an infamous heretic master Batulu, one of the most powerful experts in the continent. Even a Ten King-Class level expert, one of the most superior existences, has fallen because he had been poisoned by this man. How would he, just a mere Sage level person, not have fear at all?

“A regeneration technique, I see.” Xie Aoyu throw Chalice a glance, “It seems you want me to intact the lower and the upper part of your body, something that a man cannot afford to lose, I presume?”

“Master is truly amazing.” Chalice exclaimed.

“Hey, I am the reason for you to end up in this current state, but now to have you admire me, would that not be too cruel?” Xie Aoyu’s heart whispered.

“Master, you really can?” Greed asked.

“Certainly. I can also make any part of a human’s body grow to one meter in length, how about it; do you want to have a try with your nose?” Xie Aoyu then coldly spoke, “How dare you even suspect this master!” [\[1\]](#)

To have his nose grow one meter, that would be odd, so Greed immediately apologized. ”O Great Master, don’t be mad, rather I am the one who is to blame for being too ignorant. O Great Master, please don’t be mad.”

Xie Aoyu seeing his manner, nodded in satisfaction. “Well, since you gave me the Hundred Gold Orchid, I will forgive you this time.”

“Master, I want mine to grow 20 centimeters long.” Chalice impatiently ran towards him. [\[2\]](#)

Such a greedy person! Through my estimation, originally, your thing should be 5-6 centimeters long at most, right? Xie Aoyu revealed a look of disgust. [\[3\]](#)

Seeing the expression, Chalice was scared. He was afraid of the man before his eyes, not only because of the poisonous technique, but also because this is a matter concerning his future sex life.

“Master, what does it take for you to willingly use the regeneration technique for the treatment?” Greed asked.

“As a matter of fact, it can be fully utilized, however.....” Xie Aoyu did not continue his words.

Greed understood with no time, and then hurriedly said, “As long as Master needs anything, we, the Pasa clan, will absolutely hand it to you.”

Xie Aoyu said, “In that case, let me see if you really mean it.”

When both elixir teachers listened to this, they felt depressed. We just gave the Hundred Gold Orchid to you, and yet you still have the heart to ask for more? That was a Hundred Gold Orchid!

What an unfathomable character!

“What I have now is this longevity pellet. So, I wonder if this is to Master’s liking?” Greed pulled out a golden yellow pellet. Under the sunlight, its surface was suffused with a faint golden light, and when this pellet was taken out, the whole valley was covered with a strong foul smell.

Xie Aoyu’s heart was fiercely pounding uncontrollably.

A longevity pellet? This fellow is willing to give up this longevity pellet for the sake of this good for nothing Chalice? Even if he is the son of the clan head, this is a bit too much.

Regarding this longevity pellet, it has long been known throughout the continent.

This ten thousand years longevity pellet, known as a peerless elixir, was refined by a medical immortal. According to what was told, once a person takes the pellet, their life expectancy will increase up to 400 years, they would not get sick, mosquitoes will run, and any kind of poison will generally have no impact on them. But what the most interesting fact is that, once taken, the user's appearance will not change and remain young even after he/she has already become a corpse.

“Is this real?” Xie Aoyu lowered his tone, he did not hesitate to ask, since this longevity pellet is too rare and precious to be wasted on such a good for nothing like Chalice, so of course he felt suspicious.

“Master does not know that this was brought by my mother from her parent's home, so it's absolutely real.” Chalice patted his own chest as a sign of guarantee.

When Xie Aoyu heard this, he was able to somewhat guess that the origin of this Chalice's mother is certainly not ordinary, otherwise, how will they be able to get Chalice a four arm ape as a contracted spirit.

“I will look into this, if it's true, then I will use the regeneration technique to help you restore what you have lost back to its original condition.” Xie Aoyu said and then he extends his hand to

receive the pellet.

Greed does not have the heart to give up many things, but seeing the extended palm, he has no guts to resist.

After taking the pellet, Xie Aoyu starts moving. “All of you just stay here , I will be going inside to have a look at this .” He said and then turned around, and walked to the cave. Before he entered, he turned back and said, “Do not go anywhere, or death awaits for those who do not obey.”

“Master should be at ease.” Greed hurriedly said.

Xie Aoyu just nodded, and then he entered the cave.

After confirming Xie Aoyu has left, the two elixir experts seem unhappy with what has happened. “Second head, this person is too greedy! The two items he took were very priceless treasures.”

“You understand nothing.” Greed coldly said, ”This heretic expert Batulu kills people with poison. If we are able to gain his favor, and then grab the opportunity to pull him into our Pasa clan, then who in the Luo Empire would be able to top our clan?”

The two elixir experts raise their thumbs and said, “Second head is indeed wise!”

Chalice was hoping for Xie Aoyu’s quick emergence, and in his mind, he already began to fantasize how great he would be on the

bed. With his thing becoming longer, he would certainly be able to handle three women, no, ten women at the same time. [\[4\]](#)

As Chalice continued to delve into his fantasy, Xie Aoyu had already arrived at the garden.

He saw Ziyan at the Pavilion, smiling at him.

“Elder sister.” Xie Aoyu walks hurriedly.

“How did you deal with them?” Ziyan asked, then naturally leaned on Xie Aoyu’s shoulder as soon as he sat down.

Xie Aoyu took out the Hundred Gold Orchid and the longevity pellet, “They honored me with these items, but I am still not sure whether these are real or not.”

Actually, Ziyan has been watching from a hidden place.

“This Hundred Gold Orchid is real. I had seen it in a book.” Ziyan said with a smile. “This is a divine article, and cannot be compared with any materials owned by Batulu, but unfortunately it is still in the growth stage, otherwise, if it had fully grown up , and your Medical Spirit Finger had absorbed the essence, it will be able to break through, and thus achieve its peak form of perfection.”

Xie Aoyu was flabbergasted. “What a priceless divine article.”

“Compared to this longevity pellet, that Hundred Gold Orchid fell far too short.” Ziyan took the longevity pellet, her face flushed red excitedly, and her fairy white hand shivered.

It has been the dream of every woman to remain youthful and beautiful.

Ziyan is no exception. She is a peerless beauty, but with her already in 30s, this is something that should be given priority.

“Elder sister confirmed that this is a genuine longevity pellet?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“Absolutely true. Fortunately, I have seen one before.” Ziyan replied.

“Then elder sister can have it.” Xie Aoyu spoke thoughtlessly, and then he took out the Batulu interspatial bracelet once more, and started to study the scrolls thoroughly.

Since it is a regeneration technique, it would be best to find it as soon as possible.

Regeneration technique!

Just thinking about it is enough to make Xie Aoyu feel excited already.

Although Xie Aoyu felt very excited, Ziyan was dumbfounded. This longevity pellet is able to increase a person's age up to 400 years, and he is willing to give it up just like that?

Ziyan's heart flutters for no reason, and suddenly she has the impulse to cry.

"Younger brother." Ziyan called.

Xie Aoyu who was busy studying the contents of the scroll, looked to his side when he heard his name called by Ziyan and said, "Anything..."

"Mmhh!"

In just the blink of an eye, her fragrant lips and Xie Aoyu's lips locked.

Then Xie Aoyu felt something come into his mouth, and melt.

Xie Aoyu was frozen.

"Half for me and half for my brother." Ziyan said with a smile. "That was my first kiss, so was it sweet or not?"

Xie Aoyu, still somewhat in a daze, "It was sweet." Xie Aoyu sobered up suddenly. With his bright red looking face, he lowered his head to proceed with studying the scroll.

“Heee.....” Ziyang chuckled. She had a tender smile on her face. This younger brother of hers, who was always being so shameless and sneaky, was now actually being shy! He really is just a big kid.

[1] (T/N: I think Xie Aoyu sarcastically refer the nose=arrogance)

[2] (ED: Roughly 8 inches)

[3] (ED: A little over 2 inches)

[4] (ED: ...since when did a big thing give unlimited stamina?!)

Chapter 70: The Arrival Of Crown Merchenary Group

“Does younger brother need elder sister help to look?” Ziyan said with her soft voice.

Even Xie Aoyu’s bones became soft.

That voice really sounded extremely coy and flirtatious.

“No, it’s fine.” Xie Aoyu always fantasized about these things before, but the truth was he always blamed himself for not having the courage to do it himself.

“Then let me sit on your lap! Besides, I already read all these scrolls so many times. Oh, regeneration technique, is it? I think I know where we can look for it.” Ziyan said while leaning her head on Xie Aoyu’s shoulder with a charming face that can melt any guy.

To hell with it!

I am a man!

Xie Aoyu really despised himself for being timid at the most crucial moment. You are a man, right? Xie Aoyu swallows his own saliva and pinched himself as hard as possible; pain that will be used to flare up his courage.

“Are you not afraid that I will take advantage of you?” Xie Aoyu said with a devilish smile on his face.

“But you already took my first kiss.” Ziyan said and then winked at him.

“That was also my first kiss.” Xie Aoyu blurted out.

Surprised, Ziyan spontaneously straighten her body, and said, “Really? Even your lover, Bing Wu, did not get your first kiss?”

“Nope.” Xie Aoyu said.

Ziyan, with her charming looking face, exudes an enchanting smile. Touched and lost for words, she later said, “Younger brother, I will help you find the regeneration technique, but first, you have to drink this Illusion wine.”

Seeing the sudden change in Ziyan’s behavior, Xie Aoyu scratched his head.

He poured the wine into the cup, while seemingly mesmerized by Ziyan, who looks very happy while searching for information about the regeneration technique in all of these scrolls. His heart whispered, “Does Ziyan sister like me? Otherwise, I can’t think any other reason for her to give up her first kiss and the half of the longevity pill for me. It seems that I might actually a very handsome and manly man.”

This boy began to show signs of being a narcissist.

“Younger brother, I think I have found it.” Ziyan brought the scroll closer to him.

Xie Aoyu took the scroll, and looked at the section that has the name of “regeneration technique”.

“This regeneration technique was too evil.” Ziyan shows an unpleasant expression on her face, “How do you plan to deal with all the people out there? Do you need my help?”

“Are you completely well?” Xie Aoyu was pleasantly surprised.

“Um, most of the poisons in my body has been detoxified by your Medical Spirit Finger. A small portion of the poison is still there, but possesses no threat to me.” Ziyan said with a smile.

“Good!” Xie Aoyu said and laughed.

Seeing that Xie Aoyu looks very happy, Ziyan felt that her heart was full with happiness. She poked her finger on Xie Aoyu’s forehead, “You really scared me to death when Batulu wanted you to cut off your arm and you agreed.”

Xie Aoyu scratched his head and said, “I had my reasons for that.”

“In the future, never ever think of doing something like that again, or else elder sister will be sad.” Ziyan said with serious tone.

Xie Aoyu just smiled without giving any reply. He looked at the content in the scroll, after studying it thoroughly, his face became unsightly. He then shouted, “Son of the b***h!” He smashed the scroll into bits with his palms. ”This kind of technique can not be disclosed to the public, because... Damn it! It’s just too heretic and evil!”

Ziyan, after seeing the content of the scroll, concluded that it was very vicious and evil, but she did not think that Xie Aoyu would be so determined to destroy it. After all, it’s still a regeneration technique; even she did not have the heart to destroy such valuable technique. But Xie Aoyu destroyed it without the slightest hesitation at all. This makes her feel that Xie Aoyu is a real man!

“How do you plan to deal with all those people out there?” Ziyan asked.

Xie Aoyu smiles, and says, “That’s easy.”

He smiled and walked toward the exit, while changing back into his ugly appearance. He still has the sludge on his face, making it harder for anyone to recognize him.

When Chalice saw him come out of the cave, he is unable to contain his excitement, and said, “Master, is this for real?”

“Um, it’s real.” Xie Aoyu said.

“I, I.....” Chalice was lost for words because of the excitement.

Xie Aoyu waves his hand, and says, “I can help you.”

“Ah!”

Chalice’s eyes were spinning and then he fell down.

“Young master!” Kazo quickly holds Chalice’s body from behind.

“Master, he was too excited.” Greed said with a smile.

Excited indeed, if he knew that I cannot use the regeneration technique, he would not be excited, but rather he will kick the bucket instead. Xie Aoyu then said, “Don’t be happy too early. The regeneration process is not that simple.”

Contrary to what one might expect, Greed actually looks quite earnest. “Great master, please guide us.”

“This regeneration technique would produce these two results. Firstly, even if the part that has been regenerated can be move, you will not be able to sense or feel anything. Secondly, if you want to feel it again, you would need lots of holy articles, and only then you will be able to regain the sense.” Xie Aoyu said.

Chalice, who just woke up, shouted, “Certainly to have the feeling!”

A tool that has no feeling is obviously useless to him.

“Then prepare me 23 kinds of holy articles. Write down every single name that I will mention.” Xie Aoyu said “Ye Zizhi, Millennium Blood-Root.....”

All the 23 holy articles cited by Xie Aoyu are all items that he has absorbed from Batulu’s interspatial bracelet. And each and every one of them is not an ordinary item. Anyway, he will be dealing with all these guys, and as soon as they leave, he’ll get out from here.

“Actually, Master, we do not have these two holy articles, the Millennium Blood Lotus Root and Blue Sea White Float, you see?” Then the other elixir expert awkwardly said, “Can we use others as a replacement?”

No way!

Xie Aoyu almost wants to scream.

He said twenty three kinds of items, and although the amount is not the complete amount inside Batulu’s interspatial bracelet, it is still one-third of the whole capacity. According to Ziyan, all of these are still considered raw articles among holy articles; closest

to divine articles. And these guys who were in front of him unexpectedly and casually took out all the materials. Even if they do not have the items mentioned, they would still have another replacement. It seems they brought with them quite a number of good items.

Xie Aoyu has the sudden urge to rob.

However, even if Ziyan can fight with Greed, the rest of the guys are either Earth or Rainbow level experts; opponents that he would not be able to face alone with his current strength.

“Replace with what?” Xie Aoyu coldly asked.

The elixir expert took out a bloody red article and a small flower and said, “This is the Millennium Blood Iris, the function of this article is the same as the Millennium Blood Lotus Root, but better in terms of effectiveness. This small flower is called the Yuan Flower, a holy article that is considered closest to a divine article. Do you know whether this is suitable to replace the Blue Sea White Float?”

“Alright” Xie Aoyu said.

Greed then told them, “Give Master all the holy articles he needs.”

Both elixir experts comply with the instructions given by Greed and withdraw all of 23 items, giving all of them to Xie Aoyu.

When he saw so many holy articles within his possession, he could not help but laugh inside his heart. With all of these, his Medical Spirit Finger can improve more!

“Master, how about the regeneration technique?” Chalice asked excitedly.

“Um, it takes three months to refine. All you need to do is just wait.” Xie Aoyu lightly replied, but actually his eyes were secretly glancing towards the interspatial rings on the hands of both elixir experts.

They all casually took out all of the 23 holy articles like it was nothing. This means that they must have more than 23 articles inside those interspatial rings, after all the number 23 was thoughtlessly thought by Xie Aoyu at that time.

“Inside of those interspatial rings are holy articles!”

Xie Aoyu’s heart whispered. He really wanted all of those holy articles, because if he can absorb it all, his Medical Spirit Finger would be able to evolve to perfection level. At that time, he does not have to be afraid of any kind of poison, no matter how vicious and deadly it would be, and he can also detoxify the poison inside the body of his father, Xie Gan.

But he can only think.

As the heretic expert Batulu, he cannot lower himself to demand more.

Xie Aoyu brings all the 23 items and walks towards the cave entrance, and at the same time, he was making calculations about how to deal with this situation. For example, he and Ziyan might have no choice but to escape, because even if Ziyan can fight Greed, with just her strength alone, she cannot possibly be able to contend with the rest of those experts.

Therefore, everything must be planned carefully in accordance with the situation.

“The Imperial Crown Mercenary Group, Wei Pang Se, requests a meeting with Master Batulu!”

Then came a rough voice transmitted from outside of the mountain valley.

Xie Aoyu chuckled. It is another group of his enemies. Xie Aoyu still remembers how he killed the member of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group for the sake of Ziyan. He still does not know whether the other party already knows the truth or not.

He is not taking a stand, because, as the heretic expert Batulu, he must be neutral. But interestingly, he found that on Greed's face there is a trace of being upset. Not just him, but all of them. Those Earth and Rainbow level experts seem upset and mad while clutching their weapons tightly. Apparently they had fought each other before. It is obvious to Xie Aoyu how both Pasa clan and The

Imperial Crown Mercenary Group has a dispute between them.

“Members of Pasa clan!”

“Commander, the people of Pasa clan also came.”

When the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group found Pasa Clan members, they rushed in, led by a tall 40 year old middle age man, who looked so formidable and out of the ordinary.

Xie Aoyu whispers in his heart, “That man looks similar to Valencia. What if they are related? That would certainly be fun to watch.”

Chapter 71: The Mount That Connect Through The Heavens

The arrival of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group looks very imposing. As for the other side, the people of Pasa clan also not going to give up without a fight, they are after all one of the three biggest families in this Luo Empire. But in the eyes of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group, they are nothing. Even if they call themselves as the strongest, the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group also equally impressive. Therefore, as the result, both sides scowl and stare each other down fiercely.

The atmosphere is filled with pressure from both sides.

Contrary to one might expect Greed is actually quite shrewd as the latter try to reason Xie Aoyu:”Master, these people had barged in without permission, absolutely detestable! So, should we go and attack them or not?” [\[1\]](#)

The way he thinks was very shrewd.

If Xie Aoyu who is pretending to be Batulu agreed, even if he wants to stay his hand out of it, with both sides strength, it is inevitable for him to get tangle with all of this sooner or later. And when Xie Aoyu began to act, he will kill these people using poison.

But that burly man from the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group, even if his outward appearance looks kind of barbaric, he is actually a quite meticulous person; As he is someone who has been in a mercenary group and walked on a fine line between life and

death, which if he was not careful, he would have already died many times over.

“The Imperial Crown Mercenary Group Wei Pang Se meeting the great master.” This man speaks with a low muffled voice.

Xie Aoyu looked at him indifferently.

Xie Aoyu looking so detached and distance as he did not put these people in his eyes at all. This kind of feeling make even Ziyan who is hiding in a secret place, surprised by his ability to radiates such an imposing aura.

“We’re begging great master to use the regeneration technique to save some of our leaders.” Wei Pang Se has also heard this peculiar characteristic of Batulu, so as he spoke, he took out something, “This is a Jade Lotus Flower, this might be not enough to show our respects, but hopefully master can accept our humble and sincere gift.”

What a good thing!

Xie Aoyu almost screamed, the reputation of this Jade Lotus Flower was also larger compared with that Hundred Gold Orchid, moreover Xie Aoyu has also seen it from a book.

Rumors have it that the lotus has more than one hundred types, but only one species can grow and become divine article..This so called Jade Lotus Flower is unique because of its strange physics.

This Jade Lotus Flower, grows to about one inch every hundred years, and takes about 3000 years to fully bloom, which is the form of a divine article. And as for the manufacture of drugs, its effectiveness in the production of drugs that can prolong life, has long been known, due to the creation of longevity pellet, its name has been widespread across the continent.

“You are welcome.”Xie Aoyu shot a glance at Greed side, as he said such words deliberately.

His words have made the complexion of Pasa clan changed.They took out so many things, but all they received was merely a promise and nothing more, not even a simple polite greeting. [\[2\]](#)

Although it is only out of courtesy, but this might also become a problem in the future.

“Master, please accept.”Wei Pang Se gives Xie Aoyu the Jade Lotus Flower.

Received the Jade Lotus Flower, a light fragrance enveloped, Xie Aoyu’s left hand pinky finger shivered a little, how he wish that he could immediately start to absorb this divine essence.

The only difference between the Jade Lotus Flower and ordinary Lotus Flower appearance is that all over its body has this glittering and translucent carving, similar to the beautiful jade carves, a charm that cannot be described with words.

Xie Aoyu said: “Do you also want to make me to use the regeneration technique?”

“Yes, one of our regimental commanders have lost both of his arms, therefore wants to ask master to lend a hand to help.” Wei Pang Se pleaded.

Xie Aoyu looks the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group army, discovered that at the front there is a young man, with his white face lying down on a palanquin, and both of his arms was lost; also appear to be in semi conscious state.

“Of course I can, but first you will need to prepare me various types of holy articles,” Xie Aoyu laughed, as he managed to have a few more holy articles.

“Good, we have no problem with that.” Wei Pang Se said in great happiness.

Immediately Xie Aoyu said the 23 types of holy articles again, finally thinks that since the process to regenerate both arms are much more difficult, added five more types of holy article, amounts to 28 types of holy articles, which he feels should be more than enough.

Wei Pang Se’s face reveals the change of color immediately.

Their mercenary group and Pasa clan, perhaps different, or to say

at least in terms of network information gathering, they are a bit behind. After all, to collect a number of holy articles in a short period of time is an impossible thing to do.

“Go look for every single thing I have mentioned first, and in the meantime, I’ll make the regeneration potion for them in advance.”Xie Aoyu said.

“Did they have prepared everything completely?”Wei Pang Se raises his doubts.

Xie Aoyu said: “Right, they have brought more than enough, as soon as I done speaking, they immediately took everything out.”

Chalice said proudly:”Of course we have taken everything out in hurry, we do not want to waste the time of our great master, unlike the other poor group of people.”

“It seems like you brought so many things.”Wei Pang Se eyes squinted.

“That was obvious!”Chalice said in provokingly manner.

Greed seeing the behavior of Pang Wei Se, can guess what goes in his mind, he stood in front of Wei Pang Se, and coldly said: “Everybody should lives in peace with each other.”

Wei Pang Se sneered and said:”But I do not want to live in peace with you guys.”

With him speaking those words, both sides have simultaneously extracted their weapons.

The atmosphere is filled with killing intents.

Xie Aoyu sees that, have a big laughed deep inside his heart, while on his mouth, coldly said,” In every corner of this place is poisonous , so who wants to die can fight here , and please do not bother me or else death awaits!” After he was done speaking, he disappears into the cave.

His departure has somehow made both sides of troops free from pressure. [\[3\]](#)

Moreover, the two sides have long been at loggerheads since forever, coupled with deep burning hatred, with all of these factors combined; will influence the direction of this battle.

“Greed, you are a man, so let’s this fights decide our life and death!” Wei Pang Se said that and then exits from the mountain valley.

Greed coldly snorted, “I’m afraid you are inadequate to do so.”

Two highest sage level experts left the mountain valley.

And so the other people naturally.

Both sides then have launched their bloody battles outside of the mountain valley.

Meanwhile, Xie Aoyu with Ziyan by his side, looks at the Jade Lotus Flower in his hand, Ziyan is also speechless. Originally, she thought that the idea to seek the help of Batulu was the stupidest thing she has ever done, but who knows, that this situation has finally developed into something unbelievable.

“Elder sister, we seize the chance to sneak off from here.”Xie Aoyu said.

Ziyan said with a smile: “Didn’t you want those interspatial rings possessed by those elixir experts next to Greed? There should have been more of holy articles inside.”

Xie Aoyu shrugs, “If I say that the idea never occurred to me, that would be false, but I am also clear, that the human cannot be too corrupt, because the result of being too greedy, will often have end up with misfortunes.”

“Good, elder sister will listens to your words.”Ziyan responded.

Xie Aoyu and Ziyan put all the goods and valuable articles into interspatial rings, other than that they also check each corner to ensure no valuables are left behind.

Ziyan had regained most of her higher level sage strength. She

then led the way out for Xie Aoyu. Their journey to the exit of the mountain valley runs smoothly without any interruptions. This is because both of their enemies, Greed and Wei Pang Se were busy fighting in the battle of life and death. It had never occurred to them that it was Xie Aoyu who disguised as Batulu. And they also would have never thought that he could possibly run away.

Therefore Xie Aoyu and Ziyan left with a very relaxing manner.

They flew all the way, and after flying more than a hundred miles, they landed on top of a mountain.

“This is the Jie Tian Mountain, the fifth highest of the Heng Duan mountains range.”Ziyan said.

Xie Aoyu was astonished however said: “Ah, so this is Jie Tian Mountain. I heard that this Jie Tian Mountain wasn’t the highest mountain within the Heng Duan mountains range, yet it was still called [Jie Tian Mountain](#). That was because there was an ancient story spread which said that this is the place where the seven great heroes, who resisted evils that invaded the human realm, will once again gather.”

Ziyan’s face flashed a slightly bitter complexion, staring into the distance of the vast forests, softly said: “All of it was the truth.” She tidies her long hair, and whispered: “Brother, I ‘m going into seclusion.”

“Do elder sister already have found a way to get rid of the Qi Poison’s remnants?”Xie Aoyu said.

” Yes, the remnants of the Qi Poison though not much , but since I was at the edge of having a break through , so I wanted to try the treatment technique of Batulu , who knows that perhaps I can break through.” Ziyan’s face exudes a charming smiling face, and as for this highest sage level expert, to break through would not be simple.

Many have reached the highest level of Sage, but to break through into the next stage or realms, they must spend a ridiculous amount of time. This is a task that can be said is difficult to achieve. At the present time, there are only two people who have achieved the highest level of Sage at such of young age throughout this continent; they are Ziyan and You Lan Ruo.

He can imagine that even if Ziyan has the ability to break through, it’s still something that is not easy to achieve.

“If that the case, then I will definitely become elder sister protector!”Xie Aoyu said with a smile.

“Don’t.”Ziyan gently said, “Younger brother, you just think about my interests only, but do you not know that you are now finally being at the edge of having a break through too? Even if you do not practice, you’ll still break through sooner or later.”

Xie Aoyu said indifferently: “I knew I would, but my breakthrough, would not require the use of energy so much, so I will not face any danger.”

He currently is on the lower level of Spirit realm. This was all because of the strange cold winds that enable him to successfully break through into the lower Spirit level realm. The distance between his lower and intermediate Spirit level is not that far, and he has also practiced using the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword technique, which has allowed him to be at the peak of the lower level Spirit, but later he met with Ziyan , and this has made him to not have time to stabilize his foundation at all.

Ziyan said with a smile: “Elder sister will probably be in the seclusion within 50 days, if you manage to break through, go out of your way and learn through the experience, after 50 days you can come to find me.” She seems like she just thought of something, “ Ah, right, several days ago, if I’m not mistaken, I saw someone that looked like Bing Wu here, maybe if you hurry, you will bump into her.”

In Xie Aoyu’s mind, emerged a beautiful figure which is also his childhood friend, he whispered to himself : ” I really missed her . “

“After you break through, if you roam through this Jie Tian Mountain, you should be able meet her.”Ziyan said with her smiling face, “Now, withdraws all items that will be used to temper your Medical Spirit Finger.”

Xie Aoyu then took out all the 23 holy articles.

And then they start to temper his Medical Spirit Finger once more.

The amount of 23 may not be too much, but Xie Aoyu 's Medical Spirit Finger has already achieved the phase of solid Golden yellow color, and this time it will absorb all these holy articles, which is something that they are looking forward to see the outcome .

They have long been waiting for the Medical Spirit Finger to reach the level of perfection.

With all the absorption, Xie Aoyu's finger becomes more bright and brighter, a golden light halo that radiates looked very dazzling to the eyes, and finally the golden color reached at its pinnacle color. [\[4\]](#)

“It has changed!” Xie Aoyu felt very excited.

When the number of the holy articles that have been absorbed by him reached 15, the color of his finger becomes lighter. Initially, it almost giving the impression of the scorching sun and the air were mixed together, as the light on his finger began to fade.

“So that's how it is, I see.”Ziyan muttered.

“Elder sister, what did you think of?”Xie Aoyu asked.

Ziyan said with a smile:” I fear that my perception of Medical Spirit Finger was too shallow; I thought that when Medical Spirit Finger reaches its pinnacle color, the color should return to the original. It is now appears that it did not. As you can see, the color has become lighter, in other words, if you want to return to the

original state, you would require a large amount of holy articles, so that the golden color would gradually grow faint and disappear.”

Xie Aoyu’s eyes were spinning. To return to the original state, he would require so many holy articles?

That was quite difficult to achieve.

The total amount of these holy articles that have been contributed by Batulu and Pasa clan, especially from Batulu’s collection, should be more or less than 100 kinds of holy articles.

”You have nothing to worry about; you have the Hundred Gold Orchid and the Jade Lotus with you, right? Give them to me; I will grow the Hundred Gold Orchid and Jade Lotus. I do not need a few years to do that; they will reach the pinnacle stage in no time. So when the time has come, even if we do not have the holy articles, we will still be able to make the Medical Spirit Finger to reach its complete form of perfection.”Ziyan said confidently.

Xie Aoyu then gave both divine articles to Ziyan.

[1] (T/N: to reason with= to incite)

[2] (T/N: Aww..basically all they want was to be lovee...lol XD)

[3] (T/N: They was afraid of Xie Aoyu interference)

[*] (Jie Tian means Connecting To The Heavens)

[4] (T/N: Meaning that, it has become the ultimate golden yellow, and only one step behind before reach the perfection= the human skin color)

Chapter 72: Bing Wu

Ziyan went into seclusion.

She took the scroll, along with all the goods that she needs inside the cave. The cave has a characteristic. No one would be able to see the existence of the cave from the outside. As for those deadly poisonous remedies that the heretic expert Batulu has been developed, Xie Aoyu also left for Ziyan . After all, those things are useless to him. Ziyan takes the compounded remedies, even if it is poisonous, to her it would also be very helpful, as it would benefit her enormously in terms of improving her ability in the field of alchemy.

The idle Xie Aoyu also began to practice.

All days self tortures, as he looked forward to the early break into another level of spirit realm.

While Xiao Bai also busy with its own affairs.

After Xie Aoyu and Ziyan isolate themselves to practice, Xiao Bai then had reached the top of the mountain Tian Jie. It stares at the boundless forest mountain, and sighed with emotion: “Ten thousand years have gone by , I never thought that I’d arrived here again , unexpectedly after more than 10,000 years, old friends , are you okay ? “

Its body turns into white light and flew speedily into the deepest part of the Hengduan mountains range.

Time passed.

Four days later, Xie Aoyu comes out from his seclusion.

He easily broke through, reaches the intermediate realm of the spirit level. For him, this is naturally bound to happen, and he could not care less. After all his goal is the Emperor class, he never thought about the possibility of him would ever having difficulties on this early stage.

“It has been only four days; sister should be in seclusion more or less than 50 days, so I should going out to gain experience and also to inquire more information.” Xie Aoyu then looked towards the place where Ziyan has isolated herself, tidied up slightly, and after a while, he came down from the top of the Jie Tian Mountain.

As for Xiao Bai, it has returned to its lovable, cute appearance, and stays in Xie Aoyu’s side.

A man and a beast, come down from the mountaintop of Jie Tian Mountain, looking for the evil spirit beast, to have a fiercely battle with. Xie Aoyu understands that in order to progress more quickly, he must fight constantly.

His goal are these evil spirit beasts.

Jie Tian Mountain was located in an area that is not too deep within the Hengduan mountains range. This place was located in

the middle of the Hengduan mountains range. Evil spirit beasts within the Ascension-level realm seem to be very common, while occasionally they will also have the opportunity to encounter Cloud-level beasts.

However, most of the evil spirit beasts here are Spirit-level realm.

Therefore, this is the most appropriate training for Spirit-level realm expert like Xie Aoyu to gain experience.

For ten or more days, Xie Aoyu felt that his progress has been very good.

“Xiao Bai , next time you come across with the Cloud – level evil spirit beast , you should notify me in advance , since you know that I am just a Spirit – level realm , and still not be able to cope with a Cloud – level realm evil spirit beast . If somehow they manage to get near to me within ten meters, I would be done for. ” Xie Aoyu has just escaped from the Cloud – level beast , still have the lingering fear .

“Yiya!”Xiao Bai indicated that it understands.

Xie Aoyu said with a smile: “But I must say , that this Cloud – level evil spirit beast , even if we met it by accident , the feeling was really stimulating , unfortunately the gap between us and the beast was too big , so we’re still not able to fight with them for much longer time even if we use all of our might.”

Previously he has several times encountered with Ascension – level evil spirit beast, and fought with them. Although failed to gained the upper hand , but also with the assistance of Earth Escaping Technique and couple with several powerful fighting skills , managed to make those evil spirit beast suffered severe injuries .All the Ascension-lower level evil spirit beast were freaking out before they escaped.

As for the Ascension-intermediate level and above evil spirit beast, Xie Aoyu would be more careful, as he does not have the courage to approach.

He still does not want to squander his life.

As for the Spirit – level realm evil spirit beast, even if it is in the Spirit – superior level, Xie Aoyu still confident of being able to beat it, and turn it into a dish.

“Yiya, yiya” Xiao Bai felt its belly and shout.

Xie Aoyu looks away, “Xiao Bai, your appetite is really something! ” He found that although the size of the Xiao Bai was small, but it has a very big appetite. In fact, it is no less than some large scale evil spirit beast. He even suspected that Xiao Bai actually has been cursed by someone and was forced to transformed into a small little beast, ” Let’s keep going, this time we will look for an evil spirit bear, definitely enough for you to eat.”

Xiao Bai jumped in excitement.

As an evil spirit beast, it has unexceptional instinct in detecting the presence of another evil spirit beast. They kept walking and walking; Xiao Bai then suddenly stopped, raised his nose and sniffed it several times, then ran towards the southwest direction.

Xie Aoyu responded by pulled out the Holy Spirit sword, and trailed closely from behind.

In a strange place where the risk of danger is everywhere, he grasped his Holy Spirit Sword closely, and stays on guard in case if something bad happens.

“Roar!”

A beastly roar transmits from the front.

Followed up is a human voice screaming, and then the sound of a fierce battle are taking place.

Xie Aoyu immediately went towards the sound, and then he climbed and stood on a tree. He looked into a direction, and only to see a violence Spirit-level Earth Storm Bear surrounded by a group of people.

That Earth Storm Bear was definitely not weak, it has the strength of lower level Spirit-realm. But, the experts of the siege group are also lower-level Spirit realm, coupled with the advantages in terms of their number of 13-14 people, they teamed

up to attack the Earth Storm Bear who already beginning to weaken and simply unable to put out a fight.

“Bing Wu?!” Xie Aoyu saw a familiar face among the people in the group, armed with a short knife , and occasionally , barges in and strikes to kill.

It has been several months since he parted ways with Bing Wu.

With fatal stabs from the lower level Spirit-realm expert’s sword , the Earth Storm Bear finally killed. Each person in the group was very excited , as that man proudly stepped on the bear ‘s corpse and show off his mightiness.

Xie Aoyu ignore the others, only concentrate on the girl named Wu Bing . He who was once unable to cultivate any qi , always received help from this beautiful girl

His memory returned to the Langya City.

After being apart for several months and was finally able to reunite with Bing Wu, somewhat it managed to make him feel very excited.

“Bing Wu!”Xie Aoyu immediately calmed down, and then shouted.

That group of people including Bing Wu was busy discussing how to deal with the Earth Storm Beast’s corpse, but when she heard

the voice; she turned to look, and suddenly her eyes turn moist, “Aoyu!”

Both of their eyes met, and for a while, they become speechless.

After some time, Xie Aoyu walked over and put his hand out gently, correcting Bing Wu’s dishevelled hair as been blown by the wind and flipped it behind her ears , then softly said:”Missed me?”

“Um.”Bing Wu blushing red, but still biting her lip, gently nodded.

Xie Aoyu said: “Me too.”

The words maybe not much but enough to show how deep their feelings are.

Their hearts once again feel so close.

It was different when he with Ziyan. With her, Xie Aoyu felt a gap. Perhaps he felt a slightly inferior, as he merely a budding teenager, but Ziyan? She already is the peerless beauty known throughout the continent. As a sage expert level, she is the most promising prospect to reach the Emperor realm. She is also a master in refining medicines.

But Bing Wu is different.

The two have been childhood sweethearts, the innocence from the childhood, and somehow there is no gap between them. What is most important is, if in the past, Bing Wu was the one who protected him , but this time, it is his turn to protect her, like a man.

Nevertheless, this is the duty of a gentleman.

“Cough!”

While those two were in the middle of exchanging their deep affection for each other, however there are others who deliberately coughed loudly.

Xie Aoyu furrowed his eyebrows; apparently someone did not have eyes.

“Aoyu , let me introduce you . ” Bing Wu’s face were flushing red, but still, she was not someone who would care about what others will think, she reached out Xie Aoyu ‘s right hand and hold it, ” My fellow schoolmates, he is my... “

“Her future husband...Xie Aoyu!”Xie Aoyu cut her words.

“What?”

“Future husband? What’s all this about?”

“Yeah, since when Bing Wu has a man, what is this boy up to?”

The schoolmates of Bing Wu exploded immediately.

Many who have unrequited love towards Bing Wu, especially the lower-level Spirit expert who had killed the Earth Storm Bear, his face became twisted immediately. His eyes glanced at Bing Wu, only to discover that the latter did not refute at all. Anger began to surge from the bottom of his heart.

Bing Wu also did not think that Xie Aoyu would say something like that.

While their hearts are mutual, they never pierce that layer of windows paper. With his current confession, apart from being shy, and excluding the nervousness, the truth is she feels very happy. [\[1\]](#)

“Bing Wu’s schoolmate, Li Chaofeng.” That lower Spirit-level expert, who first came forward, introduced himself.

Xie Aoyu smiled, said: “You have successfully killed the Earth Storm Bear with that sword; your future development should be good.”

Xie Aoyu just simply said with no meaning behind it, but when it reached Li Chaofeng’s ear, it sounded so wrong.

He was not some old generation to teach him, who does he think

he is? Li Chaofeng's face darkens.

“Sire, for you to said so, your strength must be extraordinary, how about we change pointers?” Li Chaofeng throws a challenge. Everyone has long known that he pursue Bing Wu, so when he issued the challenge, everyone thoughts it was normal.

Spirit-realm lower level, this is no fun at all.

Xie Aoyu is someone who has been able to compete even with the lower level Ascension-realm, so it is natural for him to not have a shred of interest in this challenge. He shrugged, and said with a smile: “Not interested.”

[\[1\]](#) (T/N: never pierce that layer of windows paper means they never admit their feelings before)

Chapter 73: Glancing Knock, Sideways Stroke^{*}

Bing Wu certainly has many things to talk with Xie Aoyu, so it is naturally for her to not want to be disturbed. Therefore she responded to Li Chaofeng and others, saying: “How about you and the rest deal with the Earth Storm Bear, and while you guys doing that, me and Xie Aoyu, have a lot of things that we both want to discuss in private.” Having finished her speech, she and Xie Aoyu, together under the eyes of everyone, walking toward a safe distance..

Li Chaofeng who was full with jealousy, when he saw with his own eyes how Bing Wu had behaved in such a way, was totally furious, but he did not have the courage to be rude towards Bing Wu. It is not just because her strength is pretty good, but mainly because of the person behind her back, You Lan Ruo. Who does not know about You Lan Ruo, as she was not just ferocious, but also with a Heavenly King level evil spirit beast on her side as a familiar, no one would dare to provoke or mess with her.

However, as for that Xie Aoyu, it would be a totally different case.

“Don’t tell me that you’re actually scared, aren’t you?” Li Chaofeng said with sneers.

One of the Li Chaofeng’s best friends also opened his mouth and said:” I think maybe after he saw the way you used the sword to kill the Earth Storm Bear, he felt that he was not your match.”

Xie Aoyu turned around, and stared at him coldly, “I only kill people!”

That cold gaze sends shivers down to their spines..

They are after all students of the academy, though there are times when they will venture out in search of knowledge and experience, at most they only ever kills evil spirit beast, but never kill a person.

After seeing Xie Aoyu has gone, all the fear they felt just now dissipated.

“Crazy, really crazy.” Li Chaofeng said and curled his lips.

“If he is really that great, why did he refuse your challenge just now? Obviously, he actually scared, so don’t worry, Chaofeng, you will still have your chance.”

“I know.”

Xie Aoyu and Bing Wu chose to ignore them, since for these two people, there are so many things they want to talk about together.

Separated and then reunited, nevertheless, it’s still something to be celebrated with joy.

That brief separation makes them to appreciate this meeting more than ever. Xie Aoyu too, will use this opportunity to pierce through the layer of windows paper.

At the same time, Xie Aoyu also has something on his mind.

It is precisely about the butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo.

That old woman was willing to go as far as to attempt to kill him, in such of a secretive way. All of this makes Xie Aoyu to feel that this is not as easy as he thought it would be. So, Xie Aoyu wants to investigate more deeply through Bing Wu.

“Aoyu , how is your life doing in these days?” Bing Wu asked with her gentle voice.

“Well, what kind of person I am, shouldn’t you know better?” Xie Aoyu said with a smile.

Bing Wu smiled, as she knows he who was originally unable to cultivate any Qi, ten years of being humiliated and ridiculed, not only Xie Aoyu persevered through all of it, but he also seemed quite happy and unrestrained.

After reminisced about their past, both of them feels an unexplainable warmth.

“So how’s you’re doing, what happened with the butterfly afterwards?” Xie Aoyu said.

“My master was giving her assistance, in the evolution process of her familiar, the Wind-Fire Meteor Rainbow Butterfly, and was unable to distract herself at the moment, which is why she sent me to her brother’s academy.” Bing Wu replied earnestly.

That Butterfly Queen, has a brother now?

Xie Aoyu’s head seems to have a headache, as if it was not enough with the Butterfly Queen who is already so frightening, but now, there is also the elder brother of hers. It would be best if this matter does not involve any clan, if not, it may cause bigger problems.

“What kind of academy? And what does her brother doing there?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“Tian Luo Mo Military Academy. It is the Imperial’s biggest academy. The dean of the Tian Luo Mo Military Academy is my master’s eldest brother.” Bing Wu said with a smile on her face, “Aoyu, it would be good if you can attend this academy together with me, the dean himself already gave me an approval.”

Xie Aoyu immediately shook his head, and said: “I have been accustomed to live freely without constraints, so I probably would not be able to hold myself back, so considers this as finished.”

Although he already have a gist of the whole situation, Xie Aoyu still feels quite a bit headache on his head.

A dean's strength is nothing but great.

To list those who have gone to the academy, I am afraid it would be all over throughout the whole continent.

So he can imagine that the background of You Lan Ruo would definitely not be so low and simple. But why must she acted so secretively before? Xie Aoyu scratched his head, puzzled.

“Oh right, that Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame, have you managed to obtain it?” Bing Wu asked. [\[1\]](#)

Hearing the question, Xie Aoyu's heart was shaken. He knows full well that without any solid evidence, even if he tell her everything, about how the Butterfly Queen attempted to kill him, it would still be hard for Bing Wu to believe in him. So for now, what can he do is to have more discretion, as to ensure his real intention would not be exposed,” Aiya, say no more, that Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame has its own guardian evil spirit beast. I went to the place before, but the strength of the guardian beast was just too formidable.”

“Was it a three-tailed scorpion drake?” Bing Wu's delicate eyebrows furrowed.

“Right, it was a three-tailed scorpion drake.” XieAoyu sounded helplessly.

“Strange, because right after the master discovered the place, she had already drove it away, so why would it return to that place again.” Bing Wu revealed her puzzled looks.

Drove it away?

It seems that my suspicion is true after all.

Still knowing the fact that Butterfly Queen seems so eager to kill me, Xie Aoyu could not help but to feels chills deep inside his heart,” Bing Wu , have your master ever talk to you about me?”

“Yes, master seems to be very concerned about you.”Bing Wu said with a smile.

Xie Aoyu holds Bing Wu’s delicate hands,”She cares about me?”

“Excited?” Bing Wu could not help herself but laughed.

He was excited, but it was more the excitement of being anxious. Xie Aoyu then secretly took a deep breath, calmed his mind, stretch his arms gently and embrace Bing Wu,”What did she said ? Don’t tell me that she said she was afraid of me being able to surpass her achievement in the future, and thus, drawn by her own jealousy, decided to choke me to death , right?”

Being in the arms of Xie Aoyu for the first time, make Bing Wu became somewhat bashful and flustered, “Keke, you’re so terrible, master also joked about this once, but that’s all.”

Xie Aoyu has an urge to curse.

“She even talked about me..to be able to have the butterfly’s comments regarding my character; I seems that I have struck myself with a tremendous benefit.”Xie Aoyu said and then laughed.

Feeling comfortable being in Xie Aoyu’s arms, Bing Wu said with a gentle smile: ” Master said if you are fully grown up , if you’re still not dead by then , in the future you will shake the whole continent.”

“Doesn’t die?” Xie Aoyu who has finally lost control of his emotions, sounded cold.

“Aoyu,what happened..”Bing Wu was surprised.

“Nothing, it was just I did not think that the Butterfly Queen would evaluate me in such high regard.” As a matter of fact, in Xie Aoyu’s heart, he actually swore at the Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo continuously.

You Lan Ruo , You Lan Ruo ah , you always have this kind of otherworldly appearance on yourself , who knows deep down inside, you are actually turned out to be a vicious, snake-like woman. I, Xie Aoyu, swear that one day, if I am still not dead, I will have you as my plaything!

Xie Aoyu may enjoy cursing her in his heart, but in reality, it gave him quite a headache.

Not just because of You Lan , but if her familiar who is currently going through with metamorphosis managed to evolve, it will become a middle stage-Heavenly King realm evil spirit beast, which just one stage away to becoming the most powerful evil spirit beast in the world.

How he would not get a headache with an enemy like this.

Of course he is helpless, as the difference in strength between him and his enemy is seems so out of his reach, but rather than worrying about it every day, he might as well throw back his head, and concentrate fully on self torture.

“Aoyu, how is your current strength?”Bing Wu asked as she glanced at Li Chaofeng who was just behind them and still eyed her covetously, somewhat feeling anxious.

Xie Aoyu laughed and said: “Why, do I have a lot of love rivals?”

“Yes, don’t you know that this beautiful woman is popular?” Bing Wu looked at him in such a manner, who seems simply did not put Li Chaofeng in his eyes as the latter obviously hold no importance to him, and then she immediately felt calm again.

“Therefore, I have decided, in the event that Li Chaofeng or anyone once again dared to run the risk of being humiliated, I will

beat every single one of them to a pulp, I will show how badass is your man can be.”Xie Aoyu brandished his fist.

Bing Wu seems angry and said:” What with your man, how can you be so shameless, since when have I ever agree to be your woman? Really have no shame.”

Xie Aoyu stares and said: “Whoever dares to oppose, I will beat them.”

“You are just bullying.” Bing Wu said so in the mouth, but deep down inside her heart, is nothing but happiness, “Oh, by the way, I almost forgot about one thing.”

“About what?”Xie Aoyu asked.

Bing Wu earnestly answered: “My master knows why the current you can cultivate your qi.”

[*] the title is an idiom meaning sarcastically

[1] (T/N: read chapter [17-18](#))

Chapter 74: Xiao Bai's Dream

Consecutive disputes, with first rate experts such as Greed, Qin Doug, Batulu, Valencia and Dalal, has made Xie Aoyu 's state of mind fortified, learning through all experiences. It could even be said, even if the heavens above to falls into ruins, or the land sank, his facial expressions still will not change without even batting an eyelid.

But when he heard the words from Bing Wu's mouth; his heart was still shook, crazily.

His emotion suddenly becomes chaotic.

Why he could cultivate Qi?

Also, it is not because of the tri-color spheres being so mysterious and inscrutable, but because all of this is his secret, that he never told anyone, not even Ziyan and Bing Wu.

If so how did You Lan managed to found out?

“She only met me once, how would she know?”Xie Aoyu forced a smiling face, pretends to have a suspicious looks.

“My master has heavenly gifted eyes that allow her to capture all the truth before her, she only need to have a contact with you once, and that was more than enough.” Bing Wu answered, as the matter of facts; she seems to have complete faith in the Butterfly

Queen, You Lan Ruo.

Xie Aoyu believes that this is simply an opportunity not to be missed(T/N:to dig further),”So, what did she said?”

Bing Wu said with a smile:”My master told me that you might encounter some sort of a divine elixir, because this is what a divine elixir capable of. Xie Aoyu,did you really found a divine elixir?”

Divine elixir? The tri-color spheres? Xie Aoyu smiles bitterly, it seems like it has been discovered, he also cannot say anything, after all, this Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo really is fearful.

“Possibly, I am not quite clear; you also know that I always went to Langya Mountain to play frequently, so I might have eaten a divine elixir somewhere accidentally.” Xie Aoyu, he does not mean to be secretive, but considering the relationship between Bing Wu and You Lan Ruo, he should be careful , and if he does not tell Bing Wu anything, she will have nothing to hide, should You Lan Ruo requires her to answer.

“It looks like your luck is good.” Bing Wu does not seem to care much.

At this time, Bing Wu’s schoolmates were calling for them.

The Earth Storm Bear has been divided into many parts, and all of it will going to be roasted.

Xie Aoyu and Bing Wu then went back.

From a distance, Bing Wu noticed at once, Xiao Bai who is in the middle of roasting one of the biggest part of meats, in addition with its serious looking appearance; one could not help but laugh. However, the most crucial point is, that portion of bear meat, which being roasted by Xiao Bai, producing a very tempting aroma. Compared with others, it looks very appetizing.

“Xiao Bai, when did you learn to do this?” Bing Wu asked, pleasantly surprised.

“Yiya.” Xiao Bai pointed at Xie Aoyu.

Bing Wu was astonished, so she asked: “Did you really taught it?”

Xie Aoyu could not help but smile and said: “I have taught it, since it is very greedy, and I did not have time to cook due to me busy cultivating. As the result, it began to imitate my way of cooking. It is also true, that this kind of talent to eat without a care certainly is something that no one would be able to do, no; there should be no any beast that would be able to reach its level yet. ”

“Yiya, yiya” Xiao Bai shouted.

“Xiao Bai, you are not saying that your ambition is to become the first God of Cookery in this continent?”

Bing Wu and Xiao Bai may not know each other long enough , but

it's also because of Xie Aoyu and love the house and its crow , coupled with the fact of Xiao Bai's absolutely lovable appearance. [\[1\]](#)

As expected, Xiao Bai nodded seriously.

Indeed, it really is interested in food and eating.

As for other things, almost none have been able to rouse its interests.

“Mistreating his own familiar, very inhuman.” Li Chaofeng who was watching, especially Bing Wu who was unexpectedly seems to have fun and joked with Xie Aoyu, was green with envy.

Xie Aoyu does not even need to respond as Xiao Bai with its “Yiya”, took one of the firewood and lift it to throw, angrily pointing at Li Chaofeng, making a threatening gesture as if it would not hesitate to hurt him.

Its appearance was so lovable and cute; make anyone who sees it unable to contain themselves from smiling. [\[2\]](#)

Li Chaofeng's face was green.

Ignored by the owner, now even his familiar, a mere lower White Spirit Beast also did not give him some face. He could not help but to feel depressed.

“Um, not bad,take this, Xiao Bai.”Xie Aoyu puts out all the seasonings.

Xiao Bai took it, and started to sprinkle the seasoning skillfully.

Looking at its movement, Xie Aoyu said: “It seems like I must give you an interspatial ring, especially to store all cooking related materials.”

“Yiya, yiya.”Xiao Bai nodded seriously.

Xie Aoyu then took out interspatial rings.

There are several interspatial rings on his hands, furthermore, he still had the interspatial – bracelet formerly belonged to the heretic expert, Batulu. He obviously did not mind at all, as he casually tossed one of the interspatial rings to Xiao Bai.

Xiao Bai grabbed it, and then put all the seasoning into it.

“Smells good!”

“Yes, my mouth is watering.”

Almost all Bing Wu’s fellow classmates approached their group, except Li Chaofeng who stood alongside his friends, but the corner of his eyes glanced at the bear meat.

Speaking about those students , they might all come from good families , but they all had to go venturing for more than dozens of days just to find and gain experience, and had to prepare and cook their own food , which as the result, most of the meat was undercooked.

Therefore, these students, every single of them, who are looking greedily, actually crave for a taste of true meat; it seems as if they had not eaten for three years.

“Yiya.” Xiao Bai said to those students who are drooling.

“It asked whether you guys want to eat or not?”Xie Aoyu unofficially become Xiao Bai’s temporary translator, as there is no one who can understand the language better than him.

“Eat, eat.”These students quickly nodded.

Xiao Bai shouted twice.

Translator Xie Aoyu translates:”You all can eat, but each of you must hand to it half of your meats, otherwise, the talk ends here.”

“Yes, of course.”

Besides, the size of the Earth Storm Bear is about five to six meters tall, which for all of these students, more than enough to

last them for two days.

Xie Aoyu knows that with this, Xiao Bai can eat to its fullest.

Then, Xiao Bai earnestly evenly divide each of these shares into two parts, half have been incorporated into its interspatial –ring, while the other half will be roasted.

Looked at its skillfully moves, Xie Aoyu is filled with nothing but emotion.

Having such an evil spirit beast to accompany you is truly a fortune.

After a while, other than Li Chaofeng and his friends, everyone has got their shares of Xiao Bai handmade cooking meats. Appetizing smells enveloped all around the place, with Xie Aoyu and others were enjoying their food to their heart's content.

Only Li Chaofeng and his friends, looking very depressed, while eating their half-cooked meats, apparently still has little blood dripping.

They looked at the Xie Aoyu and others occasionally, while deep down inside their hearts seemed to be bleeding.

“Xiao Bai, what did you do that for?” Bing Wu asked.

It looks like Xiao Bai took out the bear meats that it got from the students, and began to roasting it. Only this time the technique seems to be a little bit different, as this time it is not from the outside to the inside, but from the inside to the outside. Then, it put some fire into the breast meat.

“It is studying the new law of roasting.”Xie Aoyu said. (T/N: puhahahahaha XD)

Bing Wu could not help but chuckle: “Xiao Bai, is your dream to become the continent’s first God of Cookery?”

Xiao Bai nodded earnestly and then continue to roasting.

To conduct such a research to produce a good food indeed will never be easy.

Xiao Bai’s first experiment ends in failure.

But its perseverance to continue as it took another part of the bear meat to be tested again; this kind of spirit is really admirable.

When Xiao Bai experiments for the fourth time, Xie Aoyu suddenly stood up, frowned and starts looking from the left side to the front.

“What’s wrong?” Bing Wu whispered.

“It seems someone is coming.” Xie Aoyu replied.

Just as Li Chaofeng seems like unable to find excuses, as soon as he heard this, he immediately said with a mocking tone :” You are not even have the strength, please stop pretending to be one, what’s with people are coming, if it is indeed true, where are they?”

One of his good friends also curled his lip and said:”Exactly,some people ah, seems to believe oneself infallible.” [\[3\]](#)

Their words make Bing Wu’s face looked solemn.

“It will arrive soon.”Xie Aoyu lowers his voice.

“You are nothing but all talk.”Li Chaofeng sneered.

Just as he was done speaking, at the same time, he heard “Thump, thump, thump!” sounds coming through.

It seems the earth was shaking.

As if some giant is moving, furthermore, it seems like the sounds of the echoing footsteps, although not very obvious, but still can be heard.

Li Chaofeng’s face complexion becomes uglier.

Xie Aoyu, too, narrowed his eyes. His strength is much stronger than all the people that are here. His eyesight is naturally more powerful. Through the dense branches and leaves, indistinctly can be seen that it was an evolutionary Earth Storm Bear, with the strength of it more or less the same as what they had eaten earlier, a lower – level spirit.

It seems an obese man in his 20s was riding the Earth Storm Bear.

There are dozens of people followed him from behind. They bring together more than 10 students who were tied by ropes. All of the students consist of men and women, with each and every one of them looked so battered and exhausted.

[4]

[1] (T/N: 爱屋及乌= love the house and its crow, meaning if I love him, I must accept/love everything that related/connected to him)

[2] (T/N: Shit! What's with Xiao Bai today? Stop being so cute XD)

[3] (T/N: 自以为是 to believe oneself infallible= to believe himself as perfect, flawless, better than anyone else)

[4] (T/N: Xiao Bai is the lowest rank of evil spirit beast. Its species called White Spirit Beast. As for the appearance, it looks like some sort of combination lion cub and white tiger. So imagine the scenes of Xiao Bai cooking, and sprinkle some seasoning with that kind of “I want to cuddle you so hard” appearance~~)

Chapter 75: Situation Development

“You will not be able to escape.” The man who rode the Earth Storm Bear shouted from the distance, “All of you better stand there and not moving heedlessly , otherwise , mark my words , I’ll feed you to my [Xiong](#) brother to eat.”

Such arrogance.

It seems like he did not put Xie Aoyu and others in his eyes at all.

“This is bad, really bad, I cannot see through this guy strength.” Li Chaofeng’s face complexion changed, “Everyone, please be careful, it would be wise if you avoid yourself from sparking conflict with them.”

Xie Aoyu shot a glanced at him. This guy probably has a brain disease. There is no way that he did not noticed a group of students have been arrested and tied up before him, it was just too obvious that the next would be them. And this guy still, unexpectedly, added that they should not try to stir up trouble with the other party.

Half of the fraction of the fat man’s people followed from behind, forming a circle.

In the meantime, to one’s surprise, Li Chaofeng and others did not come up with any plan on how they should deal with situations like this. All of them looked so overwhelmed, and trembled with fear. At this time, there seemed no shred of resemblance of a man

at all.

Xie Aoyu secretly shook his head.

This is called precisely a grievance of education, as right now, all of them looking like a bunch of idiots.

“Aoyu.” Bing Wu whispered.

“Don’t worry; nothing is going to happen with me here.” Xie Aoyu patted Bing Wu’s lily white hands gently, crouching down, “Just look at how serious is Xiao Bai , still devote its full attention to the research.”

Bing Wu turned to look. Sure enough, Xiao Bai looked absolutely anything but ordinary, this makes Bing Wu to admire it more than before. However, at the same time, she felt embarrassed and ashamed of herself, as deep down inside her heart, the fear is still there.

After all, she had never encountered anything like this before.

Xie Aoyu was not bothered in the least, as he himself did not have the slightest fear for such expert like Qin Doug, he had even killed the heretic expert Batulu. So it would be strange for him to be afraid of some petty little bandits.

“This is a golden opportunity for you to show your greatness.” Li Chaofeng’s friend said and smiled.

Li Chaofeng shot a glanced at Xie Aoyu, eyed at Bing Wu again, his heart gushes back with passion, he walked forward, and spoke with a clear voice: “This one who is beneath you, Tian Luo’s Li family , Li Chaofeng . May I ask where this expert coming from?”

The number of clans within Tian Luo Empire instead of 1000, there are approximately 800.

Xie Clan, Xie Aoyu’s clan, is at the lowest position. Tian Luo ‘s Li clan, Li Chaofeng’s clan, though their position is not that great compared to the Qin clan, Pasa clan , or Desai clan, the three highest ranked clans within Tian Luo Empire , but they still after all belong in the second class clan , and is regarded as one of the major forces in the empire.

“Li, Tian Luo’s Li, I might have heard of the name.” Fatty slightly nodded.

“I am the person of Li.” Li Chaofeng when he heard the fat man’s response, filled with joys.

Fatty nodded: “Yes, I got it.” He slowly stood up on the Earth Storm Bear back,

“Everyone listen to me, you’d better not fight, I will tie you up, and those who resist, executes on sight!”

“You cannot be like this.” Li Chaofeng starts to feel a bit scared.

Fatty snorted, and said, “Why can’t I be like this?”

Li Chaofeng clenches his teeth, and said: “You did not fear for our Li clan retaliation?”

“Li clan? Haha, my brother even have Tian Luo Empire’s Prince on his hands, why should he be afraid with just a mere clan like Li clan?” One of the fatty’s subordinates taunted.

That statement surprised everyone including Xie Aoyu.

They even dared to capture the Tian Luo Empire’s Prince?

Who does not know that the male population in the royal family of the Tian Luo Empire are not blooming , up to now , the current emperor has only one son , he not even have a daughter , in other words , this prince is the only successor to inherit the throne and become the next emperor in the future!

Who is this group of people?

Xie Aoyu’s eyebrows furrowed, if they were just some ordinary bandits or thieves group, they are not likely to have this kind of guts, no, that is not right too, because even if you add the biggest continent bandits and thieves groups into the calculation , they would also unlikely to have this kind of guts. Because once the Tian Luo Empire’s emperor issues an order, all these bandits and thieves, no matter how big they are, would perish.

How these bandits found the courage to contend with the empire.

Is there a possibility that this group of bandits was actually controlled in secret by a person within the Tian Luo Empire?

“You must be kidding sir; there is no way that you would be able to capture the Highness?” Li Chaofeng was not a fool, as he would not easily going to believe that, because although he knew that the Prince was a student, and lack of experience, but he was protected by top notch experts.

“Heh, if you do not believe me, fine, you can ask them.” Fatty’s subordinate curled his lips.

One of the students who were tied lamented: “Li Chaofeng, his Royal Highness the Prince was really captured by them, when I was venturing with his Highness; I managed to somehow escape at the time, but later was caught by them.”

Li Chaofeng looked up and down at this student, looked puzzled: “Are you Chia?”

“Yes, I am Chia, the one who was venturing together with his Royal Highness Prince.” The student said with a wry smile.

Hearing this, suddenly, all of them felt the bristling hairs; from head to toe it was ice cold.

Fatty laughed heartily, and said: “For your knowledge, it was because of this boy, our leader commanded us to send a group of our brothers to do the search. However, this deputy head was quite lucky; this deputy head not only managed to find him, but also managed to captures all of these students who were also venturing, haha.....”

Xie Aoyu started to feel the gravity of the situation.

All of these seem to be the truth.

But this fatty said that he is the deputy head, and this fatty person strength have nothing much to talk about. But he was still able to become the deputy head, so obviously that there is something fishy about this bandit group.

By relying only on their meager strength, they have guts to capture the one and only, the emperor’s son?

This seems like the biggest joke in the world, but unfortunately it is also the truth, strangely enough, where on earth all those supreme experts who were assigned to protect the prince in the dark? Even without the existence of this group of bandits, do they not fear the attack of some kind of powerful evil spirit beast? All of this seems pretty unlikely possibility, so if there are really experts, why the prince was captured?

Xie Aoyu cannot think clearly.

He felt that this matter is not as simple as he had thought it would be.

“Wait a minute!” Just when the fatty’s fat hands almost reached, Li Chaofeng cried out loud again.

Fatty began to lose his patience and said: “What else do you want to say?”

“I can tell you, we have a disciple of the Butterfly Queen with us here. Are all of you bandits, have no fear of her retaliation?” Li Chaofeng said.

Xie Aoyu suddenly stood up, shot a cold killer gaze towards Li Chaofeng , shouted : ” You damn fucking eunuch!”

“Aoyu.” Bing Wu immediately stops him.

Li Chaofeng face turned red as he was scolded by Xie Aoyu.

Fatty laughed , “Interesting, interesting, if it’s true there is a disciple of the Butterfly Queen here, this is good, as the said person is now within our grasp, so it would difficult for us brothers to not render some meritorious service from this. “

Xie Aoyu frowned and said, “You mean, you have always wanted to catch the Butterfly Queen’s disciples?”

“Yes, it is not whether we are afraid or not, since this is one of our objectives, to capture the loved ones of those so-called experts, hahahahaha “Fatty laughed heartily.

They are certainly not just some mere bandits; they are supported from behind by a large organization, targeting people who are closely related to those experts from the start. What kind of benefits they will reap by catching people who are close with those supreme experts? To threaten them?

Xie Aoyu said coldly : ” I do not care what or who you are , thieves , bandits , but as you can see I am in the middle of eating , so do not bother me , and get out from my sight right now . “

He certainly did not want to provoke such a big organization. But if they continue to have him cornered, he would not hesitate to fight.

“Hey, you little son of a bitch, put down your dish, take a good look at your Grandpa, what an audacity to dared to raise your voice before this Grandpa. You are dead. “Fatty showed his contempt, “Kill them all for me, and remember that you must not hurt the disciple of the Butterfly Queen.”

All the bandits withdraw their weapons.

“Please don’t, we and this guy have no relation whatsoever, he is Bing Wu’s man, has nothing to do with us, he is not even the student of our academy.” Some of the students shouted anxiously.

“It is really true; we do not have any relations.”

“You can kill him, but please don’t kill us.”

Bing Wu’s body was trembling with anger. Although, she cannot be said to have a deep friendship with these students, but as they all have been venturing together for dozens of days, so how to one’s surprise, at the most crucial moment, they would went as far to only think about how to save their own neck, it was really such unbearable sight.

One of the students is pointing at Bing Wu, and said: “She is the disciple of Butterfly Queen, called Bing Wu.”

“Right, she is Bing Wu.”

Xie Aoyu watches indifferently, but he does not expect that this time, Li Chaofeng apparently unaccompanied, even his good friends choose to stay away from him.

Watching a group of students shouting and pointing fingers at each other, Fatty simply smiles. This is like watching a comedy show by a bunch of clowns. He then turned his gaze toward Li Chaofeng, seem interested in him, “You do not have anything to say? If you say what they said, I will let you go.”

“I may have bowed to you before, but that was simply because I just want you to let us go. The reason why I told you about the Butterfly Queen’s disciple, it was not only to scare you, but also for

the sake of all of us, but you want me to actually betray the women I like. “Li Chaofeng then said firmly,” Absolutely impossible! “ [\[1\]](#)

Fatty ferociously said with a smile: “I like your spirit, originally this deputy head’s family in the past were pressured and forced to perish by those so called educated fucking nobles, degenerates me into this bandit before you, now I will make you know the taste of the regret.”

Li Chaofeng snorted coldly, he did not say anything.

“Catch him for me, this deputy head want to slowly torture him, let see how hard his bones are.” Fatty said with his sinister looking face.

[\[*\]](#) (T/N: Xiong-bear)

[\[1\]](#) (T/N: Woah, I did not expect this...So there’s actually a decent rival for Xie Aoyu? Watch your back, MC!)

Chapter 76: Human Nature

Two burly men who followed the fat man began to move forward, they did not even pulled out their weapons, as no one puts all these students in their eyes.

It's no wonder.

They caught those students who have seen the Earth Storm Bear existence before, which immediately scared and listless. They were convinced that no one would ever have the courage to rebel against them, so naturally it never occurred to them that Li Chaofeng would dare stand against them, not to mention the other students have already come forward, giving up any chance of resistance.

“Brat “One of the men grabs the Li Chaofeng’s shoulder.

Brush!

A touch of cold light flashes.

An arm flies out.

Li Chaofeng brandishes the sword and cut off the guy’s right arm, in an instant, the man let out a pitiful cried. Without delay, he with his hand holding the sword tightly, moving towards the left side of the man’s arms, and thrusting the sword into the man’s chest.

“Arghh!” “

The man was dead with his eyes still wide open.

As soon as he is done killing with the sword, Li Chaofeng did not even stop for a rest, as he pulled out his sword and stabbed the other man. It goes without saying, the man obviously had the strength of arm which cannot be compared with Li Chaofeng, so it's definitely something unexpected as he managed to cut off the guy's arm, which was only able to give up a pitiful screams, and as if there was no resistance at all, also was killed by Li Chaofeng's sword on the spot.

This sudden development startled everyone.

Xie Aoyu nodded to himself, this Li Chaofeng guy, even though he was annoying before, but that was for the sake of his classmates, and to protect them. But now with how those students acted, it has made him to lose the desire to stand up for them, and thus decided to reveal his killing side. This guy, at least has a spine.

Xie Aoyu's cold eyes sweep through all the bandits. The number is not much, the overall strength is just alright, and the lowest is on the intermediate level. But there are no experts as it seems, as for the fat man who was seeing through by Xie Aoyu's eyesight, that fatty is a spirit level realm, the same realm as Li Chaofeng, who would be unable to give the fatty a fight, as the former's strength was doubled with the assistance of the Earth Storm Bear.

Previously, Li Chaofeng, only after he joined hands with all

students, only then he was able to kill the Earth Storm Bear. So naturally, that the beast is definitely not something that he would be able to handle alone.

“Bing Wu, when you and your fellow classmates have your group organized for the venturing, are there no senior students or teacher who will join and lead you all?” Xie Aoyu asked in a low voice.

“There was.” Bing Wu said with a bitter smile, “Me, and my group were supposedly led by a teacher, but my teacher said, to be protected while venturing, would not benefit us, instead it will only do us harm, so she drove us away.”

Xie Aoyu is on the verge of swearing.

Even if it was for the better good, you also have to look at the quality of these students, who would went as far as to sell their own companion. Without any strong friendship or bonding, together with such people, would that not equal as staying together, with a group full of bandits and thieves?

Xie Aoyu looked at those students who looked very scared, stress, anxiety, and then sighed to himself. As a matter of fact, they are not that bad, but as they belong to the flowers in the greenhouse, so have never experienced wind and rain. Well, let's forget about it, and regardless who and where these bandits are and from, he would better dealing with them first, so he began to pick up stones.

“Aoyu, what did you do that for?” Bing Wu asked, being puzzled

with his action.

“Preparing for a battle.” Xie Aoyu actually requires a number of throwing knives to execute his sword spinning distant skill, which he currently did not have, so he change to stones, since the number of bandits, after all, a lot.

He picked up the hardest Walnut-sized pebbles.

So as he did this, he formed a strange, bizarre picture.

Surrounded by a group of bandits, with the students who are frightened and surrendered, Li Chaofeng desperate resistance, and in extremely contrast to Xie Aoyu who is casually squatting down to pick up stones, and Xiao Bai with its conscientious study of the new roasting cooking law, as if they both were completely detached from the outside world.

While Xie Aoyu in his relaxing mood, the fat man started to become crazy. Both of his right hand men have been killed, and so his small, round eyes, stares coldly at Li Chaofeng.

Although he had already killed two people, Li Chaofeng still feels uneasy, after all, he never killed a human being before. And being stared by the fat man was not helping either, makes his feelings to become increasingly uncomfortable, so he firms his heart, and look at the fat man in the eye.

“OK, OK.” Fatty grinned, and then he pointed to the students,

“So do you all want to live? Want to live, kill this guy!”

For a moment, the atmosphere became silent. Even the sound of breath can be heard clearly. Xie Aoyu stopped picking up stones, Xiao Bai also raised it head, their eyes locked on those students, if before, it was because all of those students were helpless and weak, now it is all about their human nature.

All eyes stared straight at Li Chaofeng as well as his classmates.

“All of you better choose correctly, either you die, or he dies.” Fatty said, “I only count to three, ONE!”

The heart of all these students began to move fast.

“TWO!”

One by one started to look at Li Chaofeng, some even have begun to withdraw their weapons.

“THREE!” Fat man called out the last number.

Meanwhile, Li Chaofeng tightened the sword in his hand, he desperately wanted to kill the fat man, but the Earth Storms Bear were blocking his way through, he can only be as anxious and helpless as he is.

“Chaofeng, do not blame it on us, and I do not want to die.” The

first one who is taking the weapon and move is Li Chaofeng's best friend.

After that, one by one come forward... Among all students with more than a dozen people, a total of five raised their weapons.

“It seems that me, Li Chaofeng's worth for others still can be considered pretty good.” Li Chaofeng then looked at those students who do not come forward and said, “Even with the death awaits before you, you guys still choose to stay behind and not join them, even if this Li Chaofeng going to die, I would still be eternally grateful.” He turned to his good friend, and laughed, “Oh, and you Dale, please, go ahead. ”

The face of the student by the name of Dale, turned into ugly complexion.

Fatty laughed, “Do not delay any further; I do not have time to squander with you people here.”

“Chaofeng, do not blame me, I did not want to die.” Dale gritted his teeth, and lift up the sword.

The four other men also surrounded him.

The total of five men surrounded Li Chaofeng.

“I do not blame you, how could I blame you, you did this in order to survive.” Li Chaofeng shrugged, and then said, “If I must say,

these blind eyes of mine have only myself to blame.”

Dale’s face turned red, but now if you ride a tiger, it’s hard to get off, “Chaofeng, I am truly sorry.” He waved the sword, and slashes it towards Li Chaofeng. [\[1\]](#)

Others also launch their attacks. Between the five of them, Dale is the only one with a lower levels Spirit realms, the other four are all higher level cultivation, their strength are not much less than Li Chaofeng. In order to survives, five people joined hands to attack one man, the nature sure know no mercy.

“Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang!”

Five brittle snapping sounds, Li Chaofeng continuously resist the attacks of the five.

It goes without saying, since the overall strength are more or less the same, so to contend against each other, using the Qi while fighting is a way to gain the upper hand. Suddenly, his heart valves jolted, the Qi and the blood began to surge within, as his mouth open and spewing out some blood.

Dale, upon seeing this, takes one step forward, and sweeps his sword across.

“Snow Wolf technique!”

Li Chaofeng cried up, his hands holding the sword and formed a semicircle, not just to fend off Dale's sword blow, it was more like as if a demon thrusting through between Dale's eyebrows.

“Kill!”

The other four men hold their breath. They absolutely had no idea that Li Chaofeng is also capable to fight back like that. They immediately launched their attacks, to prevent Li Chaofeng from slaying Dale.

Four attacks were launched simultaneously, four swords flying across the air up and down.

“Flying Swallows!”

Li Chaofeng's body gently swaying, like a real swallow, he easily avoid those swords attacks as if he was just passing through the four swords, with extremely smooth slick movement, while retaining his calm, relaxed demeanor. [\[2\]](#)

“Wrath of The King Tiger!”

Landing on both of his feet, Li Chaofeng suddenly become the most powerful among them, like a fierce tiger on top of the mountain, both of his hands tightly grasp the double edged sword, ready to deliver one heavy blow towards his opponents.

Dale prompts his sword to pierce through the attack.

As a good friend of Li Chaofeng, naturally he would be much more familiar with Li Chaofeng's "Wrath of The King Tiger" as he is also bound to know its weaknesses. A single sword thrust will easily break Li Chaofeng's sword attacks.

"Chaofeng, please do not resist anymore, even though you make the Grandmaster Ye Chaofeng as your goal, to become an expert like him in terms of fighting skills, to the extend as to study the beasts, and created some beast-like fighting skills, but what a pity, after all, those fighting techniques are not able to be brought to its full potential due to your limited level, and furthermore, I also know how to break the attack." Dale said.

"Well, it's not neccesarily so!" Li Chaofeng holding his sword directly slanting towards the ground, as the Qi energy surge up gradually, "Then you should try to break this Black Dragon smile!"

His voice echoes, as if it were a giant roar of a fierce dragon, and using his double edged sword to deliver a killing blow towards Dale and the others.

"Not good, let's go all out!" Shouted Dale. Five men attacked at the same time, led by Dale.

"Boom!"

An explosion erupted.

Figures flying as all six of them screamed pitifully as they were falling all over three or four meters, on the ground.

“Gee, this Li Chaofeng really is not simple, to be able to create such fighting skills.” Xie Aoyu was surprised, as if it was like Dale have said, these fighting skills was created by Li Chaofeng. Xie Aoyu thought that Li Chaofeng was really impressive given as his age, to already have such a talent, I am afraid that this Li Chaofeng future achievements, he had the potential to become the second most powerful master in terms of fighting skills [\[3\]](#)

One against five, while it seems to be a draw, but the injuries suffered by Li Chaofeng is heavier.

The five people who received attacks from Li Chaofeng, apparently also suffered a lot from it, but still do not sustains any serious injuries. They all got up, and rush forward once again, and surround Li Chaofeng.

By clinging to his sword, Li Chaofeng slowly stood up, he gritted his teeth, trying his very best to calm his temper. Even if he is in front of the gate of death, he still silently wish that he would be able to launch his final counterattack, especially towards Dale, as he would at least be given the opportunity to pull the latter back with him, to the netherworld.

“Let’s begin.” Dale said.

The five men were lifting their swords and strikes without any pause towards Li Chaofeng.

Xie Aoyu watches as his heart whispered, oh well, time for me to go out for some action!

[1] (T/N: Idiom-If you ride a tiger, it's hard to get off : impossible to stop halfway)

[2] (T/N: Swallow is a small bird species)

[3] (T / N: the first was Ye Chaofeng).

Chapter 77: Xie Aoyu's Shot

The first impression Xie Aoyu had towards Li Chaofeng was not as good as any, but now it has changed, plus Xie Aoyu is the kind of man who knows how to appreciate a talent, and the talent that has shown in fighting skills by Li Chaofeng was enough.

He is naturally not going to let someone to lose their life for no reason.

Five people who launch attacks from various angles. So obviously, it would be very difficult to block each attack, since it from all angles, so no one can assure Li Chaofeng's safety.

Xie Aoyu did not take that in mind at all.

He only glanced, and casually throwing a stone.

“Sou!”

The stone vanished into thin air.

“Clang!”

The stone hit Dale's sword at first, due to the impact, Dale's sword was pushed towards the left side, making it fend off the other men sword. The stone does not stop there, using the power impact of Dale's sword, it rotates in the direction towards the next

three swords, as the sounds “clang, clang, clang” resounds consecutively three times, indicating it had hit the other three swords.

Xie Aoyu turns his wrist over, as another stone flew out.

“Bang Bang Bang”

As the stone began with Dale, in an instant, it managed to hit the five men in a row on their forehead.

All five of them suddenly had a large lump on their forehead.

“Who, who did it.”

“Get out!” Dale and the others seem not understand and do not know who has done the deeds.

The fat man, who was sitting above the Earth Storm Bear while enjoying the show before him, was also surprised then turns around, trying to find out who the culprit is.

“Sou!”

However his body is rather flexible, as he felt a cold wind, a glimpsed of a stone that flew toward him, and so he bent over his body in a hurry. The stone flew over his head.

Fatty's face look dark as he anxiously shouted, "Who, who would dare to"

"BAM!"

He was just about to open his mouth to curse, as he suddenly felt the cold wind once again, but this time he did not have time to dodge, because the stone suddenly defying the physics as it turned back and headed towards him with speed.

It hit at the center back of the fat man's head. The stone contains Qi, so although the stone does not contain a lot of Qi, but it is enough to make the fat man who had been hit for nearly fainted, as his face contorted, withstands the pain.

"Roar!"

Others was unable to find Xie Aoyu whereabouts, but that Earth Storm Bear managed to spotted him, as it let out a fierce roar. It opens its large mouth towards Xie Aoyu, revealed its sharp teeth.

Fatty furiously shouted: "Damn, I want you to die!"

His bandits who had surrounded the students, when they heard the instructions of their leader, five or six among them grabbed their weapons and rushed forward to kill.

"Sou Sou, sou, sou"

Xie Aoyu repeatedly turns his wrist over, as pieces of stone flies out.

“Bang bang

In the blink of an eye, six people fell to the ground. All of them have been hit between their eyebrows, under perfect control by Xie Aoyu, it smashes their skulls, and so as the result, four of them were killed.

And these six stones did not stop just yet. Using the impact forces, each of it revolve, and flies around hitting its victims.

“Bang bang

In just a short period of time, all the rocks sweeping around the air everywhere, and as the Whomp seems unceasingly, the bandits can do nothing but to let out the sound of wailing.

“It is now or never!” Xie Aoyu voice echoes.

Students who previously were not behind Li Chaofeng because of they have already given up all hope. And now when such of opportunity unexpectedly appeared, they took no time to shouts their lungs out, and rushed out to join the battle.

Even Bing Wu could not afford to remain idle.

With the assistance provided by Xie Aoyu through his stones, the efficiency shown by these students are truly astonishing.

“Zass, ... Zass Zass ...”

In the blink of an eye, more than 10 bandits were wounded or killed. With all the fighting skills taught by the Butterfly Queen to Bing Wu, like a real butterfly, flying up and down, she managed to single handedly killed six bandits.

Such a swift change, the fat man was taken by surprise.

Without waiting for him to react, Xie Aoyu rose up a sharp sword with his feet and grasps it, shook his hand and throws it out.

The sword arched across the air, cut off the rope that binds a student.

This student is one of the strongest among the freshman, as good as Li Chaofeng, and therefore Xie Aoyu act to save him first, who after being freed, immediately moves to rescue the other students.

Suddenly, the scene becomes chaotic.

“Kill them for me!” Fatty gave his instructions to Earth Storm Bear.

“ROARRR !!!! ”

The Earth Storm Bear suddenly stood up, along with the fat man on top of it, it leaps, jumps onto the top of a huge tree.

Originally, the main reason why Li Chaofeng surrendered at first was because the Earth Storm Bear. After all, previously, they all had to join forces before they successfully killed the Earth Storm Bear. Now coupled with so many people under the fat man, it is indeed against the odds.

This time, the ferocious Earth Storm Bear seems so furious, as everyone began to feel the intensity of the pressure, one by one also began to halt their movement, and looked towards Xie Aoyu, because they do not know how he is going to deal with this kind of dangerous situation.

“Thump, thump, thump

The Earth Storm Bear hitting it own chest.

This is one of the biggest characteristics of the Earth Storm Bear.

“Shut up!” Xie Aoyu, which seems to be enjoying the fun of playing with the stones, snapped, shook his hands, and throw his Holy Spirit Sword.

The Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword skill!

Followed with is a touch of cold flashes that looked like lightning.

Everyone, subconsciously close their eyes.

“Roar ...”

After a moment, they have found that the sound of the roar of the Earth Storm Bear has already ceased, as they were about to open their eyes, they saw a touch of cold light circled around the Earth Storm Bear’s neck, before turning back to Xie Aoyu’s hands.

The Earth Storm Bear collapsed.

Its head also rolled out.

“Ah!”

Everyone was dumbfounded.

Xie Aoyu single handedly killed the Earth Storm Bear.

They were also surprised when suddenly there was a glimpse of a white shadow. It is Xiao Bai who appeared on the side of the Earth Storm Bear, and move the body of the Earth Storm Bear into its interspatial ring, then it returned to its place at full speed, continue to study the new law of roasting.

All of this happened in the blink of an eye.

The situation became calm again.

“I’m going to kill you!” Fatty’s eyes become red, he growled like crazy, drew a long single-edged sword, from above, he ran directly to Xie Aoyu who are under the tree. He holds the sword with both his hands, looked so vicious, as he is determined to split the former’s body into a half.

Xie Aoyu just smiled indifferently, as he turns his wrist over; the Holy Spirit Sword also flew out with the intention to kill.

The close combat technique of the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword skill!

The sword that was originally only amounted to one only, split into three lights that resembles a sword.

The light swords rattling, as every each of it moves like a snake scurrying about.

“Sou!”

The first light sword flew, attacked the middle side of the fat guy, while the second and the third sword lights, attacked on the left and the right side of his body. As these swords of lights lacerated

the empty void of the cold wind, the fat man shrieked in fear, forcing him to falling from a great height.

Two lights streaks flies across the top of his head.

Blood spatter, from two deep cuts on the head of the fat man.

Xie Aoyu step forward, as he is going to raise the power of the sword.

Fighting skills..... Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop!

In his body, the tri-color spheres fiercely trembles, as the red electric light began arising, countless of red lightning burst out through Xie Aoyu, along the wind blowing through Xie Aoyu's disheveled hair, his whole body emits the red colored electric light continuously. His current majestic appearance looks like a God who descended into the world.

That scene, left a very deep impression in the hearts of everyone who was there .

They all looked at Xie Aoyu in the new heights of terror.

Especially Li Chaofeng who could only smile bitterly, as he remembered his arrogance for thinking that Xie Aoyu was scared to fight with him, he felt that he was much more powerful than others, but actually the former just not really interested in having a bout with him.

“Warghh !!! ”

The fat man frantically brandished a sword and tries to resist, he did not want to die.

“Click!”

How could an ordinary sword, able to withstand the onslaught of the Holy Spirit Sword? In an instant, his sword was cut off with just a single blow.

The Holy Spirit Sword does not return, instead it stops at the fat man’s head. Xie Aoyu kicks the fat man on his stomach, and then proceeds with kicking his whole body again until the latter fell to the ground.

Xie Aoyu coldly said: “Tie him up!”

Two students with well built body rushed forward, press and hold the fat man.

The fat man strength originally was pretty good, but the location being kicked by Xie Aoyu was the location of his dantian, which has caused his dantian to be broken. In other words, he is crippled [\[1\]](#)

The current him right now is nothing but a mortal, a human

being.

He was then tied up by those two students earlier.

He is not going to kill the fat man, because Xie Aoyu want to identify the mysterious forces behind the scene, since they want to capture the loves ones of those supreme masters, so obviously it would included Ziyan. If he recklessly let himself fall into their hands, they can use him to threaten Ziyan.

This makes Xie Aoyu to feel very uncomfortable.

“Dale, what are you doing, let Li Chaofeng go!” At this moment, someone shouted.

Xie Aoyu turned back, but then he saw that Dale has made Li Chaofeng injured and unable to give up a fight as his hostage, along with four others, who covered his back from any possible attacks from the other students.

“Let us go, and I’ll let Li Chaofeng.” Dale and the others took one look at Xie Aoyu, as they feel nothing but the chill on their back. But he knows, because of what they have done before, if they do not make Li Chaofeng as their hostage, they would be long dead.

Xie Aoyu lightly said: “Let him go, I will let you go.”

Dale sneered: “Do not try to negotiate with me.” He with his hostage, Li Chaofeng, began to back away slowly, “Do not come,

otherwise, I'll kill him.”

“Alright then, if you want to die so much, then I will help you.”
Xie Aoyu shook his hands again and throw the Holy Spirit Sword.

The sword flew out of his hand, as it rushed like a wind that blows.

Brush!

As the sound of the Holy Spirit Sword burst, there is a touch of blood on Dale's throat, as he fell down, followed by the blood flowing out from his throat.

Xie Aoyu then launched his punches.

Overlord Dragon Fist!

A huge fist appears, it hit the other two people, as their weapons broken, two of them being thrown away, the bones inside their bodies are fully broken.

The Holy Spirit Sword also returned to Xie Aoyu's hand, as he caught it in the hand, the sword is divided into three again.

Three swords of lights flies across. The other two out of five, barely raised their weapons, tremble in fear until they spurt out some blood. Xie Aoyu then step forward, with a gentle strike of the

Holy Spirit Sword, he cuts their throats.

Five people were killed.

Li Chaofeng looked at the Dale's dead corpse. He let out a loud sigh, shaking his head, after all, they used to be close friends. He turned towards Xie Aoyu, "You saved my life twice, I, Li Chaofeng will keep it in mind."

"Alright, as long as you do not disturb Bing Wu, that would be enough." Xie Aoyu waves his hand.

Li Chaofeng shown an embarrassed smile, as if he seems to be hiding something, but then he looked at Bing Wu and shift his eyes at Xie Aoyu, finally whispered: "Actually, the reason why I try to be with Bing Wu, was to have the Butterfly Queen guidance in terms of fighting skills. "

Xie Aoyu looked at him startled, but since Li Chaofeng makes the all generation Grandmaster of fighting skills, the supreme expert Ye Chaofeng as his goal, it's really does seems possible, "Your Li clan can also be considered as a large family, don't tell me that you have no one else who can help you? "

"No, precisely because of my father, he is a rainbow-level master, but he was not able to teach me, even his fighting skills, taught by me." Li Chaofeng said.

Xie Aoyu's eyes nearly bulged out. Heavens, this guy is a super

genius!

[\[1\]](#) (t/n: a waste? A thrash? Which better fit the sentence?).

Chapter 78: Black Lotus's Order

When he saw Xie Aoyu who looked surprised, Li Chaofeng said with a smile: “Although the Li clan is a large family, but it lacks of top tier fighting skills. As a matter of fact, the level of all types of fighting skills that my father used was not high, and that was also one of my main reason as why I was so determined to become like the Grandmaster of all generation in fighting skills, Ye Chaofeng, since I was small. “

Having said so, Li Chaofeng's father, after all, is the upper-level Rainbow realms, and being in such of level require him to have quite a few fighting skills to cultivate, and the talent that Li Chaofeng have in the field of fighting skills, is very extraordinary indeed.

Xie Aoyu laughed: “Later, if I have the chance, I will send you some top-tier fighting skills.” And then his tone turned serious: “To cut it short, this is to not let you to resort to chase a woman again just for some reason like to ask for a simple guidance.”

Li Chaofeng's face turned red.

Bing Wu is also somehow a little awkward, but she never put Li Chaofeng in her eyes after all, so this is not something that concerned her too much, as she whispered: “Aoyu, what do we do now?”

“Let's get this over with. I'm going to question that fatty.” Xie Aoyu replied.

“I will go as well.” Li Chaofeng said.

Xie Aoyu paused for a moment before nodded slightly.

They both went to interrogate the fat man.

Bing Wu is like a big sister, and casually give instructions to the other students to dispose of several student bodies such as Dale, at the same time help to treat and bandage-wrapping for the rest of the injured students.

The fat man was struck dumbfounded.

He was full of hope in regards of his future. He imagined if he managed to catch Bing Wu, and then use her to threaten the Butterfly Queen. This is how he would be able to conduct all the credit for himself. This is what has been dreamed by the fat man, and how the scenes were supposed to be, but for some reason, he ended up as a prisoner.

“The reason of why did you still let me live, is to get something from my mouth?” The fat man upon seeing Xie Aoyu, took the initiative to asked.

“You of all people should know your place.” Xie Aoyu said.

“But I am a dead man after all, and I certainly will never tell you

anything.” The fat man sneered.

“With death knocks at your door, you still have the guts to not confess for your wrongdoings.” Li Chaofeng flew a leg kick towards the fat guy.

The fat man, contrary to what one might expect, was quite unyielding, he was not even utter a sound.

When Li Chaofeng sees that, it was even added fuels to his anger.

“Let me handle this guy.” Xie Aoyu laughed, and then he squats next to the fat guy, smiled and said, “You have already captured those who were close to all those experts, apparently your motive is to coerce them into doing whatever you want them to do, but there is always a chance of things not going your way. Therefore, I believe that whoever behind your organization must have quite strict requirements for you to comply with, in order to avoid a mutiny, you cannot tell anything , otherwise you would suffers some miserable consequence that would make you wish you better off dead, am I right? ”

“You, how do you know that?” The fat guy seems quite surprised.

Xie Aoyu shrugged, “I also know that you must have seen someone being tortured in the process.”

This time, the fat guy was completely shocked.

“Take it easy, as a matter of fact; most of the forces train their people by using this method.” Xie Aoyu has read this information from a few books, and he also had heard these things mentioned by Xie Qian in the past.

“Now that you know, just give me a good time.” The fat man spoke.

Xie Aoyu casually said: “If you do not want to die in a bad way, I’ll give you two options, the first option, I hand you over to whoever person behind you, and I will spread the word that you told me their plans to kidnap each people who are close to all those experts, not even sparing the Emperor’s son; the second option, you will tell me everything that you know, and I’ll give you a good time.”

Originally, the fat guy had closed his eyes and prepared to die, but as soon as he heard the words that came out from the guy right next to him, he jumped directly from the ground, trying hard to get up, “You”

“Mean to say I am evil?” Xie Aoyu cut his words.

The fat man stared at Xie Aoyu. After for quite a long time, he sat down on the ground. He knew, once the plan to kidnap the experts loved ones known, and the one who revealed the information was him indeed, so as for what kind of consequences that he would receive, he is clearly aware, because it would be nothing but terrible.

“Well, that sort of die in a good way now seems possible.” Xie Aoyu said.

“You are so ruthless!” The fat man then bowed his head helplessly, “Alright, ask me anything you want.”

Xie Aoyu: “All that you know, including things that involved you, I need you to tell me all of it. Do not miss anything; do not lie, because I’m quite talented in terms of investigating and verifying the truth of a matter.”

Fatty looked at those arrested men, looking completely listless.

Soon enough, he began to open his mouth and spilled everything that he knew.

It turns out that the fat guy came from a bandit group called the Black Wind. Belongs to such a small bandit group located in Hengduan mountain range, originally they all joined together just to make ends meet, and wait for the death to come pick them up. But half a year ago, someone found them, and asked them to join a mysterious organization, and obey their orders, but the leader of the Black Wind, Tuck did not agree with them. As the results, the mysterious person starts using his powerful force to have them suppressed, and the Black Wind group had no choice but to cowered and lowered their heads.

But after the mysterious man left, there was no news and developments thereafter. Not until a month ago, as the mysterious man suddenly appeared again, asked their cooperation with one

thing, that is to capture the Luo Empire Royal Prince alive. It goes without saying that it seems impossible to go against such powerful forces, but then the mysterious man said further, they do not have to worry about the experts who protect the prince in secret because they have the means to deal with them. And next thing you know, the Prince was caught.

“You really have no idea which organization he was from?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“I do not know.” The fat man replied, “He just told us, that we must recognize this certain token, because soon, there would be someone who will come and show us the same token, which is equivalent as seeing him in person.”

Xie Aoyu: “Token.”

The fat man answered: “The token is a Black Lotus, as it has a complicated pattern on it. That mysterious person also did not tell the name of the token, so we personally, called it the Black Lotus. ”

Token, and coincidentally I found a token from Luo Kun as well. Xie Aoyu suddenly thought of something, as he took out a token, “Is this the said token?”

“You, how did you have this token?” The fat guy exclaimed.

There is no doubt, that Luo Kun was from the same mysterious organization. Xie Aoyu’s face darkened, a moment later, he puts his

token away, and said, “You do not need to know where I got this thing, just answer my questions. ”

Because of the token, the fat guy no longer have any intention to lie, since there is an actual possibility that Xie Aoyu also know the truth, and so if he lie and exposed, then the consequences would certainly hard to imagine.

“Can you explain the process of how you managed to catch the Royal Highness Prince again?” Xie Aoyu asked.

“I did not join them; I was in charge of guarding the mountain stronghold.” The fat man continue, “I just heard from Tucks who said, when they were about to start, there was a battle between supreme experts 200 meters ahead, it was so fierce, and they knew that ought to be the deadly battle between the Lord of the Black Lotus and the expert who secretly protect the Prince in the shadow. “

Xie Aoyu: “So, the Prince is in your mountain stronghold, and so is the owner of the Black Lotus too, right?”

The fat guy shook his head and said: “Actually the owner is not with us, after all it is the Prince of the Tian Luo Empire, all the experts who had been assigned to protect him in secret, seems to be Heavenly King-realm masters, and there was quite a number too. So the Black Lotus has instructed us, to seize the Prince later. So, after we managed to capture all of the students who ventured along with the Prince, we hide away, and then waiting for the further command. But up to now, four or five days have passed, but still no news of the Black Lotus, and Tucks even suspected that

he was killed by those who have been protecting the prince from the shadows. “

Listened to the words uttered by the fat guy, Xie Aoyu could not help but to slightly pondering and his face became increasingly cloudy.

It is clear that even if the so-called powerful Black Lotus organization is indeed strong, they still has not yet reached to the point that would qualify them to have an open confrontation with the whole Empire, and apparently the masters who are protecting the Prince in the dark seems like a bad news to them, so to ensure their success, this is where they need the bandit group, Black Wind to pulls in.

If everything goes well, then they will succeed in their mission to kidnap the Prince; but if things do not go well, they can go try to lead the secret guards away, and then the bandit group, the Black Wind will have the chance to seize the Prince. If it is the bandit group, the Black Wind, even if the Tian Luo Empire thoroughly investigates, it was something that would never occurred in their thinking, that the culprit who has kidnapped the prince would be some small petty bandit group called the Black Wind , so in another way, it is also a method to have the prince to stay hidden.

Xie Aoyu then knocked the fat guy out and said, “What do you think, should we have a visit to this so called Black Wind bandit group?”

“All of this is up to you.” Li Chaofeng said.

“Don’t be so reserved; clearly, there was no grudge between you and I. The way I see it, from your performance earlier, it has been proven that you actually have a backbone, so if you do not mind me, a person with no status, we can be friends.” Xie Aoyu laughed.

Li Chaofeng seems greatly rejoicing as well and said: “Of course I am more than happy to have a friend like you, how could you say that.”

“Since we have become friends, we should not keep anything in mind, so if you have any idea, just say it.” Xie Aoyu is absolutely sincere in wanting to be friends with Li Chaofeng, because he greatly admired someone with unyielding character like that.

“I think his words, we cannot fully believe, but cannot stop believing either. If that owner of the Black Lotus is not with the Black Wind bandit group, we will have an opportunity to rescue the Prince, so I think we should head first to the Black Wind bandit’s nest.” Li Chaofeng expressed his train of thoughts.

Xie Aoyu nodded: “My thought is exactly the same.”

Chapter 79: Robbery

The Black Wind bandit group's mountain stronghold is located on a hill known as the Black Wind Hill, on the south side of this hill, there is a cliff that quite steep, together with the east and the west of the two adjacent mountains, it can be said that the terrain is very strategically located.

The distance separating Xie Aoyu and his company from the Black Wind Hill is approximately more than 300 meters.

“Xie Aoyu, let me be the one to go and explore it, I am a wind attribute after all, and in that aspect, my agility is quite good relatively, and my master also has imparted me a set of her fighting skills.” Bing Wu said.

Xie Aoyu frowned, because in his opinion, of course as mentioned by Bing Wu, her body agility is a top notch, but as for her power, there is no actual guarantee for that, and if she was discovered, it would be hard for her to escape, and so the best candidates would be him, with his Earth-Escaping technique, even a powerful expert, will not be able to find him.

“I will go.” When Li Chaofeng sees Xie Aoyu frowning, he spoke.

“Would you be able to do it?” Xie Aoyu asked and smiled.

“There should be no problem.” Li Chaofeng answered with confidence.

When he flashed back then, how Li Chaofeng faced with the attacks of five people, including Dale, which the former uses a combination of the “Swallows” technique and his fighting skills, Xie Aoyu nodded in agreement and said, “But remember, no matter what, safety is your top priority. “

Li Chaofeng promised, and so he headed to the direction of the Black Wind Hill.

After he is gone, Xie Aoyu called Xiao Bai.

“You’re not going to let Xiao Bai go, are you?” Bing Wu looked towards Xie Aoyu, suspiciously.

“Ah, correct.” Xie Aoyu laughed, “Xiao Bai’s identity, do you think it would be possible for someone to become suspicious of it, it can be said, that this Xiao Bai can be so cunning, and if it wants to, not to mention that spirit-realm Tuck guy, even an expert in Teng realm, would find it difficult to discover Xiao Bai. “

“Yiya, Yiya” Xiao Bai said, and then it also ran to the Black Wind Hill.

Seeing the glimpse of Xiao Bai has disappeared into the grass, without any sign, Bing Wu who previously did not pay much attention to the presence of this little thing in their mission, but all of a sudden, her curiosity gets boiled.

Xie Aoyu and others remained there, waiting for news.

Xie Aoyu did not bring all students; instead he just picked some of them with good aptitude, and together with Bing Wu, and Li Chaofeng.

The time passed in the waiting.

After about an hour, Li Chaofeng figure emerged from a distance. Xiao Bai seems to be sitting on top of his head, while chewing a fire rabbit's hind legs, savoring that greasy-looking fat, which able to arouse one's appetite.

“Could not find anything, I presume?” Xie Aoyu asked.

Li Chaofeng said with a smile on his face: “Nope, I can only see a little bit on the inside, and still did not find anything special, and then I overheard Tuck who was talking to his men, said that Black Lotus's person seems to be out of the reach, so he worried, fear that sooner or later it will be known that the Prince was hidden in this place.”

“Yiya, Yiya.” Xiao Bai spoke.

“I suspect that you just went there in order to steal some foods.” Xie Aoyu pinched Xiao Bai's ears, “Based on the information obtained from that fatty, we should be able to rescue the Emperor's son in this Black Wind Hill, so have you found where the Prince was held to yet?”

Li Chaofeng nodded.

Xie Aoyu said: “In that case, apparently everything went accordingly to what we had planned before.”

“Aoyu, would you really be fine with just yourself ...” Bing Wu expressed her concern.

“Do not worry; my body possessed some cheat-skills.” Xie Aoyu whispered as he caressed Bing Wu’s face that has turned red, and then strode across towards the Black Wind Hill.

Others have Li Chaofeng leading the way, by using the short-cut route, into the Black Wind Hill.

Due to the investigation that he had conducted earlier, Li Chaofeng already figured out the Black Wind Hill terrain, after all, the Black Wind bandit group is simply a group of bandits who had just formed and still small, so the Black Wind’s area in this mountain range is anything but big.

Xie Aoyu walked slowly, to ensure that Li Chaofeng and the others have enough time.

As he walked, he collected the stones along the way.

He is now interested in stone and, combines with the Indefinite

Flying Spinning Sword technique; these stones can be quite powerful and useful, especially when it comes to group-battle.

Finally, after taking more than 20 minutes, he has entered the inside of the Black Wind Hill.

“Who is it, stop on where you are and get out of here; otherwise we would shoot arrows against you!” There are glimpses of shadows lurking in some secret place and one of them shouted fiercely, to prevent Xie Aoyu from further advancing forward.

Without the need to think or respond any longer, Xie Aoyu shook his hand and send out a stone, flying.

“BAM!”

One of the people, who previously were in hiding, fell down.

This immediately brought to the attention of the other small fry; they draw their bow, ready to shoot arrows.

“Swish, swish, swish”

Xie Aoyu march forward, as all the stones were sent flying. Along with sounds of wailing that could be heard clearly, on both sides of the underbrush, behind a boulder, on top of dense trees, a man fell down on the ground. He probably fainted dead away, either way, the groan of anguish continues.

Xie Aoyu move forward leisurely.

Every 20 meters ahead, there will always be bandits of the Black Wind obstructing the way.

This tight level of security implemented after they captured the Prince, Tucks who his feeling recently has been mixed with anger, and fear, has taken this step as an extra precaution, but apparently Xie Aoyu's stones appeared to be more deadly.

He continued to strikes all the way up.

He considers this as a way to polish the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword more.

Before he arrived at their mountain stronghold, there are already a large group of Black Wind bandits gathered ahead, lifted their swords and spears, to prevent Xie Aoyu from continue to move forward.

“Kills!” Led by a bearded man, who raised his iron spear.

Xie Aoyu then stand firm, girding up his loins, he shouted loudly: “This is a robbery!”

“Cough

The beardy guy nearly choked to death.

The eyes of all the bandits who were there bulged wide, as if they saw Xie Aoyu as an idiot.

“Boy, you are courting death! ” The beard guy spoke.

Based on what he has learned from fatty, the image of the leader of the Black Wind bandit group, Xie Aoyu was able to conclude that the man before him was Tucks, the bandit’s leader.

“I who is the most formidable and the most handsome man, the pillar of the Empire in this whole continent, the most promising one of the younger generation, you dare to say that I courted death , I think you might have a brain disease. ” Xie Aoyu applied delaying tactics, to secure time for Li Chaofeng , Bing Wu , and others as much as possible .

“Die!” Tucks who recently haunted by fear and feeling on the edge, finally losing his patience and wanted to vent his rage against Xie Aoyu. He lifted his spear and rushed out.

As he gets closer, Xie Aoyu turns his wrist.

“Halt!”

When Tucks who was prodding his spear, sees what before him, he immediately stopped. It was precisely because that object is the Black Lotus’s token.

“Are you?” Tucks said with suspicious tone.

“What, did you not recognize...This token?” Xie Aoyu said coldly. As a matter of fact, he was also intended to use the token, to fake his identity, but the fat guy previously mentioned, when that Black Lotus’s person came at a certain time, he dealt with this Tucks guy alone, so they both should have some codes to verify the identity of each other or something like that. No one knows, so he can only choose this token as a tool to stall for time.

Tucks hurriedly said respectfully: “Greeting the great sage messenger.”

And sure enough that there is still a lot of things that fat guy does not know, this Xie Aoyu so called good insurance, that fatty never told him about the name of this sage messenger before, so the clueless Xie Aoyu can only let out an “En”, and said “I was really disappointed in your performance.”

“I, I, seek for the great sage messenger’s wisdom.” Tucks said.

“Well then, let’s go.” Xie Aoyu replied indifferently.

Tucks responded with his loud voice, and with a wave of his hand, the gateway routes into this stronghold of bandits open automatically.

Xie Aoyu took a couple of steps, and went inside.

“O great sage messenger, about the token.....” Tucks whispered.

Xie Aoyu coldly said: “Talk about it later!”

With a head full of question marks, Tucks follow Xie Aoyu into the mountain stronghold.

Upon entering the main hall of the mountain stronghold, Xie Aoyu sit on the tiger-leather chair located at the middle, looking so unrestrained and majestic.

Tucks have already instructed all the people who are there to leave. Now, there are only two of them in the main hall.

“Great sage messenger, can I see the token?” Tucks started to open his mouth again.

Xie Aoyu took out the token and throws it towards Tucks, while he remained cautious.

After receiving the token, Tucks examine it seriously, and then he knelt down with one knee, as he respectfully said: “This Black Lotus’s sacred church’s junior-disciple, Tucks, paying his respect to senior, the messenger of God.”

The Black Lotus’s sacred church?

As it turns out, this mysterious organization called the Black Lotus is a sacred church. Xie Aoyu cannot help but secretly mumbled in his heart, as why did he call me the messenger of God? Does this indicate that I as this token holder have a higher position than the man who had come here before?

Tucks stand up, but his expression turned cold as he said, “Who the hell are you?!”

When Xie Aoyu heard that, he knew that there was something wrong somewhere, but he could not see where the problem is, “Such insolence, is this how you talk to your messenger of God?”

“You’re not the real messenger of God!” Tucks pointing his finger towards Xie Aoyu, and shouted furiously.

“How would you know that I am not the real messenger of God?” Xie Aoyu controls the tone of his voice.

Tucks sneered: “If you really are the Black Lotus’s messenger of God, seeing my face, why don’t you show me the black lotus’s seal, instead of just came up with the token to confirm your identity.”

[\[1\]](#)

Xie Aoyu rubbed his nose. Bing Wu, Li Chaofeng and others, they should have discovered the Prince by now. Xie Aoyu then let out a hollow laugh and said: “You are quite wise; however, I was just about to makes you understand my status clearly. Actually, you and I have something in common.....that is to take something by force!

[1] (T/N: the sentence above got me pretty confused because the author used 印记 (seal/mark/stamp), and then he used 令牌(token) which synonym with the word mark but I think it was because Xie Aoyu only showed to him a medal plate(the token) after he knelt down, while what he needs is actually a stamp/a seal)

Chapter 80: Showdown Of Might

Tucks does not seem angry, only his eyes gazed toward Xie Aoyu densely cold. He took out the iron spear once again, and a freezing cold air emitted from the tip of that sharp pointed spear, make one to feel chilled to the bone.

“You are here to rescue the Emperor’s son, right?” Tucks already know the answer as one word says it all, regarding Xie Aoyu’s true purpose.

Xie Aoyu leaned his body casually on the tiger leather chair, as he raised his legs, and smiled: “Could it be that I am such a magnanimous and noble person?” He did not even try to deny that. “I remember you called me earlier as the messenger of the great sage, why the sudden change to messenger of God? Doesn’t this mean that this token carry more significant weight?”

“I can tell you, but you must first tell me, how you got the token.” Tucks replied.

This guy has a long sturdy, very rustic looking appearance, but in reality, someone who is quite cunning. Naturally, it would be impossible for Xie Aoyu to tell that this is the guy who is coming from the same place as Luo Kun. But one thing for sure, Luo Kun’s identity and status in the Black Lotus church, is extraordinary.

“It is not good; the emperor’s son has been taken away!”

“Leader, the current situation is not good!”

“The Prince has fled!”

At this moment, suddenly, the situation became chaotic outside.

Tucks’s face complexion took huge changes, and then, without wasting time, he rushed out.

“Sou!”

Xie Aoyu shook his hand to throw a stone.

Tucks who was moving out swiftly did not look back, instead he defended himself by turn over his spear to pierce the attack.

“Pow!”

That stone shattered into small pieces, even though the rotation force of the attack does not have any physical effect, however, it managed to makes Tucks to halt his footsteps, as he felt the intensity of Qi from the stone earlier.

Aware of Xie Aoyu’s real objective, Tucks was no longer being talkative, as he turn over his wrist, the iron spear shot into the sky, flying up and down, spinning toward Xie Aoyu.

Upper-level Spirit realm!

As if in the mid air seemed to be filled with the rain of the tip of thousand spears, which later formed into one point.

“Clang!”

He took his Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword out of its sheath.

Xie Aoyu has already strolled across the mountains, had fought with upper-level Spirit realm demonic beast throughout his journey, but not with humans. Demonic beast is after all, different from human, so he cannot afford to be reckless this time around.

[\[1\]](#)

As the sword out from its sheath, it soars high to cut the attack.

“Clangg!”

The sword clashed against the tip of the iron spear, these two forces instantly broke out, shook both of them at the same time. Xie Aoyu is being pushed to butt sitting on the tiger leather chair, while Tucks also took a few steps backward.

As his back landed at the tiger leather chair, Xie Aoyu immediately bounced himself up.

Scarlet electric lights filled the room; this is Xie Aoyu's top fighting skills Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop!

Together with scarlet red shadows streaks across the sky and reached the distance of five meters, in the blink of the eye.

“Chii!”

Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword is almost reaching its pinnacle, and even causes the air to shake. The sword looks increasingly fuzzy, along with Tucks’s vision that also has been totally fuzzy as well, as he could not see the sword and only capable of vaguely seeing scarlet lightning streaks heading towards his direction.

With his few months of experience, Xie Aoyu’s level of comprehension of various fighting skills, as well as his level of perception has reached a rapid growth of improvement. This Scarlet Lightning Exploding Chop is precisely based on his completely new insights.

Not only it is overwhelming, furthermore it is also an evident of a technique that is being skillfully executed.

Tucks who previously looked calm, stepped back suddenly, as he chose to avoid.

To allow him to retreat, there is no way Xie Aoyu would want to miss such a golden opportunity.

Earth-Escaping Technique!

13 meters away.

As he had already reached at the middle-level spirit, the distance once again increased.

From 13 meters, now the distance between him and Tucks reduce to only one meter. When Tucks sensed this kind of sudden change, he almost cries out in fear. Fortunately, he is also an experienced person, as he suppressed his fear, but shocked that his heart beat faster instead.

As he emerged from the ground, Xie Aoyu's sword strikes once again.

If I cannot do it, who can?

He had already perceived enlightenment for the Overlord Dragon Fist fighting skill, though it is only at the first stage.

To connect the fist into the law of the sword!

As the sword strikes forth, along with a sudden trace of lights shot out.

“ROAR!”

The roar of a giant dragon shook the hall, as tables and chairs around were violently shaking. To compare the difference of

power between the middle-level Spirit and the lower – level Spirit, it's like heaven and earth.

The bright image of the Overlord Dragon looks more condensed.

Tucks also become more aware of this life and death situation, as Xie Aoyu emerged in an instant, thus he draw back at a great speed, about one-meter distance, since his iron spear are too long, so much that makes it even impossible to carry out a launch of the next attack.

“BAM!

Then, the condensed light shot, right in the middle of the iron spear.

Tucks screamed in pain, as he flew out directly from the hall and fell more than 10 yards on the ground outside. As soon as his body land on the ground, he immediately bounced back to his feet, however, his mind was already ingrained in Xie Aoyu's unfathomable martial arts skills.

As he just barely managed to stand up, Xie Aoyu emerged from the ground once again.

“Sou!”

Tucks has a sudden urge to curse someone mother!

In desperation, he retreated once again, because he does not want to give Xie Aoyu any opportunity and room to kill him. So he took his steps backwards, as he moves his iron spear back and forth, to resist Xie Aoyu's pursuit and attacks.

The melee of the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword!

Xie Aoyu let out a sneer, brandished his sword to cut through.

As the sword emits light in the air, three electric light beams emerged from the Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword fiercely.

“Dang Dang”

2 of the lights sword clashing with the iron spear to withstand the attack, while the third light saber cut through all the way as it strikes Tucks. This mysterious sword skill, make Tucks to feel shocked and frightened all over again.

“Poof!”

Tucks did not even have the time to dodge the sword from striking his left arm, and as the result, his whole arm was almost being cut off, leaving a long deep wound. He retreated and retreated again, as the current him seems so horrified to see Xie Aoyu, “Who is this guy, how can he have such a fearsome fighting skills, it's incredible, it is totally beyond my imagination.”

Due to these successive executed moves, who managed to make Tucks to suffered serious injuries, has made Xie Aoyu's confidence boosted.

After all, he never battle with an upper-level Spirit master before, although he has experience fighting with the upper-level Spirit realm demonic beast, but still, there is a big difference between the two, as their nature were completely different.

But today, he was able to understand to some extent.

While there are some gaps between him and his opponent, as well as the difference amount of Qi , but the fighting skills that he possesses is one of the best way to make up for the lacking, as for every each of the fighting skills that he has mastered would be able to give him the foundation that he needed to support him in the battle. Therefore, in the future when Xie Aoyu fights against an upper-level Spirit realm, not only he would not even be constrained, the battle will favor on him instead.

After all, with the Earth-Escaping technique, being so odd and unpredictable, it is not an exaggeration if it is called as one of the most mysterious fighting skills; along with the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword, Overlord Dragon Fist, all of this could shake the entire continent, regardless of whether past or present, everyone would be fighting like crazy just to get their hands on all of these techniques, because each of these fighting skills is so amazing, even the worst in the list, the Scarlet Exploding Lightning Chop technique, due to the scarlet lightning exist within the tri-colored sphere, the might of the skill increases.

All of this has made Xie Aoyu to become emboldened enough to challenge people who are stronger than him.

“Ta ta ta

Xie Aoyu getting closer to Tucks steps by step.

Tucks is increasingly step back, as he already knew Xie Aoyu's mysterious and inscrutable fighting skills, so he could not help but to feels daunted. He grasped firmly on to the iron spear, with sweat running down his forehead.

Earth-Escaping technique!

Xie Aoyu move seven steps forward, as he once again uses this earth shaking technique.

A five meters distance.

And then he popped out, impressively to the left of Tucks, as he swung the Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword to decapitate Tucks, along with a scarlet lightning bolt.

“Ah!”

Tucks screamed, as he fiercely stamping ground, desperately moving to the right. He did not have a chance to put some resistance, as there is no longer an option, and deep down inside

his heart, he actually felt fear unceasingly, “What is this fighting skills, it is just amazing, even the Rainbow stage is vulnerable to this kind of fighting skills, that being said, there should be a trace of him (TN: when Xie Aoyu use the technique), right?.”

The sword broke free.

The injuries on the left side of Tucks’s body is increasing from time to time, as he once again forced to took steps backwards more than 10 meters by Xie Aoyu, to keep his distance from Xie Aoyu, without stopping.

Tucks’s eyes, at this moment, looking firmly at Xie Aoyu, because he was afraid if Xie Aoyu pops out again out of nowhere.

Xie Aoyu ‘s Earth-Escaping technique can only be used as far as 13 meters at most , so he naturally cannot use it for no reason. He raises the Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword to start his pursuit to attack Tucks.

Two person, as a chase scene occurs in this mountain stronghold.

“This, how is this possible?” Those bandits were stunned.

“Who is this kid , he looks like he is still in the age of sixteen , how in the world as he seems to overpowered the leader, and apparently he also seriously injured the head, and now he was chasing the leader, making the leader to scurrying around!” A low level bandit who saw the chase scene is also shocked.

One of the leader upon seeing this, rushed out and shouting: “Brothers , let’s all go together!”

However, there were barely responds from the Black Wind bandits. Soon afterwards, the two figures passed by the thoroughfare. Whether Xie Aoyu, or Tucks, their speeds is not something that these bandits can compare with.

The one who is chasing from behind, Xie Aoyu felt kind of depressed as he is now discovered.

His agility fighting skills, with only Earth-Escaping technique is certainly not going to be sufficient enough.

Furthermore, as the current him also lacking in terms of body agility fighting skills, so like it or not, he needs to bring his top speed into the play.

“Aoyu!”

Xie Aoyu’s heart shook, as he heard Bing Wu’s voice.

While he pursuit vigorously, he looked toward where the voice was heard, but seeing Bing Wu, and Li Chaofeng, who were stopped by a group of bandits, although they managed to save some of the students, but considering how poor mental state of these students are, they simply unable to put out a fight.

While the person who led that group of bandits, is one big fat man.

This person's estimated weight is not only the same as the fat guy, the deputy head of Black Wind's bandit group who was captured previously by Xie Aoyu, in fact, he is also a crude pig, and at the first glance, he looks like a mountain of meats, about four hundred pounds.

This mountain of meats is likely to be associated with that fatty, and his strength also close to the upper-level Spirit realm. Li Chaofeng, Bing Wu, and others were forced to retreat, as they all do not have the ability to compete.

“Swish swish swish

When Xie Aoyu saw what was happening, he shook his hand, and then lots of stones flies through the air towards that big fat man, as in order to stop him from killing Bing Wu and others.

” ROAR ! ”

But that big fat man suddenly turned around, and fired a roar from his mouth.

An intangible sonic sound burst out from his mouth, and before those flying stones had time to reach his side; all of it has been shattered into pieces.

Sonic waves fighting skills!

With a distance of 50 meters apart, the sound waves have entered Xie Aoyu's ear, a jarring noise buzzed in his ears, and as the result, it slowed his movement.

“HA HA, La Tuo, it seems like your sonic waves technique has been effective, very good, and together, both of us will fight with this kid.” As Tucks seeing this, he cannot help but rejoiced.

“Yes, leader!” La Tuo replied loudly and then rushed forward.

“Thump thump ... thump ...”

The earth was shaking, it is no wonder, as his weight was already more than 400 pounds, and to suddenly ran, which is pretty impressive [\[2\]](#), but then there are at least two bandits who fell on the ground because of that unusual earthquake.

Tucks who tried to escape before, is now back, in reverse position as the chaser.

Two superior experts joined hands to fight Xie Aoyu.

One of them is also quite extraordinary, with him has this amazing skill sonic sound, and as for his other special abilities, there is no way to find out.

All of this will only be known in the battle.

That fatty who was captured by him previously, never mention about this sonic sound skill, perhaps he did not know, perhaps this was done in purpose, but as for now, Xie Aoyu does not know what the truth really is.

“Let me help you!” Li Chaofeng’s voice thundered.

He is like a flying swallow, as he lifted the sword in the sky, he pierced through.

La Tuo did not even look back; he pulled his hand that looked like a big palm-leaf fan to launch a backhand slap, “Go home.” [\[3\]](#)

“BAM!”

Li Chaofeng’s body moves in a flash, as if he were stepping on clouds stairs, unexpectedly with every step he took, he rise into the sky, and dodged the attack, as he slashed his sword.

Nice body agility technique!

Xie Aoyu praise in his heart unceasingly.

“ROAR!”

La Tuo open mouth his to launch his sonic sound skill, and one intangible sonic waves formed, this time the scale of the area affected is wider, even if Li Chaofeng's body agility technique is good, he is still unable to escape, as he was jarred by the sonic waves fighting skill, making he fell and plunged back to the side where Bing Wu and others are.

Right after he defeated Li Chaofeng, La Tuo marched forward.

Tucks also turned back.

Two experts who had him surrounded, ready to strikes him from either side.

Xie Aoyu was standing there alone.

All the fights which took place elsewhere already stopped, as all eyes were focused on the matter before them.

The final battle has begun!

[1] (TN: He was not spoke about his previous encounters with human enemies which were above his realms like Dalla, Qin Doug, because all that happened before he entered the seclusion)

[2] (TN: for a big guy like him)

[3] (The sentence above got me confused, because it said palm-leaf fan and I was like

“What? Since when this guy have fan? So as I thought about it, it was probably more to how he has a palm size as big as palm-leaf fan? If there’s any mention about fan in upcoming chapters, I will correct it, if not, let’s just leave it as it is J)

Chapter 81: A Deadly Battle

The results of this fight will determine one another's safety.

The Prince looked very handsome among all people, as his pair of big eyes staring straight ahead, this prince of yours, who his status was being reduced to a lowly prisoner, even so, there is no slightest trace of fear and tension from him, as he maintain his calm, looking very noble-like at the first glance, and this makes both Li Chaofeng and Bing Wu cannot help but to praise him secretly.

"Bing Wu, is that Xie Aoyu, the one who you had mentioned this before?" The Prince, Yun Tian Feng asked.

Bing Wu gives a slight nod, as her pretty eyes looked forward diligently.

Looking at the anxious Bing Wu, Yun Tian Feng chuckled lightly. He also did not mind with the seemingly rude response from Bing Wu, instead he is more interested in this guy Xie Aoyu. In his opinion, if these two people together [\[1\]](#), they must get the Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo's consent, therefore this Xie Aoyu must show how talented he is, otherwise it would difficult for him to stand out in the eyes of the Butterfly Queen. But beyond to everyone's knowledge, this Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo, indeed had the intention to kill Xie Aoyu, a very strong one at that, so it would be impossible for him to obtain any recognition.

"La Tuo, make sure you give full attention to this despicable

fellow" Before they started the battle, Tucks wanted to let La Tuo know about Xie Aoyu's unpredictable body agility technique.

But how could Xie Aoyu let him to do so.

The difference between the Earth-Escaping technique of being known and unknown is so enormous.

If no one knows, even the upper-level Sage master, will find it hard to handle, but if anyone knows, even just dealing with Tucks, who is currently in favor to win, to kill him, would not be something that is easy, the difference is tremendously big.

As soon as Tucks opened his mouth, Xie Aoyu starts to employ his Earth-Escaping technique.

The second his feet stomped the ground, he vanished.

"Where is that guy?"

"How did he do it?!"

All the bandits of the Black Wind bandit group were left dumbfounded.

Xie Aoyu, under their eyes, disappeared just like that?! How could they not be surprised?

"This, this" The Prince Yun Tian Feng's face reveals a color of surprise. This Prince of yours, with so many fighting skills that have been collected in the Palace, so much that it is naturally too many to count, but he never knew of the existence of such a mysterious strange body agility technique, as this is really disappearing, literally, and certainly it's have nothing to do with the speed, which has led the visual difference, "Bing Wu, how did he do it?"

Li Chaofeng also looked at Bing Wu.

"I do not know." Bing Wu simply shook her head, but a burst of excitement erupted inside her [\[2\]](#), but she knows that since Xie Aoyu and her have been separated for a period of time, there is a possibility that this is one of Xie Aoyu's fruitious encounter during his adventures.

In this regard, Bing Wu feels nothing but joy.

"Watch out!"

Tucks scared so much that his hairs bristling. He holds tightly to his spear, as he cautiously surveying his surrounding, it seems that he was afraid if Xie Aoyu appears beside him in an instant and strikes him hard. At the same time he also did not forget to warn La Tuo.

The second his voice fell out, everyone suddenly felt something before them was blossoming.

In this battle field, Xie Aoyu appeared once again.

Like that legendary teleporting technique, as he suddenly emerged behind La Tuo, set everyone's mouth agape in awe.

If I cannot do it, who can?!

The move that Xie Aoyu is going to use, is one of his most fearful killing moves, that "If I cannot do it, who can ?," which has been comprehend from the great Overlord Dragon Fist fighting skill, as it has been integrated into the law of sword, it becomes more powerful, surpassing its previous might.

As for the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword, despite its close - combat skill being extremely dreadful, but after all, the time he spent to practice was short, and to fully understand the secret is not going to be easy.

Right now, he wanted to finish La Tuo with this one strike.

Bizarre scene emerged once again, much to everyone amazement, including both La Tuo and Tucks which also equally stunned.

As he saw the crucial moment he got himself into, his head was moving strangely in one direction.

While his body remains motionless, his chest moves forward.

However his head turned over and change its direction, as his face and his back changed in one go, the back of the head and chest also moves in one direction, completely beyond the limits of understanding of all the people who are there. [\[3\]](#)

At the same time, Xie Aoyu saw, a touch of a cold black light between La Tuo's eyebrows.

Black Lotus!

Xie Aoyu secretly surprised as he did not expect for La Tuo to be one of the Black Lotus's people, and it looks like, that he hid himself well in Tucks's side, most likely he has been instructed by Black Lotus to monitor Tucks secretly.

"ROAR!"

La Tuo then let out a non-human, more like animal kind of roar.

A sonic wave emitted from La Tuo's mouth, forming a dense halo ring, shooting toward Xie Aoyu, not only that Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword would be in a bind, as Xie Aoyu would also equally affected.

Sonic-wave fighting skills!

Two fighting skills collided.

That seemingly invisible, but yet tangible, the sonic-wave fighting skill and the Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword collided, as a dazzling explosion of lights erupted. As Xie Aoyu's sword managed to break through, that invisible yet tangible halo ring that was wrapping around the sword dissipate into nothingness.

It took one strike of the sword.

Before the halo were shattered.

But still there is more sequence of sonic-wave continued to shoot out from the back.

"ROAR!"

As Bing Wu was anxious inwardly, a sound of the roar of a dragon break free like a thunder, as the sword of light flew through along with a glimpse of a fierce dragon.

Not real, but yet looks very real.

The bright image of the majestic dragon is seems like a bolt of lightning shooting out.

"Boom boom"

Those sonic-halos were shattered into pieces, as the bright image of the majestic dragon piercing through the core of those sonic-

halos like a hot knife through butter, and charge forward all the way.

"ROAR! ROAR!"

La Tuo who have already seen what happened before him was ashen in fear, and shoots a sequence of sonic-waves fighting skill.

But those sonic-halos are not able to break through; instead it was that bright image of the majestic dragon which slammed through towards him.

"BAM BAM!"

La Tuo's chest had been pierced through.

His whole body flew off the ground and thrown far back, as part of his clothes on his chest had disintegrated, the blood sprayed in the air, and it seems that the odds do not favor him.

Xie Aoyu's secret skill serves him as a good insurance.

This sonic-wave fighting skills, although this is the first time he encountered it, he knows that sonic-wave fighting skills may seem strange and inscrutable, but it's not like it is some kind of fighting skill that no one would be able to compete with, or rather, to simply say that La Tuo's level of mastery of sonic-wave is still in preliminary stage.

With just a single step, he crosses over as far as three meters distance, to catch La Tuo who was thrown to the back, and then lift a kick.

With full force he put on his feet, only to land a kick on La Tuo's stomach.

"BAM!"

La Tuo was sent flying with speed, along with that huge body of his, aiming at Tucks's back.

Xie Aoyu followed with his Earth-Escaping technique, up until now, from the beginning to the end, it took him with no more than 1-2 seconds of time whenever he wants to employ the skill, and so provide no opportunity for Tucks to escape, as the latter saw La Tuo was kicked flying towards him.

Tucks ducked out.

"On your back!"

"Leader, watch your back!"

Screams exploded, as those bandits Black Wind shouted so much that their voices hoarse from shouting.

Tucks could feel the buzzing in his head, he swing the iron spear on his back desperately, at the same time people rushed forward, hoping to distance themselves from Xie Aoyu, as they cursed inwardly: that damned body agility fighting skills of his, are you fucking kidding me?

However the spear's shots had no effect but merely able to hit an empty air.

"I'm here."

A shadow of a person blossomed before him. Tucks saw Xie Aoyu who emerged two yards in front of him, and so he moves straight towards the thoroughfare, as he wanted to escape.

Xie Aoyu's Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword flew forward, as right now he does not need to use any other fighting skills.

"Poof!"

Tucks wanted to dodge, but Xie Aoyu would be crazy to present him with such of opportunity. Finally, his chest had been hit by the Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword; its strength was powerful enough, as the tip of the Thunder-Sword Holy Spirit emerged from his back, throughout the heart.

"I, I am not willing..." Tucks's face distorted, as he talks in so much difficulty.

"Well, I am also not willing to ah, but you know instead of going solo on me, you should join forces with others, you are the one who brought this end to yourself. Hey! Next time if you want to commit suicide, you should say in advance. "Xie Aoyu said while looking pretty helpless.

Tucks looks furious as his eyes bulged, and so he died on the spot.

Xie Aoyu casually takes Tucks's interspatial ring, as within it, there is Luo Kun's Black Lotus decree, and it carries significant weight in terms of status.

As for La Tuo, he does not have anything like interspatial ring.

But apparently, La Tuo's status as a spy is the same as Tucks.

Xie Aoyu stood on a high ground, as he put the Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword into its sheath on his back. His hair is blown by a gentle breeze , as a surge of awe-inspiring aura radiating , a majestic tyrant aura belong to the owner who comprehend the meaning of the Overlord Dragon Fist, with the pair of his eyes , he gazed at the Black Wind bandits , and said, "Scram! "

With just one word, it makes those pitiful bandits ran away screaming.

Shortly, the Black Wind hill becomes peaceful without those bandits.

Li Chaofeng and others at the time, were excitedly cheering , especially Li Chaofeng as he took three and two steps forward , in just seconds, he was already close to Xie Aoyu , "You, did you have just used a fighting skill which its foundation is based on the demonic moles" [\[4\]](#)

[\[1\]](#) (TN: assuming that Bing Wu and Xie Aoyu together)

[\[2\]](#) (TN: why did it sound so perverted)

[\[3\]](#) (TN: Uhh, this passage above was really hard to translate as those mentioned actions were somehow peculiar and strange..so let's just assume this big fat guy La Tuo was in the middle of moving his body similar to extreme type of yoga?)

[\[4\]](#) (TN: it was supposed to be demonic drill mouse, but then moles have similar characteristic and much more precise than the mouse / rats)

Chapter 82: The Heavenly King Xing Luo

"You can see through this?" Xie Aoyu cannot help but to be impressed, because this Earth-Escaping technique, indeed its foundation came from demonic mole's characteristic and has led to the creation of this odd and mysterious fighting skill.

Li Chaofeng felt so genuinely excited and said: "Of course! I too, in order to come up with an idea to create a fighting skill, have conducted various researches on Demonic Beast. In the books I've read, demonic moles has been mentioned many times, as though Demonic Beast with earth-property has tens of thousands of species and more, but there is only one species who can dig and move freely in the ground, it is demonic mole. I've always wanted to do research on the subject; it's just that the demonic moles are very rare, so I always end up with no opportunities at all. "

So far, Xie Aoyu held Li Chaofeng in high esteem.

Because this person simply a fighting skill lunatic. [\[1\]](#)

If this person fails to become the second grandmaster of fighting skills after Ye Chaofeng, then no one can. Such a person with a talent that is hard to describe with just words.

"This earth-property demonic moles are rare indeed, but there are a lot of wind-property demonic beast, why don't you try to create a flying fighting skills, because as far as I know, there is no record so far about the existence of flying fighting skills." Xie Aoyu does not want to disclose matters related to Earth-Escaping

technique, so he changed their direction by telling Li Chaofeng about the flying fighting skill.

"Fly, fly" Li Chaofeng mumbles.

Xie Aoyu laughed: "Good, although a person with the cultivation that has reached the Tuifan realm, is capable of flying high freely, but it's still going to consume a large amount of Qi, even for someone with the cultivation level of Sage and Heavenly King realm, if it's not necessary, also would not choose to fly. So if you can create a flying fighting skill, which does not exhaust a large amount of Qi, even a Heavenly King level expert would feel jealous of you. What is the most important thing for you to know is that in a duel between two experts, something like this would be essential to draw a line between victory and defeat. "

Although Xie Aoyu just talking without giving any further thought, but it has provided a new insight to Li Chaofeng, as the latter seemed to have managed to find a new creative direction of fighting skills.

"Many thanks, brother Xie! If this Li Chaofeng in the future going to be successful, then I will absolutely return this generous favor!" Li Chaofeng said excitedly.

Xie Aoyu laughed, as he did not mind at all, because he just casually said that a good fighting skill is not created by a whim, instead it must be something that will only consume a little amount of Qi.

Meanwhile, Bing Wu, Yun Tian Feng, also came.

"Aoyu, this is his Royal Highness the Prince." Bing Wu said.

"His Royal Highness the Prince." Xie Aoyu said lightly.

The Prince Yun Tian Feng without any slightest of displeasure, smiled and said: "Thank you, brothers for the rescue, otherwise, I'm afraid I'm going to be the sinner of the Tian Luo's royal family! By the way, I'm just an ordinary student, I would be grateful if you do not call me your Royal Highness. Let's just call me Tian Feng. "

Xie Aoyu thought with the status as the Royal Prince, the latter would have been a very cold person, but seeing Tian Feng, he could not help but have his favorable impression of the Prince's increased, and so he laughed: "In that case, deference is no substitute for obedience. " [\[2\]](#)

After they've all met each other, then later they went into the hall.

Immediately after sitting on a chair, Tian Feng asked, "Brother Xie, what are our plans for now?"

"In my opinion, we should leave as soon as possible, because according to the black wind bandit, the one who is behind all of this is a mysterious organization called the Black Lotus Church, and their powers are huge. So I think they will definitely send people to capture brother Tian Feng, so before that happens, I

think we better leave as soon as possible, but as to which kind of safe place we should go, even myself do not know. "Xie Aoyu said.

"Well then, lets us all go to the Te Luo ." Yun Tian Feng gave a suggestion. [\[3\]](#)

Xie Aoyu was puzzled as he looked at Bing Wu.

Bing Wu explained in a low voice: "The Te Luo City's academy has been set up all the students and teachers away from the academy, and as the result, all those who still resides in the academy are high levels experts. There is a possibility that some of them also play role in protecting of his Royal Highness the Prince secretly. I know this from my master; she said that there is a Heavenly-King expert level commander. "

Think again, this Tian Luo's royal family can only afford to have one offspring, if Tian Feng really died, probably there would not be any second heirs, because since of the chaos that befell the royal family several hundred years ago, has led almost all the royal family's bloodline to be killed. Henceforth, the number of members of the royal family is not increased, as this can lead to the extinction of the royal family at any time.

In the history of this whole continent, Tian Luo Empire is probably the most unusual of all.

The royal families of the other empires not only have just hundreds of people, they have a hundred times more than the said amount. With the exception of Tian Luo's royal family that is

absolutely out of the ordinary.

"Now that everyone has reached an agreement, let's all leave at once." Tian Feng said.

Some people were assigned to find and free the other students who also was kidnapped and hidden in this area.

While Xie Aoyu and others, have left in advance.

Their goal is to the Te Luo City.

Te Luo City is located on the periphery of the Hengduan mountain ranges, it is categorized as one of the man populated cities closest to the Hengduan mountain ranges, and always be the camp-base for the Tian Luo Mo Military Academy before their ventures further into the area of Hengduan mountain ranges.

Xie Aoyu has done his math.

The trip to the Te Luo City will only take not more than 10 days. Therefore, there are more than 30 days until Ziyan out of her seclusion. So, Xie Aoyu decided to accompany them all, as he did not want to part with Bing Wu sooner.

It seems that their feelings are mutual, with both men and women also felt the same, so the two of them will always stick together.

As they all walked without stopping, four days later, they arrived at the border of the Te Luo City.

"Tian Feng brother, why didn't you keep going? I assume, with our pace, by tomorrow morning, we will be able to reach the Te Luo City." Xie Aoyu asked, feeling a bit of surprised as he saw Yun Tian Feng suddenly stopped.

Yun Tian Feng just smiled and said: "It seems there is someone on the way to receive me!"

Listen to this, all of them decided to wait and see, but Xie Aoyu turned to Li Chaofeng and said, "Chaofeng, you take with you several students to survey every corner of the area."

As the two of them getting along throughout the journey, Xie Aoyu and Li Chaofeng also have become good friends, mainly because when these two people are talking about fighting skills, they can give constructive comments to each other, especially this guy Li Chaofeng, his fighting skills insight is quite profound, Through him, Xie Aoyu have got a better understanding of the Overlord Dragon Fist, as he apparently now have the ability to comprehend the second stage of the Overlord Dragon Fist.

Li Chaofeng is someone who is very capable in terms of fighting skills.

"All right." Li Chaofeng soon as has been told, brought with him, seven or eight students to look around.

Xie Aoyu's ears, eyes looking back and forth to guard the emergence of the Black Lotus Church's people, after all, this mysterious organization is capable enough to dispatch an expert to going head to head with the expert that protect Yun Tian Feng in the dark , so whoever they send, certainly not a weakling.

Not long after, Yun Tian Feng laughed: "They're here!"

“How do you know?” Xie Aoyu was stunned, but then, he began to understand, "You must have a special way to communicate, right?”

Yun Tian Feng smiled and nodded.

Sure enough, after a few minutes, there are more than 10 figures emerged from a distance. They are all very fast, as with just a snap and they have reached less than hundred meters of distance.

The one who led this group of people is a man in the age of thirty.

But as Xie Aoyu steal a glance at him; it seems this person is not as young as everyone thought he would be. This kind of feeling is very strange, it's something that is hard to describe or explain in words, but it feels so real.

"Look at the symbol across their chest; it looks like those of Star Luo Mercenary Group." Bing Wu whispered.

Xie Aoyu also noticed symbols that looked like a star on the man's chest. But more importantly, the stars on the man's chest totaled nine stars, while others only have eight stars.

Star Luo Mercenary Group, an organization of mercenaries who are able to compete head to head, and standing shoulder by shoulder with the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group. The only difference is that Star Luo Mercenary Group experienced three failures in their works and the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group have not yet experience failure. Therefore, it goes without saying that the number one mercenary group title went to the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group.

It is already known that what represents the status in the Star Luo Mercenary Group is the number of stars on their chest. Nine stars are the highest, and there is only one person who has it, he is the head of the Star Luo Mercenary Group... the Heavenly King Xing Luo! [\[4\]](#)

No wonder he looks young, so he is the Heavenly King Xing Luo. Xie Aoyu knows that after a person reaches the Heavenly King realm, looks can be kept unchanged for decades, until the time when they are approaching the end of their life, which is something beyond their control.

"Your Royal Highness the Prince, you must be frightened!" The Heavenly King Xing Luo, who landed from the sky, kneeling with one leg.

"All of you please stand up." The current Yun Tian Feng now exudes the manner of being royalty, unlike the time when he was

together with Xie Aoyu and others along the way.

The Heavenly King Xing Luo stood up, as the other eight-stars mercenaries of the Star Luo Mercenary Group formed a circle around Yun Tian Feng to protect him.

“Your Highness, this time “The Heavenly King Xing Luo said.

Yun Tian Feng waved, “Let’s just consider this as for the sake of me to gain experience, alright? Star Luo Mercenary Group's leader do not have to mind it much, moreover, I also did not suffer any serious injuries, as I was saved by my brother, Xie Aoyu! ”

Although he said he did not mind, but as soon as the words reached the ears of those of Star Luo Mercenary Group, they all cannot help but to let go a sigh of relief, as it is an assurance to them that Yun Tian Feng will not pursue the matter.

Seeing their facial expressions changes, Xie Aoyu have heard that the Star Luo Mercenary Group is a hidden force of the Tian Luo Empire, it appears that this is true.

"Does this person who had saved His Highness from danger, studied at the same academy?" The Heavenly King Xing Luo looked at Xie Aoyu and said. As he took a quick scanned with his eyes, Xie Aoyu who are among these people, seem rather stand out like a crane among chickens, it's not because of his looks, and his height either, but more because of his temperament.

"Fluke." Xie Aoyu laughed, "I'm not a student, just out for venturing, inadvertently encountered all of them."

The Heavenly King Xing Luo looked at Xie Aoyu, "Venturing out alone?"

"Yes." Usually when Xie Aoyu dealing with individuals with status like Yun Tian Feng, he would be able to remain calm, but facing with this Heavenly-King-level expert, he could not help but to feel a little nervous.

"It seems that your future achievements will be above me!" The Heavenly King Xing Luo said.

"Regimental commander was just being polite." Xie Aoyu let out an indifferent smile, as he of course knows that this compliment was just someone's gesture of being courteous.

But Yun Tian Feng's eyes sparkled, because he was clearly aware of the Heavenly King Xing Luo's true personality, and his real strength. Moreover, since the Heavenly King Xing Luo was at his peak, for more than 100 years, he had never praise someone.

"Does this little brother already know who has kidnapped His Royal Highness?" The Heavenly King Xing Luo asked.

Xie Aoyu took out the token that he had taken from Tucks, as this token and the token that Xie Aoyu seized from Luo Kun looks similar but yet different. Where the difference lies in the form of a

distinct design, "They are from this mysterious organization called the Black Lotus Church. As for what kind of organization this Black Lotus Church is, I do not know."

"It really was them!" When The Heavenly King Xing Luo took the Black Lotus token, his face became ugly.

[1] (TN: I want to put otaku..should I? Lol)

[2] (TN: chinese idiom; deference is no substitute for obedience = to follow somebody's precepts is the sincerest form of respect)

[3] (TN: Actually, the chinese for Troy is Teluo 特洛, so while it would be appropriate to westernize the name until the further reading, but then I decided to stay with the chinese name, since troy sounds so awkward, and from the beginning of the series until now, there are no cities with western name, so let's just stick to that.)

[4] (TN: Interestingly, the author keep on using the same words combination 天王 (heavenly king)+星(Xing)= Uranus(Planet), in every single lines involving this guy, so I thought maybe that is his actual name but then I decide to use it as a title, instead of name. Because as I read ch 83, I found out his brother name is the Ten Kings Xing Chen Feng...but then I could be wrong,but until if there is any change in later chapters, I'll stick to this)

Chapter 83: Odd Conversation

A dense ice cold killing intent began to be released by The Heavenly King Xing Luo, the air temperature dropped dramatically instantaneously, making everyone within a radius of one hundred meters felt sense of cold bones poke them, one after another began to draw back.

Similarly, the entire eight stars of the Star Luo Mercenary Group, also gives the same reaction.

Only Xie Aoyu and Bing Wu who did not seem to affected.

Both of them did not even try to resist the cold air at all, simply because they did not feel anything. Not only those who were there surprised, even Xie Aoyu and Bing Wu also began to feel strange and suspicious as their both looked at each other.

They both clearly did not understand what was happening.

But contrary with The Heavenly King Xing Luo, his eyes were wide open, as he looked towards Xie Aoyu and Bing Wu without blinking, and after a moment of silent, he asked: "Are you a disciple to the Butterfly Queen?"

"That's right, senior." Bing Wu answered with her clear and loud voice.

"Well, apparently she is grooming you to be her next successor." The Heavenly King Xing said, as he nodded.

Successor?

Bing Wu was surprised, as though she is the disciple of the Butterfly Queen, but what does that have to do with being a successor, did he mean that I will inherit the master's legacy?

"Your master is Hu Qingan?" The Heavenly King Xing Luo, asked Xie Aoyu.

Yun Tian Feng and others were surprised as they all looked at Xie Aoyu.

Li Chaofeng blurts out the words from his mouth: "King Tiger Hu Qingan?"

"I want to say that I am, but I do not even know that person, as I am practicing alone." Xie Aoyu shrugs, but he naturally knew who Hu Qingan was.

Across the continent, those who do not know who was Hu Qingan are few.

In the continent today, experts such as Heavenly King-level masters are small in numbers, including the upper-level Heavenly King, which is also smaller in number, where they are known as the ten superior masters. These ten superior masters are not only more powerful, but also stronger than the "common" upper-level Heavenly King master, so for that reason, the title of king was conferred to them.

Of course, the title of king given by the Imperial Court of the empire was in name only without any connection with the nobility, rather it is a symbol that represents the strongest in the whole continent, in which this is precisely why, Hu Qingan that with only depending on his strength alone, can be part of one of the top ten superior masters, is now known as the King Tiger.

“You’re practicing without a master?” The Heavenly King Xing Luo could not help but exclaimed.

Xie Aoyu nodded.

“No one to help or guide you?” The Heavenly King Xing Luo’s tone deepened.

“No.” Xie Aoyu gives a short and simple reply.

Listen to the answer that makes The Heavenly King Xing Luo's eyebrows furrowed, as his eyes gradually suffused with a silver white glow, he looked toward Xie Aoyu from top to bottom, with a smile on his lips, he said, "It seems this brother has limitless potential." He flipped his wrist, and a token appeared, "this token belongs to my Star Luo, seeing this, equal as seeing myself in person. So if there's anything that you need, little brother take and show this token to the Luo Star Mercenary Group's station, we will mobilize forces for you. "

"This present is too expensive." Xie Aoyu waved his hand as he spoke.

"Well, as compared with your big contribution, which had saved His Highness the Prince from being kidnapped, this can be considered too light." The Heavenly King Xing Luo laughed, "Accept it, it may prove to be useful to you somehow or another in the future."

Afterwards, The Heavenly King Xing Luo, together with the Prince Yun Tian Feng departed.

At that time, Li Chaofeng came and laughed: "Aoyu, you really ought to envy, you not only have earned the praise of The Heavenly King Xing Luo, you even got his Star Luo's token, after this, your identity along with your status will be quite different. "

Xie Aoyu looked towards everyone, only to find all the people around him seemed to filled with jealousy.

He was only able to smile bitterly while shook his head. It is not that he did not like the token awarded by The Heavenly King Xing Luo, after all, that means that he will have something to protect him, as later he is likely to face the retaliation of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group, so at least he have nothing to fear.

But the problem here is that the words uttered from the mouth of The Heavenly King Xing Luo.

He was not aware of what is in me, right? Maybe he is similar to Li Chaofeng who always ask only because out of curiosity, but what Xie Aoyu know, that the tri-color sphere within his body reacted strangely.

Furthermore, he know why he was not affected by the Heavenly King Xing Luo murderous aura, as this tri-color sphere likely would be the cause for that to happen.

However, as for Bing Wu, what would be the reason...? [\[1\]](#)

And why is that The Heavenly King Xing Luo thinks that he is Hu Qingan's disciple? Is this tri-color sphere somehow or another related to King Tiger Hu Qingan?

"It's just a Star Luo's token, that's all of it." Xie Aoyu trying to copes with the reason.

His casual attitude, caused a student to feel discontent, "Are you for real ah, brother Xie Aoyu, you really do not know or pretend not to know?"

"Know what?" Xie Aoyu stunned, as he holds the star Luo's token, "This is not something that symbolizes the power of the Star Luo Mercenary Group, is it not?"

"This token, is not that simple, it also means The Heavenly King Xing Luo's friendship." The student exclaimed.

"Nobody knows the Heavenly King Xing Luo's actual level of realm, but everyone knows that his older brother is the Ten Kings Xing (星 star) Chen Feng, which this star Luo's token is a symbol of these two brothers, even those who are close to them, did not get

their hands on this token. So far, you are the second one. "the other students could not help but raise his voice.

For such of good items, this Xie Aoyu have the heart to said that's all of it, it's absolutely outrageous!!

Xie Aoyu rubbed his nose, as he let a dry chuckle: "There is such of thing?"

Li Chaofeng's face and others have the expression of someone who has been utterly defeated.

Xie Aoyu absolutely did not expect that this person Xing Luo turned out to be the younger brother of the Ten Kings Xing Chen Feng. So it seems this star Luo's token is likely to bring more benefits than harm, he will keep this, but at this moment, he is more concerned about Bing Wu, because Bing Wu is not affected by Xing Luo's killing intent before.

All of them continue to accelerate their movement towards Te Luo City.

This is because Bing Wu and others have already completed their ventures.

"Bing Wu, have your master feed you anything odd like divine elixir or something similar?" Xie Aoyu, and Bing Wu deliberately lagged behind, as to not arouse suspicion, along the way, they also deliberately distanced themselves from others , and the rest of the

people can only think that this is a "love-struck".

"Divine elixir? There seems to be nothing." Bing Wu shook her head, "Master has been feeding me a lot of medicine, but that was to transform my physique, so that I can cultivate faster, but the master does not allow me to consume just any potion to directly increased my strength, says that it would only do harm my future cultivation, so it's not good. "

Xie Aoyu: "You did not seem affected by the Heavenly King Xing Luo's cold murderous aura, what happened?"

Try to remember something back, Bing Wu appeared unsure herself: "I do not know, I just felt like when the murderous aura was released, my body for a moment as if it was frozen, but then I was recovered in an instant, it was like nothing had happened."

"You try to remember the feeling, the reason why you're not affected." Xie Aoyu said.

Bing Wu furrowed her brows and pursed her lips, for a long time before saying, "as if my whole body rebounded."

"Huu"

Xie Aoyu let out a breath.

"Aoyu, what do you think?" Bing Wu asked.

"I'm sure you take divine elixir, or something similar." Xie Aoyu said with certainty.

"But the divine elixir together with those killing intent does not seems to connect to me , and I do not think that I have ever taken it before. "Bing Wu said, looking unconvinced.

Xie Aoyu smiled: "Maybe your master secretly fed you the medicine."

Listening to this, Bing Wu laughed, "That is most likely what has happened, after all, master indeed love me dearly!"

Seeing the smiles on Bing Wu 's face, Xie Aoyu sighed inwardly , as he still does not have any concrete evidence that can be placed under these circumstances, furthermore he cannot guarantee whether You Lan Ruo will act to kill him if the matter which has occurred previously , disclosed.

But what has happened today, have made Xie Aoyu to think deeper, because the attempt to kill him previously by the Butterfly Queen, it seems there is more than meets the eye , and there is the possibility that all of this has to do with the tri -color spheres.

[1] (TN: He thought about Bing Wu, who is also not affected by the cold aura that has been released by The Heavenly King Xing Luo before. So maybe Bing Wu also has a secret which is stored in the body of her. That's why Xing Luo said she would be the heir to the Butterfly Queen.)

Chapter 84: Something Within The Glove

(Part 1)

Te Luo City is actually just a small town, but due to the close distance between the city and the Hengduan mountain range, this small town is filled with mercenaries, cultivators, and various kinds of people, where these people before entering the Hengduan mountain range, will make this small town as their last stop, and because of that, the small town atmosphere's become quite lively.

Walking in the streets, Xie Aoyu could see a number of mercenary soldiers.

Even more, Xie Aoyu noticed that throughout this mercenary main street, you will be able to see those mercenaries who came from various factions in every corner.

Among all of them are the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group and Star-Luo Mercenary Group, which you can say belongs to the part of elite's mercenary factions.

At the center of this street, there are so many people passing here and also there are so many of those who sell mercenary - related items, such as stores that sell weapons.

Once they entered the Te Luo City, some of the students decided to move separately.

Bing Wu, Li Chaofeng and together with some other people

choose to stay together with Xie Aoyu, to explore every corner of the streets of this small town.

"It is indeed difficult and challenging to make a lot of money ah." Xie Aoyu said as he walked throughout the street, and unexpectedly discovered six street game challenges, some to compare who is stronger, some compares their battle efficiency, some wants to compare their eyesight, and so on, so long that those who want to challenge pay first, as if they lose, not only they would burn their deposits, they also have to pay more, if they win, they will receive double profit instead.

Li Chaofeng seems a bit confused as he said: "No, a month ago, there were nothing like this on the street."

"Making money like this is probably the fastest." Xie Aoyu said. He glimpsed at one of the game, only this time the challenge is a pair of gloves.

He bought a pair of gloves in the forest city, but the quality was nothing but ordinary, and when he ventured through the demonic beast world, the gloves have been destroyed.

When he saw those pair of gloves, his heart was palpitated.

His Medical Spirit Finger, after all, has reached quite a high level, and it would let out an extremely bright color while fighting, which in this case, it would make the color powder to fall out, and so, it would reveal the existence of his Medical Spirit Finger. [\[1\]](#)

Thus, all these factors have fueled Xie Aoyu's desire to have those gloves.

"Let's go and see." Xie Aoyu said.

The spectators who are here, is one times more than in other places, Li Chaofeng as he sees this, decided to stroll around with the rest of the students, leaving only Xie Aoyu and Bing Wu rushing into the crowd.

They both arrived at the front, and found that someone was already challenging the game.

This man has broad shoulders and a body that looks so well-built, like the body of a warrior, while still carrying a full two meters long sword on his back, he paid two gold coins , and grab the gloves .

“Get up!”

The man’s husky voice thundered. [\[2\]](#)

His hands pull the gloves with all his strength.

The gloves only move a tiny little bit from the desk.

“Good heavy gloves.” Xie Aoyu exclaimed.

A mercenary who was next to Xie Aoyu, when listening to Xie Aoyu's words, smiled and said: "I assume that this brother probably only just arrived in Te Luo City after one month before, right? For your information brother, this so-called game of challenge, began one month ago, and until now, nobody can lift the gloves, thus this has made everybody to feel extremely jealous of those behind this game, which has profited a lot from this game, if not because the organizer is part of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group, they probably would have been robbed since the very beginning. "

Xie Aoyu then discovered that the owner of the gloves is the person of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group.

"Don't tell me that there is no expert who would come forward to challenge?" Xie Aoyu looks confused as he said.

"Others were worried that there would be an expert who might involve later on, therefore it was indicated that the challenger must be under 30 years old, and couple of days ago, two people with aged around 31 or 32-year-old has come to challenge, at the end, they were found out by those of Imperial Crown Mercenary Group, and as the result, their hands had been cut off. " The mercenary guy sighed, "Who dares to provoke the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group, as they are the symbol of perfection of a mercenary group."

Hey, they gave me that jade lotus flower for nothing, and there was also Ziyan sister as the witness. Xie Aoyu then turned his

attention to that husky voice's fellow, only to see that he barely lifted the gloves bit by bit.

According to the rule, so long as the challenger managed to lift the gloves above their head, she or he will be declared as the winner.

"Yeah, that guy will be utterly defeat for sure." That mercenary soldier guy said.

Indeed, as he said, that husky fellow barely able to lifted the gloves, and his body was full of sweat flowing, looking extremely exhausted, as both of his arms trembling slightly, the pair of gloves fell from his hand.

"Bang!"

The gloves crushed the table, causing the table to be smashed to pieces.

Xie Aoyu who is watching, is secretly surprised, it seems the gloves are heavier than he had expected.

"Aoyu, do you know what kind of material that those gloves made of?" Bing Wu said as she also felt a little bit strange.

"Let me go and have a look." Xie Aoyu said with a smile.

He then stepped forward.

Originally intended to call it a day, the mercenary soldier of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group decided to stimulates the audience more by deliberately shift their attention towards Xie Aoyu, "Does this little brother would like to try?" When he saw Xie Aoyu nodded, he then said with a smile, "Then I would like to ask this young master to pay a deposit of one gold coin."

Xie Aoyu took out one gold coin and throws it to the former.

He walked to the table, and sizes up the gloves.

The gloves looks nothing but ordinary, it does not even have a unique characteristic, Xie Aoyu asked: "If I lift this gloves, will I get the gloves as a reward, and would you also give me two gold coins in addition ? "

"That is right." The mercenary soldier of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group replied.

Xie Aoyu put his hands on the gloves and grabs it.

His strength because of the influence of the tricolor spheres, went from normal to abnormal, it's very frightening sight of strength, as he casually holds the gloves without even using his Qi.

Xie Aoyu grabs those pair of gloves tightly as he is going to start the lifting.

His pure strength rose from 10% to 20%, 30%, 40%!

With 40% strengths, Xie Aoyu then felt that it was enough, so he give it a try to lift the gloves, but still the speed of him lifting was still quite slow.

50% strength!

Xie Aoyu is now feels he can do it with ease, as if it had no weight at all.

"If you cannot do it, just say you can't, or else you would hurt yourself, and then how are you going to take care of your beauty little lover?"

The crowds burst in laughter, because judging from the appearance, Xie Aoyu seriously does not seem to belong to the kind of the strength type of person, you can only say he looks good, but not in kind of muscular way.

Xie Aoyu did not feel enraged, only those who walked through between the fine line of life and death worthy to be a mercenary soldier, and it goes without saying that the words came out from this guy's mouth was like a bragged of a drunkard, there is no need to take it seriously. So, he simply bared his teeth, smiled, and said, "A real man will never say no!".

The surrounding crowds are bursting with laughter again.

Bing Wu blushed, as her eyes glued towards Xie Aoyu.

"This pair of gloves will be mine." Xie Aoyu spoke, as he lifts the gloves over the top of his head with ease.

Sounds of laughter were abruptly stopped.

It's like all that laughter were abruptly cut off drastically, like something that makes the crowds loss for words, this sudden silence also caused the attention of others from the other side of the areas, to turned their heads to see what was happening.

They then noticed that Xie Aoyu hold the gloves with his hand, lifting it high above his head.

"The gloves were lifted!"

Without knowing whose voice that broke the silence, however it has caused quite a commotion on the entire street.

Xie Aoyu stunned as he watching the lively scene, and then burst out laughing, "They would excite for this much?" He obviously did not know that the reason behind the gloves sensation, are mainly because the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group: "This gloves officially mine."While speaking, he puts the gloves on his hands, into the interspatial ring. [\[3\]](#)

"Wow, this guy basically did it with one hand!"

"You look at him; there was actually no sweat at all."

"How much strength that he has?"

The atmospheres were full with spectator's noises as most of them have their eyes wide opened.

Seeing these excitements, Bing Wu was proud, because he is her man after all.

Xie Aoyu took the reward of two gold coins, and without wasting time, he left with Bing Wu.

"Haha, Aoyu, you really was being too much, you just came to this Te Luo City today, and then out of nowhere you became a celebrity in just an instant." Li Chaofeng came from one side, and laughed all the way.

"I'm just interested in these gloves." Xie Aoyu did not seem to mind much and said, "Seeing you smile, don't tell me that you have found anything strange, is not it?"

Li Chaofeng said with a smile: "Actually, just now I bumped into one of my schoolmate who had first ventured out before me, and he let out information from his mouth in regard of a certain matter, about Gold Eater Beast."

"Gold Eater Beast!" Xie Aoyu and Bing Wu shouted simultaneously.

[1] (TN: The color is the skin color powder powder which he have been used to hide the actual color of his spirit finger)

[2] (TN: Well, certainly did not expect that. A husky voice XD)

[3] (TN: In another words, those were basically a mockery excitement towards those tyranny of the Imperial crown mercenary group)

Chapter 85: Something Within The Glove

(Part 2)

"Chaofeng, are you sure it's a Gold Eater Beast?" Xie Aoyu asked with a serious tone.

Li Chaofeng said with a smile: "Of course, that's why students who ventures within a thousand miles away were called back, the reason are for them to aims the Gold Eater Beast."

To one's surprise, to know that the Gold Eater Beast has appeared here, Xie Aoyu 's heart could not help but endlessly stirring.

The Gold Eater Beast is one of the most unique species among the world of demonic beasts.

It's battles capacity is outstanding, and because it is part of the demonic beast's world, it was belong to the same group as those Earth-attribute demonic moles, these demonic beast all have special abilities, for instance, change stones into gold with just a touch.

Naturally, that this kind of stone is not just any typical stone.

But still it is a fact.

As long as the stone contains metal, a metallic ore will be extracted from it. So long as the Gold Eater Beast sit above the

stone not less than one day, the stone can be turned into pure gold, moreover Gold Eater Beast can also use its magic to change money into gold.

This kind of an existence would drive those businessmen crazy.

For martial artist like Xie Aoyu, Gold Eater Beast also has other uses and advantages, like Gold Eater's bones, scales, and horns and so on are the best raw materials to create a metal-holy weapon.

"Gold Eater Beast!" Xie Aoyu exclaimed. "Still more than that, according to the investigation carried out by one of my academy's instructor, right after that Gold Eater Beast was born, it leaves its egg's shell there, and currently, that egg shell has grown into a sapling." Li Chaofeng said with a smile.

Xie Aoyu road surprised: "Golden Life Tree!"

Li Chaofeng said: "Right, it is a Golden Life Tree, it's already a common knowledge that for a wooden attribute person, their battle efficiency is the weakest of all, their offensive power is also the worst, if ones take the Golden Life Tree, then his or her wooden attribute will become their most offensive attribute, after practicing the wooden attribute's fighting skills, they will be formidable."

I have the wooden attribute, said Xie Aoyu inwardly.

In this regard, Bing Wu also full aware, as she winked at Xie

Aoyu.

They strolled around for a while, and then parted ways, because Bing Wu and the rest of the students need to go to their academy camp base stationed here and assemble.

While Xie Aoyu looked for an inn to stays.

As for the Gold Eater Beast matter, since the academy was involved, naturally he can rely on Bing Wu and Li Chaofeng to provide him the information, so he was not too worried about the possibility to miss this opportunity.

In the guest room, Xie Aoyu took out the gloves.

These heavy pair of gloves when placed on this ordinary table, has brought pressure to the wooden table as it almost split in two. Xie Aoyu immediately lifts up the gloves, and weighs the weight. Based on his judgment, these pair of gloves perhaps weight about 500 jin. [\[1\]](#)

The weight made Xie Aoyu felt satisfied.

His strength matched with the gloves, it fit perfectly.

Now, with regard to whether this pair of gloves is fits or not with his hands, Xie Aoyu needs to use his fist to test it.

"Um? There's something inside." Xie Aoyu took out his hands, as he look inside the gloves, what he saw on the inside of the two pair of thumb stalls, are two little yellow stone with the size of a small peanut.

Xie Aoyu turns over the gloves, to remove the two little pebbles from the gloves.

"Bang!"

Once the pebbles falls on that wooden table, the wooden table immediately broke to pieces.

Xie Aoyu's eyes and hands were sharp and quick, as he captures the pebbles by using his hands, he could feel the entire weight of those pebbles immediately, and a flash through his mind, "I knew it, no wonder that this pair of gloves is so heavy, this strange little thing is the cause, and it's very small but its weight is about 500jin of weights. Moreover the gloves is so big, but it's not just make the thumb-stall area to be heavy, but it also affects the whole part of the gloves to become heavy as well. Don't tell me; is this so-called Earthen-Soulstone? "

Although he cannot give one hundred percent certainty, but based on his assumption with regard of its weight, Xie Aoyu believes that these little pebbles are no other than the Earthen-Soulstone.

He then took the two Earthen-Soulstones, again thinking about the gloves, which now only have a 10-20 jin of weights, he pulled

out an ordinary sword and launch a gentle strike, as the gloves burst.

"Profiteer." Xie Aoyu whispered.

This pair of gloves was obviously on much lower standard than the one which he had bought in the Forest City before, so without any hesitation, he discarded it directly, and took the two little Earthen-Soulstones, and his mood brightened again.

These two little Earthen-Soulstones, its weight can be moved, so how am I supposed to do that?

Xie Aoyu wants to place the pebbles on his Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword, but then he gave up the idea, as the Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword itself belong to the saint weapon category, even if you add an extra weight, the effect will not be too noticeable.

As he thought about it more deeply, Xie Aoyu came up with a choice between using his arm protectors, and his kneepads.

Therefore, he needs to choose the option that gives more impact as a whole.

Those two kneepads has long been in the abandonment state, since it is not a high-quality goods, its only quality was its sharp spikes on its surface, which was sinister enough, as it was initially picked by Qin Yueyi.

After being used for so long, struggles in difficult times, the spikes on its surface were smoothed due of being grinded.

He seems to hesitate a bit, but quickly discarded the feeling, as it is no longer useful to him, to be honest; the arm protectors are just perfect.

One of the reason is, these arm protectors has not been used for a number of times; another reason is that these arm protectors is made of high quality materials, and frankly speaking, it is one of the highest quality goods.

Xie Aoyu immediately inserts the two of Earthen-Soulstone into the arm protectors directly.

As the current two arm protectors has a combination of one thousand jin of gravity, its strength soar immediately, Xie Aoyu then wear it in both of his hands, as he still just started, he found it is quite hard to adapt, even so he still trying to move his hands.

He wants to adapt with the one thousand jin of gravity's arm protectors as soon as possible.

Later with this thing, any human being can be massacred with ease. With an addition of his Qi, Xie Aoyu hopes he can enjoy the battle thrills to the max.

As he continuously practices until the afternoon, Xie Aoyu has finally managed to fully adapt with his new weapon.

He took a bath, and then he prepares to go out to eat something, fills his hunger.

"Pa Pa Pa Pa"

At this time, the sounds of the door being knocked repeatedly transmit.

Xie Aoyu opens the door.

Before him is Bing Wu who seemed breathless, her fresh-faced cheek is ruddy, her chest is also fluctuating up and down, and it looks like she was running to get here.

He looked towards Bing Wu, who apparently was rushing to get here as her cheeks turned red as well; Xie Aoyu's heart was moved, giving him a strong urge, to draw Bing Wu into his arms, tenderly, lovingly.

"Bing Wu." Xie Aoyu holds Bing Wu's white hands, as he gently looked at her.

Pulled by Xie Aoyu, his gaze full of tenderness which makes Bing Wu's heart skipped a beat; she had even forgotten her goal for coming.

Two people facing each other, in their mind just thinking about

the person before them, there is no one else but them.

"Creaks"

The door closed.

Bing Wu step down with her back against the door, while Xie Aoyu slowly getting closer to her.

Strong masculine flavor was rushing, causing Bing Wu thrown in daze with the feeling of being intoxicated, a moment of where she was losing herself, her black yo-yo's eyes closed slowly, and her long black eyelashes jittered, along with her nose twitching, as though looking forward for something to happen.

Xie Aoyu slowly bowed his head.

His hot lips touched Bing Wu's soft tender lips.

Two people trembles simultaneously.

Only the sound of their heartbeats and breathing can be heard in the room, no other voices, their hearts seem to be in the deepest ocean, and they only have each other, as nothing else matters.

Xie Aoyu slides his tongue forward with no time.

Facing the attack, Bing Wu loosened her clenching jaws with no resistance at all, just her charming body trembled slightly. It's not clear whether it is because she is excited, or reserved.

She, who still looked a little nervous, somehow managed to let her delicate sweet, tongue out to explore.

Tongues of two people joined together.

A strange break through emerges suddenly!

Once both of their tongues were in contact, the tricolor spheres on Xie Aoyu's chest suddenly tremble. Apart from the blue light on the surface(TN: this blue light stayed), the three colors of purple, golden, and green are flourishing magnificently, as all of it burst through from his body, and then those three colors enveloped his whole body, while from Bing Wu's body emerged a blue light. [\[2\]](#)

The blue light that appears all of sudden now enveloped her whole delicate body.

Two lips connected, as four kinds of colors are flowing together.

The four kinds of colors meet, as every each of it quickly collided like a tidal wave from the stagnant water.

The blue light on the surface of the tricolor spheres, because of the Bing Wu's blue light, were able to smoothly merged, and so

those rays of lights greatly flourished, as their gradually moving into the blue bead next to the tricolor spheres.

The changes have just started.

[\[1\]](#) (TN:500 pounds)

[\[2\]](#) (TN: Noted that the blue light on the surface of the tricolor spheres that have been mentioned in chapter 57 (58?) before, are not the same as the blue light that emerged from Bing Wu, it is the same color but from different source. I know, I was confused at first too but then I reread the whole chapter again and again)

Chapter 86: Unexpected Change

As for what that blue glow on the surface of the tricolor spheres is, Xie Aoyu did not know, but Xiao Bai knows it very well, that is no other than that mysterious wind which had yet taken a form.

The mysterious wind, as the name suggests, it is odd and an equally famous existence along with the water and fire. [\[1\]](#)

The only drawback is this mysterious wind had never materialized in the past, even now it's still the same, but surprisingly was, the blue glow that emerged from Bing Wu's body is precisely a force of wind attribute, this kind of force is strong, even if you compare with Xie Aoyu's tricolor spheres, it would not lose much.

Need to blend it in together.

If previously it did not have a form, right now, the mysterious wind instantly taken a shape. Become a truly mysterious wind.

Xiao Bai looked dumbfounded, in its pitch-dark eye suffused a white radiance, stubbornly staring at Bing Wu, indistinctly, as if it understood the situation experienced by Bing Wu.

To think that the Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo has been aiming at Xie Aoyu's cultivation method, Xiao Bai always felt there was something quite odd.

The mysterious wind starts shaped, as it rapidly integrates into the blue bead next to the tricolor spheres, a faint wind spirit emerged inside the blue bead.

The wind stirring, as the bead revolves.

The blue bead and the tricolor spheres seemed to reflect a strange picture, with the blue bead spheres revolved around the tricolor's base.

The formation of the mysterious wind, led Xie Aoyu's Qi to have an astonishing change.

Xie Aoyu's physical attributes of Qi was determined from birth, he have the thunder, earth and wooden attributes, therefore his Qi cultivation is also based on these three types of attributes characteristics.

Currently the mysterious wind has taken a shape, and integrates into the blue bead.

So it made Xie Aoyu's Qi to also have the wind attribute characteristics, and it is a wonderful present, his speed and his other characteristic, also his attributes have changed, all this made Xie Aoyu to feel inconceivable.

An attribute!

This has been determined as soon as the human is born; it is

something permanent, fixed and will not be changed for life. Because the blue bead has actually managed to change (increase) his attributes, perhaps something like this has never happened before, right?

However, Xie Aoyu was not surprised to the extreme, because to be able to head to head with that abnormal existence, the tricolor spheres, naturally it's not just any item.

As his attributes have changed, his Qi revolted.

Quickly, Xie Aoyu could feel his strength has increased, with his Qi rapidly heading towards higher level.

"Bang!"

Xie Aoyu felt his body trembles.

Anyone would be speechless as this guy was able to break through so easily!!

Because of the kiss he shared with Bing Wu, his spirit realm has gone from the intermediate-level Spirit realm to the upper - level Spirit realm. Moreover his attributes also had gone thorough change; with the current he now possessed the wind attribute.

Bing Wu's tender body also experienced the slight tremor.

Her realm also broke through from the upper-level Advanced realm to the lower-level Spirit realm, and it continue to presses up to the peak of the lower-level position.

There is a hint of surprise on the faces of both of them, like a ripple of a turbulent waves, making them both to took one step backward, and thus separate themselves from each other, resulted those violent ripples felt by them just now to ended.

The tricolor spheres returned to normal.

Xie Aoyu looked at Bing Wu in shocked.

Bing Wu also has the unbelievable look on her face as she looked at Xie Aoyu.

"I broke through."

"I also broke through."

Both of them open their mouths successively.

Xie Aoyu could not help but laughed and said: "What has happened is quite inconceivable, because according to my cultivation speed, I would need at least nearly four months, to break through once again; I did not think that I can breakthrough with such ease, unexpectedly."

"I also thought about what has happened is absolutely out of common sense, however, this is a fact that cannot be refuted." Bing Wu's voice also filled with excitement.

Looking at Bing Wu's appearance who are full of excitement, Xie Aoyu's heart hit by a tidal wave, no need to ask anything, because he already knows, Bing Wu definitely also obtained a similar divine elixir as his tricolor spheres, and the butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo , whatever her reason and motive are, she kept it from her knowledge.

Right, the reason why the Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo want to kill me, have to do with this one unknown reason?

Xie Aoyu's heart moves, he felt a bit strange, if the Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo really want to kill him for some reason, then he could not think and guess what the real reason.

The more he thought about it, the more it seems unlikely.

It is something that needs to be known that he and Bing Wu were sharing mutual benefit and growth, it is not his selfish claim, they both indeed able to promote their strength together, such a strong statement, not only the Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo will not kill him, instead she would protect him to ensure his safety.

But in reality it is actually the opposite.

This Butterfly Queen, what kind of goals that this You Lan Ruo

has in her mind?

Xie Aoyu's mind was in a mess, as everything seems to be beyond the reach of his understanding, he was only able to understand a gist of it, the Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo, regardless of Bing Wu's feeling, and despite he and Bing Wu able to magically enhanced their strength just by being together, it seems to have been an obligation to kill him, and for that there must be a reason. A strong reason that makes this Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo unable to change her mind no matter what.

The problem is, Xie Aoyu ask back at himself about his identity, whether the status, the power, but also on the overall aspects, all in all, the difference between he and the Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo, is like heaven and earth, and if so, for what reason for her to be so determined to kill him?

He could not fathom any of it at all!

"Aoyu, what are you hovering in mind." Wu Bing whispered.

Xie Aoyu will ponder on this question for the time being, and then he gently caress Bing Wu's delicate face, "I want us to kiss every day, who knows that my strength may reach up to Heavenly King realm in just a few days? "

"Pei! You, there's no way it's possible, do not let your imagination running wild." Bing Wu said with her cheeks turn red.

"Oh, it is not necessarily true." Xie Aoyu with his "hehehe" laugh as his hand reached for Bing Wu's smooth chin, causing him to further captivate by her beauty.

Simply a definition of what beauty should be, Bing Wu is just absolutely gorgeous.

Xie Aoyu is unusually aroused, so he bowed his head and initiated a kiss again.

Their lips touched.

It was exciting as before, but Xie Aoyu and Bing Wu had felt previously while their strength was upgraded, it caused tremors throughout their body.

But this time the tricolor spheres just barely vibrates twice.

The blue beads seemed to be compatible with Bing Wu, apparently the blue beads and the divine elixir within Bing Wu's body seems to mutually correlate well, and the tricolor spheres play the role as the bridge to connect the two.

After a while, the two of them pulled themselves apart from each other.

"It seems there was no response." Bing Wu said, looked slightly disappointed.

“Well, there is no way that great things can happen on an ongoing basis.” Xie Aoyu said, as he pulled Bing Wu into his arms, and whispered, "Bing Wu, I have a question to ask you."

Bing Wu blinked and said, "About what?"

Xie Aoyu seemed to hesitate before saying: “If one day, your master and I become enemies, and you are given a chance to help, which side will you choose?”

“No, there is no possibility of the two of you will be enemies.” Bing Wu shook her head.

"I mean, if." Xie Aoyu looked at her, sighed heavily in his heart, because he knows that for Bing Wu, this is a very cruel choice for her to make, but this matter has been developed, and doomed to go toward this direction ,

Bing Wu looks as confused as she said: "I do not know."

Xie Aoyu can see there is fear and anxiety flashes through Bing Wu's eyes, somehow his heartache, and so he said softly: "Ok, let's not talk about this; you said that you were rushing over here to tell me about something."

"That's right, I almost forgot about this important matter." Bing Wu patting her chest, "My academy and together with some Te Luo City's major powers have decided to capture the Gold Eater

Beast tonight."

"Tonight? That soon?" Xie Aoyu said, felt somewhat amazed.

Chuckled lightly, Bing Wu said: "Actually they have already reached the agreement more than ten days ago, since they all have encountered the Gold Eater Beast together, moreover this Gold Eater Beast, although has attracted the attention of many parties, contrary to these genuine masters as the matter does not particularly interest them. in view of these genuine masters, all of the naturally are not willing to make the Gold Eater Beast conflict with each other, thus decided to let the younger generation to carry out the deed, to rely solely on their skills, and in this aspect, the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group and the Star Luo Mercenary Group's younger generation were not here before, so everyone is actually waiting for them to start, therefore they have the movement of the Gold Eater Beast sealed in the region, now participants from both sides have already arrived, so everyone must start moving tonight. "

"I will also join in the fun" For Xie Aoyu, the Gold Eater Beast was not his primary goal; instead it is the Golden Life Tree.

He has the wooden attribute, if he is able to obtains the Golden Life Tree, he is confident that he can make his wooden attribute to be his most formidable attacking attribute, and when the time comes, his battle efficiency will certainly increase exponentially!

They both went out of the room immediately.

As the Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo's disciple, it is naturally for Bing Wu to participate in hunting the Gold Eater Beast, therefore the location where the Gold Eater Beast is located, is known by Bing Wu.

As soon as they left the inn, Xie Aoyu somehow has a feeling that is difficult to describe in words.

This feeling is very strange, as if he was being watched by a pair of sinister eyes, make Xie Aoyu to feel very uncomfortable, he quickly turned his head to look, only to discovered, that there was no sight of any man on the roof of the inn.

"What's wrong?" Bing Wu.

"Nothing." Xie Aoyu smiled, "Bing Wu, you said that your master was helping her demonic beast, the Wind -Fire Meteor Rainbow Butterfly's evolution, right?"

"That's right." Bing Wu nodded her head as she said.

Xie Aoyu said: "Do you know when your master can go out?"

Bing Wu said after thinking for a moment: "Master said the longest, would be three months, the fastest would be a month, basically nothing is concrete."

"Now it is already three months, right." Xie Aoyu said.

“Three months and ten days.” Bing Wu replied.

Ten days, in other words, there is a possibility for her to already come out, Xie Aoyu whispered inwardly, as he turned his head to look once more, and still could not discover anything, but somehow the feeling of being observed secretly actually still existed.

Once they crossed the street, at the entrance of the inn, a shadow of a slender person emerged, she is none other than, the Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo!

[\[1\]](#) (TN: In the paragraph, the author did not say whether the water and the fire mentioned are attributes, but I strongly believed all those elements above are attributes.)

Chapter 87: The Younger Generation, Gathering Of Geniuses (Part 1) ^{*}—

Outside the Te Luo City, on the top of a hill.

Jowers, the younger generation who is also a direct descendant of the Pasa's clan, put both of his hands behind, as he looks at the distance in south, where under the moonlight, you can see so many shadows were moving, evidence that a lot of people have already gathered there.

"Sorsk, do you really think that Gold Eater Beast might have been a great help to me?" Jowers casually asked.

The man who called Sorsk is a man who holds a handheld folding fan, as he confidently replied: "As long as young master able to get hold of the Gold Eater Beast, your achievements will be unique in terms of metal aspect and what matter the most, that it would be an unparallel boost to your battle strength."

Jowers then said, "That's it?"

"For now, that's it." Sorsk then said in much lower voice, "If young master wants to become the next Patriarch, you need to fulfill two conditions."

"Fill me in." Jowers said.

"First of all, Xie Aoyu, who is Chalice's most hated person, if we can hand him over to Chalice, we would gain an enormous support from his side." Sorsk spoke as he looked at the Te Luo City, "Xie Aoyu will be here, and considering his relationship with Bing Wu, he is certainly will be joining us in the competition for the Gold Eater Beast, and this is a golden opportunity for you, young master."

As Xie Aoyu's name was mentioned, there seems a trace of smile on Jowers's lips "Say, were it not because of Xie Aoyu, the next Patriarch will certainly be that waste, Chalice, and as the title is now closer to me, I want to thank him for that."

Sorsk continued: "The second condition will be the key to determining whether or not young master deserves to be the next Patriarch."

"Oh, really?" Jowers furrowed his eyebrows.

Sorsk then said: "Qin Yueyi!"

Once Jowers hear that name, he immediately lost in thought.

Outsiders may not know that even if the Tian Luo's Qin clan is not part of the ancient families or have any ancient family's roots, but to be able to stand shoulder by shoulders with Pasa clan and Desai clan, two of the top three families, there is a reason for that. It is because there is an ancient figure hidden behind the Qin clan, the very existence of the continent's ten king.

Who dares to contend with the ten king's realm expert?

Never mind one's own strength is considered as otherworldly, but once this person chose to shirks, and then wait for an opportunity for assassination instead, who would have the ability to prevent themselves from being assassinated? And so the Qin clan even without those ancient families roots, is an entity that no one dares to mess with.

"Young master afraid?" Sorsk laughed.

Jowers's eyes narrowed, "You have a plan?"

Sorsk nodded slightly.

Because of Sorsk's ideas and schemes, this once nobody who had not previously been given attention by Pasa clan and those of the younger generation, has now become one of the most popular candidates for the next Patriarch, therefore he still put his trust entirely to the man before him as he smiled and said: "I love to gamble, betting is my way of life!"

"I believe that we will be the winner!" Sorsk smiled and told his plan to Jowers.

Jowers, after listening to the plan, burst out laughing, "Good, good, good!"

Sorsk then said indifferently: "Young Master, our main focus

now is the Gold Eater Beast and Xie Aoyu!"

.....

When they left Te Luo City, the moon already rose above the willow tree.

Xie Aoyu, and Bing Wu continue to strode forward, to the Gold Eater Beast's region, and at the same time, they also want to take this opportunity to adapt with their newly increased power.

The sharp rise of the intermediate-level spirit realm to the peak of the upper-level spirit realm, Xie Aoyu felt as if he was dreaming, but he knows that this is an irrefutable fact. While him experimenting with his newly power level, he cannot help but to look towards Bing Wu's back, as Xie Aoyu's heart filled with mixed feelings.

He did not know how to deal with Bing Wu's master.

Alright, let's not dwell much on that old woman, Xie Aoyu shook his head, as just a short while ago, the Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo gave him the feeling of being pressured between the life and death on his back. [\[1\]](#)

He also started to bringing things together as he studies his current level.

Upper-level Spirit realm, the amount of the battle Qi compared with the intermediate-level spirit realm has increased considerably a lot.

As the battle Qi upgrades, first of all, Xie Aoyu's mastery of his fighting skills will amplify as well as the might of the skills which will become formidable than ever, along with his speed and strength which would also experience a tremendous amount of improvement.

Once they are fully adapted, they already left the Te Luo City about six or seven miles away.

Before them, there are towering ablaze.

A team of people rushed out.

"The Imperial Crown Mercenary Group!" Once Xie Aoyu saw the crown symbol on their chest-plate armor, his face's complexion becomes heavy suddenly.

The number of the participants from the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group amounted to approximately more than 200 people, each and every one of them have their spirits trembling with excitement, they wear uniforms, complete with swords on their belt, led by a young man who looked about 20 years old, carrying a long sword, as his pair of eyes peering towards Xie Aoyu, with his eyebrows knit together show a portion of his anger.

"Are you Xie Aoyu?" That young man asked, coldly.

Although Xie Aoyu inwardly alert, but on the outside, he still looked very calm, "That's correct, I do not know for what reason you took so many people to block my way, is it because you have lost the gloves, and want to take it back by force from me? "

That young man coldly said: "That pair of gloves thing, can wait, and besides, what did you feel when you see my face for the first time, isn't it a little familiar to you?"

As he was reminded by the man in front of him, Xie Aoyu discovered that this person is indeed a little bit familiar.

It was so familiar, but he had never met him, but somehow the man's face was not unfamiliar to him.

"Valencia?" Xie Aoyu's brows furrowed.

"That was my big brother!" The young man's face suddenly darkened, "I am his younger brother Valentez! You killed my brother, and you have to pay for it now!"

What was expected to come finally came.

Initially because Xie Aoyu must treat and cure Ziyan, as time was pressing, but then that Valencia guy was blocking his way, since the very beginning, he knows that between him and the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group will not ends well as they are destined to

become archenemies.

However he did not regret for what he had done.

Even if the same thing happened again, he would still choose that very option.

He just did not think that it will come so quickly [\[2\]](#), Xie Aoyu indifferently replied: "Your brother can only have himself to blame. If he did not force me to the dead end, I would not decapitate him."

"I do not care anymore, as I am now going to decapitate you at once, to serve as a revenge for my elder brother!" Valentez thundered ferociously.

As he roars, the sound of a sword out of its sheath follow.

Only to see that more than 200 members of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group also released their long swords.

Long swords within the fierce flames under the moonlight, thus making the atmosphere filled with glittering lights, with more than 200 mercenaries move in together, and shout in unison, capable to make anyone trembles in fear against their imposing manner.

"You are going to use the human wave tactics against me?" Xie

Aoyu said with a heavy tone, as he did not think that Valentez would be so crafty, by choosing not to use his own hands.

"Although I am very confident that I can kill you, but I don't want to have my time and my battle Qi wasted here." Valentez certainly have no desire from the beginning to act by himself alone.

Of course Xie Aoyu understands what goes on inside Valentez's mind.

He not only wanted revenge, but also, to ensure that he would be able to hunt and seize the Gold Eater Beast with his hands, he needs to reserved his power so that it can be used when hunting the Gold Eater Beast, and so this is why he choose to not fight by himself to prevent him from wasting his energy.

Similarly, even if Xie Aoyu would be able to overcome this battle, it is inevitable that it would consume him lots of battle Qi.

Once his battle Qi squandered and since those who participate in the Gold Eater Beast's hunting are top -notch individuals within the younger generation, his chances will also be greatly reduced.

This battle, even if he ends up as the victor, he would cost his chances in the competition for the Golden Life Tree.

But if he does not fight, he will not be able to break through the situation.

Xie Aoyu found that he really is in big trouble this time, because if Bing Wu is not here right now, he could easily use his Earth-Escaping technique to leave, but now his hands are tied.

“Ready!” Valentez shouted coldly, as he moves backwards slightly.

“Kill!”

More than 200 mercenaries roar simultaneously.

The cold dense aura of the long swords together with the streaks of cold lights across the way, as all those mercenaries rushed forward to kill the enemy before them.

[*] (TN: The title 风云际会 means literally the meeting of the wind and clouds, which sounds cooler but I changed later on to Gathering of Geniuses as for the readers to understands the actual meaning behind the words)

[1] (TN: related to the scene at the inn on the last chapter)

[2] (TN:the revenge)

Chapter 88: The Younger Generation, Gathering Of Geniuses (Part 2)

For those of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group, Xie Aoyu actually have prepared to deal with them all, but he thought they would after him because of the two Earthen-Soul stones, even though the size of these Earthen-Soul stones just as a grain of rice, it is after all, an extremely rare item, so he had already figured out the method on how to deal with situations like that, but then it was totally beyond him that all of these actually because of that Valencia guy.

This is Valencia's brother Valentinez. [\[1\]](#)

Both of their names are similar, but they have different personalities, this Valentinez clearly quite manipulative, as he was able to size up the situation, and he did not allow his personal grievances over his emotions, Xie Aoyu also have to be wary and paid more attention on the latter.

He had already become the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group's arch-nemesis.

He remembered that the Deputy Head of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group, [Wei Pang Se](#) and the Valencia 's brothers looks very similar , so it is clear that they are related by blood.

Making enemies like them is something that not concerns him at all.

Only what frustrated him the most was it is likely that he would lose his chances in the competition for the Golden Life Tree.

"Bing Wu . " Xie Aoyu whispered.

" I know . " Bing Wu smiled.

They do not need words, as they will still be able to understand each other's thoughts, a sense of mutual understanding which is difficult to describe.

First, they need to capture the leader! Xie Aoyu raised his Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword and then strode forward, with the corner of his eyes had already locked into Valentine, to seize this guy, he must maintain his fastest speed; as this is the only right path.

The close combat of the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword!

Since these people are trained elite mercenaries, Xie Aoyu's attack will be a shot to kill.

A sword streak across the sky, as it was then split into three glowing swords in the middle of the air.

"Dang dang dang"

As these three glowing swords contains Xie Aoyu's battle-Qi, each one of it instantly crushing three long swords of those mercenaries, and as they flies back, they kills, and have 6-7 people knocked out.

"Long swords battle formation!" Valentinez shouted as when he saw Xie Aoyu's ruthless ferocious attack, he sneered in his heart, 'you're wise, and know how to use a trick to kill, to deal with the problem as soon as possible, but I will not let you achieve what you wished for.

With his loud commanding voice, seems to be more than 200 mercenaries began to move quickly at once.

They were moving like lantern with a carousel of paper-horses, sort of manner.

In the blink of an eye, they formed a battle position, and besieged Xie Aoyu who stood in the midst, their bright swords rattling, along with a dense cold murderous intent.

Battle formation!

Xie Aoyu's eyebrows furrowed, it is important to be aware of this battle formation as on the battlefield, it is also known as magnificent army with thousands of men and horses, one of the most powerful formation strategy.

In normal circumstances, the trump card of this kind of battle

formation is the strength of the mercenary's force.

Valentinez, to one's surprise, is the person in control of the long sword battle formation of the mercenaries soldiers, a clear evident that his status is beyond ordinary, as it is also indicates that he is there with a determination to kill.

Such as tight siege, make Xie Aoyu wants to use his Earth-Escaping technique.

With his current upper-level Spirit realm, his Earth-Escaping technique can be use up to a distance of 14 meters, yet he would still not be able to break through the encirclement.

"The Imperial Crown Mercenary Group is indeed living up to its name as the number one and the largest among us the mercenary group ah, truly a disgrace of our mercenary circles ah, to go as far to employed a battle formation against a juvenile."

Just as Xie Aoyu prepare to use his trump card, a clear and sonorous voice coming from the east.

Then a group of mercenaries, and probably have more than 200 people, quickly darted out, with each and every one's hand holding a heavy double edge sword, by wearing the grave and stern expression on their faces as they pointed their heavy double edge sword towards the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group's mercenaries.

"Roque, what do you mean by this?" Valentinez coldly said.

The smiling man called Roque said: "It means nothing."

Both of them have a considerable number of people, so even if he does not want to, Valentinez had to endure his anger, "I just want to avenge my brother, why do you want to stop me."

"Revenge for your brother?" Roque was somewhat a little stunned, obviously he does not know anything about this, "I do not care about you want to avenge your brother, as long as my Star Luo Mercenary Group are in this place, no one will be able to touch this Junior Xie, if not, they must prepare to become the enemy of the Star Luo Mercenary Group!"

Xie Aoyu noticed the star symbol on the chest armors worn by Roque and others.

They all come from the Star Luo Mercenary Group.

At that time, Xie Aoyu begun to realize the impact of the Star Luo's token.

"You want to against us the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group? Humph, Roque, do not think that your father is the Star Luo Mercenary Group's deputy head, you can literally take a hand in, I'll tell you, you are not qualified enough to provoke a war between our two mercenaries factions! "Valentinez sneered.

"You're right, I was not qualified, but to ensure the safety of Junior Xie is the order that was issued personally by our head." Roque said.

Valentinez's face full with ridicule, as he is simply does not believe that.

It is no wonder , since after all , the matter about Xie Aoyu possessed the Star Luo 's token , has not spread yet , even the order was personally issued by the head of the Star Luo Mercenary Group, the outsiders are not likely to know .

Xie Aoyu 's background is nothing much , so Valentinez did not believe that the Star Luo will protect him and simply thought it was a scheme by Roque to frighten him .

"You said that you got the order from your head to protect him, I really cannot afford to believe an inch of it . " Valentinez waves his hand, as he coldly said, "Kill, I want him to be dead!"

This time, he ordered to kill.

Roque also waved his hand, "Kill, protect Junior Xie, and you will be rewarded by the Head!"

More than 200 of Star Luo Mercenary Group's mercenaries lift their heavy-double-edge swords simultaneously, clearly, that these mercenaries are also Star Luo Mercenary Group's elite forces.

"Dang dang dang"

Dozens of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group's mercenaries were shocked as they were forced to fall back repeatedly, this does not mean they are not good enough, but it is totally beyond their expectation that those Star Luo Mercenary Group's mercenaries to really actually dared to raised their weapons against them.

Looking at this, Valentinez's eyes widened, "Roque, you really have guts to provoke a war!"

"Why not!" Roque said.

"You" Valentinez want to reply to Roque's words, but he got his tongue-tied.

He is now in the point of no return, he had no choice or option but to continue forward, unfortunately with the current situation, he will not be able to proceed forth, but if he stops, then it would make him look as if he was afraid of Roque, during their stay in Te Luo City they always compete with each other strength, so he would suffer [a great loss of face](#), his reputation would be affected; but if he do not stop, and to actually choose to proceed with the battle, he will also end up to be in disadvantage, as the strength the two of them are pretty much about the same, but with Xie Aoyu's existence, apparently have given the Star Luo Mercenary Group the upper hand, not to forget that there is also the disciple of the Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo.

Valentinez is currently riding a tiger. [\[2\]](#)

"What are you two doing ah? Everyone is waiting for you, why are you dilly-dallying here anyway?"

Xie Aoyu raised his head to look, only to see that there are more than 10 people coming from the south, they also seem to be mercenaries, led by a young man who seemed to be in 20 years old, on their chests there is a symbol that resembles a star crossed.

Star Cross Mercenary Group's people.

"Feili, do you also want to join in the fun?" Roque said casually.
[\[3\]](#)

"Our Stars Cross Mercenary Group does not have the courage to compete against you." Feili replied with a hehe laughed, he then went straight to the Valentinez's side, "Valentinez, you should give some face to the Star Luo Mercenary Group's head, alright? Regardless of what has been said, this Junior Xie has Star Luo's token. "

The look on Valentinez's face began to change, "Star Luo's token?!"

Xie Aoyu smiled, as he took out the Star Luo's token and shook it twice.

"Good, good, we'll wait and see." Valentinez put down a tough sentence, and departed.

Once they are all gone, only then Roque began to move.

Xie Aoyu said with a smile: "Thank you for your help."

"Junior Xie is the holder of the Star Luo's token, I did it, because it is my duty." Roque said, "What's more, with Junior Xie's ability, all those Valentinez's man, would not be able to hold Junior Xie." He took a quick look at Xie Aoyu who was walking side by side with Bing Wu, "I assume that Junior Xie also here because of the Gold Eater Beast, right ?."

They were chatting as they walked.

It can be seen from the distance that there is a cave on the mountain, which has gathered a large number of people.

"Your Excellency has also come for the Gold Eater Beast as well, am I right?" Xie Aoyu asked.

"I am, however, most of the people who come here have the same idea as mine." Roque pointed at Feili together with Valentinez from the distance, "Junior Xie, can you see Feili's attribute?"

Xie Aoyu answered: "Metal."

"That's correct, that's the reason why Feili must seize the Gold Eater Beast no matter what, look at him, who seems to be so close

with Valentinez, and I dare say that they both have been working in some sort of business deal together." Roque said casually, "Other than that guy Feili, Tian Luo Academy also has a few elites, which Miss Bing Wu should know better than me."

Xie Aoyu looks at Bing Wu.

Bing Wu replied, "Tian Luo Academy, as far as I know there are at least three people which are noteworthy."

[1] (TN: I changed the name from Valentez to Valentinez since it sounded more..less awkward? I named him as Valentez before since it has “斯” (es/ez) on its end. I know,I know..but my chinese-western naming sense is not good enough)

[*] (TN:the burly crown guy in the Batulu’s cave)

[*] (TN: If he go with the option)

[2] (TN: Unable to back down)

[3] (TN: My friend suggested Philip but there is no "浦" which stand for "P" as Philip is translated in chinese 菲力浦. However, there is a literal translation for this pinyin which is stand for "fillet" XD So I decided to remain with Feili)

Chapter 89: The Younger Generation, Gathering Of Geniuses (Part 3)

Three people? That much?

Xie Aoyu and Roque looked at each other, seems to feel a little surprised, as one's must know, that most of the Tian Luo Academy's students who went venturing the world did not return to Te Luo City.

From here it shows how formidable this Tian Luo Academy.

And so, many like Roque which makes this continent's youth competition as a platform for them to forge their way for greater success in the world, and this also makes Xie Aoyu more cautious since the attraction of a champion title is just too strong.

On the continent of this big, talented individuals have come forth in large numbers, prodigies; there are also mad geniuses (鬼才) which come in innumerable numbers. [\[1\]](#)

To pass all the way through, it would not be easy.

"Who are they?" Xie Aoyu asked.

Bing Wu pointed her finger at the front-center of the crowd, where there stands a burly man with a height of 1.9 meters tall, "He called Delle, his background history is a mystery, and it is said he

and the former dean of our academy has a close relationship, he studied to become a specialist off heavy sword, as the foundation of his body is very strong, he is also said to have been cultivated a Berserker race's unique fighting skills... .. a quite barbaric technique."

"Standing on the top left of the crowd, is the man who looked so feeble and weak, coming from Desai's clan, called Gert, in Desai's clan, he is also known as a genius, but no one knows how strong is he, Li Chaofeng had sparred with him, he failed thrice miserably, and Li Chaofeng said, at that time, Gert was not even using his full power."

"There is also another one, as he is among the people who were rushing forward, he is the junior of the Pasa clan's family branch named Jowers, and together with Feili, he also possessed the same attribute which is metallic, his strength is quite threatening."

Bing Wu introduced the trio as Xie Aoyu observes each of them.

Based on the external appearance alone, Delle is by far the most prominent, but somehow the one who is the most difficult to read is Gert who seems to be lying low, as for Jowers, apparently there's no one is able to see through him.

Exuded the noble manner of being a member of one of the major clan, Jowers greets everyone with a smile.

"Miss Bing Wu also missed another person." Roque said.

Xie Aoyu said: "Who?"

"Jowers's personal servant Sorsk. Delle, Gert, these two people, I do not know about them, but this Sorsk guy, I know." Roque's expression changed to be heavy, "Back then one of my friends took on a mission, at that time, Sorsk also took the same mission, and so he was following along, in the end, they met groups of bandits three times during the mission, but eventually just by simply relying on Sorsk's strategy, with only the price of using less than thirty people, they managed to wipe out all the bandits in just a short time."

Xie Aoyu and Bing Wu looked at each other, as they were taken aback.

For such a noteworthy person, Xie Aoyu would certainly take into his accounts.

"How about his strength?" Xie Aoyu can see Sorsk's strength is not weak, but he could not see through the latter's realm, obviously that person has its own method to conceal his real strength.

"Not sure, but with his age, he should have the qualifications needed to participate in the hunting competition of the Gold Eater Beast." Roque smiled wryly as he said, "Jowers's attribute is metal, with his help, I'm afraid the owner of the Gold Eater Beast has been determined since beginning and apparently I am not"

Xie Aoyu casually said: "That may not be necessarily true."

Listen to Xie Aoyu's tone of voice which seems to be full of confidence, Roque's heart was stirred, as the latter managed to make that Xing Luo to bestowed the Star Luo's token to him in person, obviously is not a simple one, it looks like Xie Aoyu might just have a way, possibly.

"Junior Xie, if things going smoothly as you plan to, would it possible for you to give to me some of the Gold Eater Beast's bone and a bottle of Golden blood?" Roque asked.

Gold Beast Eater is one special existence, its bones and blood is the best material for weapons refining, or to even create a Heavenly King-level weapon.

"Sure, no problem." Xie Aoyu laughed, "But only if we can get the Gold Eater Beasts, not to mention Delle, even Gert, Jowers, Sorsk, Feili, and Valentinez with a total of six people, no one would have the nerve to guarantee that there would be no another young experts will emerge afterwards."

"Indeed, Te Luo City particularly has a large flow of people coming in and out, mercenaries, groups of bandits, those who were venturing and stopped in town to spend a night, so for a few masters to emerge, are not surprising at all." Roque said as he naturally clearer with the situation in Te Luo City.

Xie Aoyu said: "So, no one can guarantee themselves as the final winner, but we must never underestimate ourselves, it's important to have confidence, for us to have a chance."

He might said so outwardly, but inwardly, if he previously thought that his chance of winning percentage is 70%, but now it has been reduced to 30%.

Xie Aoyu secretly thinks of a way to succeed.

But later his train of thought was interrupted by someone.

"Isn't that the Butterfly Queen's disciple,Bing Wu?" Jowers, shouted in the distance.

His voice has caught the attention of other people.

Originally in the light of the tacit understanding of all parties, that all the younger generation should get off ones hand from each other [\[2\]](#), however Bing Wu is not only beautiful, but also is a Queen Butterfly's disciple, so naturally she would attract attention, Bing Wu initially wanted to stay beside Xie Aoyu and do not want to be found, but Jowers, with only one line of words, has exposed her in front of the crowd.

All eyes turned to a direction simultaneously. [\[3\]](#)

And among those are Delle and Gert, which were quickly turned around and walked towards them.

"Bing Wu, I have been looking for you and your venturing group,

but I could not find you guys at all, and yet we still managed to meet here." Delle strode down over, as his eyes stuck at Bing Wu, he completely ignored Xie Aoyu.

Gert does not speak, but that expression of his, betrayed his thoughts.

The feeling of a rival in loves ah, Xie Aoyu mumbled in his heart; as he indeliberately glanced at the slow walking Jowers, feeling that this guy did this on purpose [\[4\]](#)

"Is there a reason for Senior Delle looking for me?" Bing Wu reaches and linking hers with Xie Aoyu's arm, an effort to show to all, that she is taken.

This one action of hers, make Delle and Gerth halt their footsteps.

Within Tian Luo Academy, those whose aggressively pursued Bing Wu's love are the three most powerful students. Those three are Li Chaofeng, Delle, and Gert, excluded Li Chaofeng who was his real motive is to get the Butterfly Queen's guidance instead of love between man and woman, so there are only two people left, Delle and Gert.

This sudden turn of events, as Bing Wu intimately leaned her body against Xie Aoyu's body, make one's eyes bulged wide at once, the two looked towards Xie Aoyu intensely.

"Delle." Taking one step forward is Delle, holding out his large hand.

Xie Aoyu shivered inwardly, as he seems to be under impression that between Delle and Gert, that pretty boy Gert would be the most likely the schemer ones, but he seriously did not expect that the first person that comes to dealing with Bing Wu's man, unexpectedly, is a man whose outward appearance seems boorish, Delle, who became the first person to come out to sort out the situation, while concealing his fiery jealousy within.

You really can't judge a person by their appearance alone!

Xie Aoyu embeds this warning deep inside his heart.

"Xie Aoyu." Xie Aoyu also held out his hand.

Two hands clenched each other.

A portion of simple and profound sound of strength can be heard, furthermore there is no involvement of battle-qi at all, and it is simply a pure strength.

Xie Aoyu smiled calmly, as rivals in love met, a secret contest is unavoidable, and the guy not even uses his Qi, only pure strength to compete.

Delle's eyes had a trace of surprise, because as he is a Berserker, his most powerful quality is his strength, no matter how much he

exerted his physical strength, apparently Xie Aoyu can cope with it easily, it's totally caught him in surprise.

"This is the first time I met Your Excellency, Your Excellency come from the same neighborhood as Miss Bing Wu, right?" Delle release his hand.

"Oh, yes, we grew up together." Xie Aoyu wrapped his hand around Bing Wu as he hugged her, as if to declare, that she is his woman.

Seeing Bing Wu's happy expression, Delle said with a bitter tone: "A childhood sweetheart, it's no wonder when Miss Bing Wu in the academy, she seemed to have no interest towards opposite sex, apparently because she is already taken."

Gert sneered as he said: "It might has not been fully determined yet, as far as I know there is someone who has offended Chalice of Pasa's clan, and it seems that guy named Xie Aoyu, was that person is you, Your Excellency?"

As he said this, Bing Wu's willow leaf shapes eyebrows, rose.

At first he said it still has not been determined yet, but obviously he knows the story behind it yet he deliberately said with questioning tone which was clearly intended to put pressure on Xie Aoyu, how does that not make Bing Wu to feel disgusted.

"Your Excellency's knowledge, contrary to what one might

expect, was quite well-informed." Xie Aoyu said indifferently.

"It is not about being well-informed, but to think that an ignorant boy from a small clan in Langya City, dared to touch the Young Master of Pasa's clan, it was certainly big news ah." Gert said in provoking manner.

Xie Aoyu gently hold Bing Wu who is about to explode, "Listened to your words; it looks like you're afraid of Chalice, tsk tsk, who could have thought that you turns out to be a coward."

Gert was immediately outraged, "Boy, whether you believe it or not, I swear that I am going to kill you."

Xie Aoyu curled his lips, as he felt too lazy to pay this guy attention whose appearance he initially thought was a clever man, but he did not think that this person would turned out to be so frivolous.

"I don't believe it." Jowers, who took the time to come here, said.

"Jowers, did you look down upon me?" Gert raised his voice, "Not to mention him, even the entire Xie clan, with my word alone, would be wiped out completely."

Jowers, laughed as he said: "I don't believe it."

Gert did not think that Jowers would not give him any face, so he could not help but to feel angry.

But then Jowers continued: "If it's simply a Xie's clan, of course you don't have to pay any regard, but don't forget that there is someone behind Xie Aoyu."

"I heard that he has the Star Luo's token, do you think that Pasa's clan would feel scared that easily?" Gert said as he sneered.

"The cause of our headache is not because of that." Jowers, squinted his eyes as he laughed and said, "We are afraid of the female figure that was behind him, hey, there is nothing to be done, as who let this Junior Xie to be fond of living off a woman, right? Of course, I'm not talking about Miss Bing Wu: Miss, I would not have the nerve to do so. "

Gert said: "Qin Yueyi, you're not talking about that little devil, right?" He looked at Xie Aoyu up and down, seemingly to be astonished as he said, "I heard that Qin Yueyi like to bully and torture people, don't tell me that this guy is a masochist? "

[5]

[1] (TN: This is really confusing since up until now there's no sorcerer or wizards appearance in this series (up until ch89..yeah I read it while I translate) .. 鬼才 (in chinese mostly mean wizard, mad scientist *genius*, and *evil sorcerer*), but it does not seems relevant, so I keep mad genius as it is 鬼 = mad devil 才 = gifted / genius until further reading :))

[2] (TN: this sentence somehow confusing, but I am sure it is about flirting)

[3] (一道道目光齐刷刷的投射过去.)

[\[4\]](#) (TN: in regards of his loud shouts).

[\[5\]](#) (TN: Puhahaha! XD)

Chapter 90: The Younger Generation, Gathering Of Geniuses (Part 4)

"Masochist? Haha, really? I actually did not consider it that way!" Jowers, deliberately laughed out loud, "Indeed, those who have always been concerned about his or her appearance is not someone who just wants appearance, those who are concerned with status is not someone who really needs status, and those who are concerned with the rank does not necessarily someone who wants power. Why is that little demon, Qin Yueyi could be tempted in such a way? To go as far as to protect the Xie clan, and all this while, he turned out to be a masochist. "

"Hahah! Is he still a man?" Gert let out a wicked laughed as he said.

Both of them are bursting with laughter.

Xie Aoyu still maintains his calm, some things are better if you just ignore it, wait until we get into the Gold Eater Beast's cave, I hope these two can still laugh so happily.

As they told him the news, Xie Aoyu felt warm in his heart.

Qin Yueyi protects the safety of his Xie's clan.

All this time, Xie Aoyu actually felt very worried about his Xie's clan, though it's still a clan, but in front of these big families, they are nothing.

If there is a hostile party against him, he could run, but if they put Xie's clan as a hostage?

So because of Qin Yueyi, his biggest concern undoubtedly has been removed.

"Hiss"

As he went on along with his thoughts, Xie Aoyu felt his waist in pain, he looked down to see, only to found out that a jealous Bing Wu was glaring at him.

Bing Wu is jealous!

"Bing Wu." Xie Aoyu grabbed her hand, gently stroking, as he whispered.

Bing Wu gave him a cold stare, she turned towards Jowers and Gert as she coldly said: " Miss Yueyi and I are friends , to help him is tantamount to help me , is there a problem? "

" Hikk"

Those high-pitched laughter come to a halt .

Gert would never thought that Bing Wu would came forward to defend Xie Aoyu , his increasingly raging jealousy , making him to

give a sarcastic remark : " Xie Aoyu , if you are a real man , do not hide behind a woman. "

“Hiding? Heh! I 'm just too lazy to entertain clowns. " Xie Aoyu's lips curled, as he took Bing Wu's hand, and move forward, “Bing Wu , how about we go ahead and have a look . "

When Gert saw Xie Aoyu totally ignores him, he gnashed his teeth in rage.

Jowers look with the tail of his eyes, as he chuckled and said: "What's with the anger, once the Gold Eater Beast is captured, I will work with you, allowing you to vent anger you as much as you want, and if possible, then you will still have the opportunity to seize that girl. "

"I want to thank you very much!" Gert stared at Bing Wu's alluring delicate body with his lewd eyes, the shape of her body that made him to salivating.

"We are brothers, what's with the formality?" Jowers said, he laughed and gave a quick look towards Sorsk, the two mutually understand each other as the latter gave a nod, "Sorsk, you accompany Gert for a stroll, I heard that there are lots of pretty girls among the students ah. "

When he heard the word beauty , Gert 's eyes immediately lit up .

Jowers smiled in contempt for a moment, as his gaze later fell on Delle's body.

Over there, Xie Aoyu already holds a meeting together with Li Chaofeng.

Staying together with Li Chaofeng, and continue to be with some of the same venturing students, after all, they have all been through and experienced the life and death situation altogether, so their relationship has improved a lot ever since.

"Aoyu, the Gold Eater Beast's hunting, I'm afraid, me and Bing Wu will only be a spectator." Li Chaofeng said.

Xie Aoyu: "What's going on?"

"I heard something related to tonight Gold Eater Beast's hunting, and was going to let Bing Wu to inform you right away. As I was conveniently seeking for my family relative who is also a teacher in the academy to understand the situation, and according to what he said, this Gold Eater Beast's cave should at least have two or more Gold Eater Beast, and has at least 300 years of history, so it's possible that within the cave there is a form of some type of mystical golden force, so if a lower-level spirit realm like me choose to enter it, I would not be able to avoid the injuries caused by the golden mystical force, even if a middle-level Spirit realm enter it, I'm afraid they will also be greatly affected, as they would not be able to fight at all. "Li Chaofeng said.

"Based on your explanation, that Golden Life Tree must be exist." Xie Aoyu said.

Roque then asked, "Junior Xie, you already can determine what it is?"

Xie Aoyu looked towards the cave entrance, as his mouth replied, "I had read once in a Demonic Beast encyclopedia about the Gold Eater Beast in details, and the book explains, that this golden force form, derived from the Golden Life Tree as the source. "

When talking about the Golden Life Tree, anyone would start to feels excited.

Who does not know about the Golden Life Tree, as it's an absolute holy grade article.

"The Gold Eater Beast capable to make many people to become crazy for it, and if that Golden Life Tree really existed, it would be more attractive than before, Junior Xie, what do you think we should do?" Roque frowned as he said,

Indeed, all those who are here already have an idea of what is inside the cave.

Xie Aoyu sighed: "We have no choice but to act as soon as we see any chance, that golden force form, will cause the number of people who can enter to be minimal, and in regards of the current situation, even if there are no other people who know, and are only known to a few people, they still are not easy to deal with. "

Roque nodded.

Originally as the Gold Eater Beast appeared, those who knew about the truth were not many, in addition to that, there is still that age limit, which states that to participate in ones must be a younger generation, and as it is, most of the young masters do not have the ability to enter the place.

Even so, the number is still quite substantial.

"Why don't we get an edge by striking the first blow?" Roque suggested.

"Don't!" Xie Aoyu disapprove strongly as he said, "That will make us to become everyone target, what we need the most right now is patience, who is not able to resist the temptation to rush forward, will be noticed, even if they are successful, but to keep it to themselves, it's harder than impossible. "

Meanwhile, Feili, Valentez and two other people already arrived first at the cave entrance.

Jowers, Sorsk, Gert also reached at the front.

While Delle, without anyone assistance moves in one direction.

In addition to that, Xie Aoyu and Roque, stood in four directions.

As for others, who are somewhat inferior in strength, or those

whose concealed their real strength while waiting for an opportunity to appear, they all prefer not to be too close to the frontline, in this kind of situation, Xie Aoyu will wait for the other 8 people before him to come out [\[1\]](#)

"HA HA, no one seemed to have the guts to go ahead, so, allows this young master to open the path!" Jowers laughed, as he becomes the first person to go in.

Gert followed as he said: "There's nothing can be done, some people like to hiding behind a woman, which is nothing like a real man at all."

Jowers, Sorsk and Gert took the lead entering the cave's entrance.

As they entered, Feili, Valentez looked towards each other, as they also went in immediately afterwards.

"Junior Xie." Roque said as he took a deep breath.

"Don't worry." Xie Aoyu said as he folded his arms, not even have the slightest intention to move forward.

He is able to restrain himself, but others couldn't.

Those young experts, who were far behind from the frontline started to rushed forward as one by one went in, due to the fear of

losing the best time to seize the treasure, a group of people stormed and then rushed inside the cave's entrance.

"Ah! Not good!"

"Quickly retreat!"

"It seems there is a special force!"

The screams can be heard, the crowd who were rushing in, as well as those who retreated and came out were neither slow. Needless to say, in just a short period of time, the [hualalala](#) resounded until the withdrawals.

Xie Aoyu still stood there and did not seem interested in moving into the cave's entrance.

So calm, as Roque cannot help but to secretly admire him, by relying on his calmness alone, he can be said to be an outstanding individual compared to the rest.

Li Chaofeng looked somewhat anxious, "Aoyu, why are you still not moving forward ah."

"I'm waiting for signals." Xie Aoyu smiled.

"Roar!"

His voice sinking, as an earth-shattering roar belonged to a beast transmits from the inside of the cave.

Xie Aoyu then went into the cave.

As for those experts who were forced out, when they heard the roar of the beast, everything becomes chaotic back as before, as some people could not help but to once again rushed into the cave.

Xie Aoyu is ahead as he dashed all the way forward.

As soon as he entered into the cave in at least 20 meters of distance, he could feel a share of difficulty to speak as a pressure emerged and penetrate through him, as if there is a portion of a strange singular force of oppression coming through.

On the ground, and the mountain wall has specks of golden light flickered.

These are precisely the portion of the mystical golden force.

Xie Aoyu's tricolor sphere trembles, and the pressure of those golden forces suddenly dissipated, and he is now hardly restricted (TN: in his movement).

Such changes caused Xie Aoyu to feel a very pleasant surprise.

He does not need to use up his battle-qi to resist the pressure of

the golden force, from this aspect alone; he already has an advantage compared to others.

However Roque is out of the question, as he currently uses his battle-qi to resist the golden force.

Behind them, the screams of people can be heard once again.

People stormed endlessly as if they were some sort of surging tides , and yet , there are only 10 more people who remained, including those middle-level Spirit realm experts who looks quite imposing , as their walks with much difficulty , every step by step taken is extremely challenging.

But among all, there are two people who are their presence forced Xie Aoyu and Roque to notice them.

Both men are just like Roque, looking nothing but ordinary, they only need to exert a little amount of battle - qi to resist the pressure of the golden force, they are actually bandits in disguise, one hand holding a pitch - black dagger; and one hand holding a spear, apparently seems to be a knight, but their mounts seems incapable to move freely within the cave due to the pressure of the golden force.

In addition of these two men, there are ten people who had already entered the cave.

Xie Aoyu watched, as he mumbled inwardly: Things are going to

get busy!

[1] (TN: He want the 8 people, Feili, Jowers and the rest to make the first move and see the result before decide his next move).

[*] (TN: * crashing sound)

Chapter 91: Gold Eater Beast, Golden Life Tree (Part 1)

Far behind the frontline, a rogue and a knight emerged as the two of them did not even try to pass over Xie Aoyu and Roque. Their sluggishly followed closely from behind, when Xie Aoyu quickens his pace, they also quicken theirs. As the result, the distance of both sides throughout the trip is merely about four meters, precisely a pretty good distance to launch an attack.

(TN: I decided to use a rogue instead of bandit as it sounds much more proper, I mean a rogue cultivator without a sect, rather than a bandit, even if the raw clearly state bandit/thief, but rogue brings much wider perspectives and it also can be use as a replacement for bandit.)

Xie Aoyu secretly observes.

He discovered that these two are somewhat very familiar with each other(TN: well coordinated, mutual/tacit understanding); they ought to be so throughout the journey, rather than act individually.

"Let's go." Xie Aoyu said to Roque.

They both speed up their movements as they forge ahead.

Inside the cave, the binding strength of the golden force becoming stronger and stronger, and so in order to advance, Roque

and others need to use their battle-qi to resist the golden force as the forces also getting more and more sharper.

Xie Aoyu as he is not affected at all by the golden force was able to advance forward with ease, causing Roque to exclaim in astonishment. The cave is quite deep, as they had walked more than 200 meters in distance, before they reached the end of the cave.

The end is exceptionally spacious.

And so the battle (TN: which will take place here later) will also be going to be extremely intense.

The Gold Eater Beast is quite fierce, but in Xie Aoyu's eyes, one can see that, Jowers and others are not going to be of much use at all.

All of them are currently being blocked by the golden force.

"Roar!"

The Gold Eater Beast roars, the golden light on its whole body seemed natural and poised, forcing Jowers, Valentine and others to fall back, the beast imitate their movement by also retreated two steps backward, as its glare like a tiger watching its prey toward everyone including Xie Aoyu.

Meanwhile, the golden force within the cave starts to become

frantic.

Apparently it is using the golden force to unleash one fierce attack.

The external appearance of the Gold Eater Beast looks like a wolf, but fierce like a tiger, and golden scales covering all over its body, even the eyes, and the horns are golden, making it look like a pile of gold.

"It manipulates the golden force, let us all attack it together first, and then we can discuss everything afterwards." Valentinez shouted out loud, as he brandishes his sword at once and dashed forward.

But as soon as he rushed forward for the first two steps, he was surprised to find, except for Feili that responded, none among the others who made their movements, making his face to turned red, as he felt utterly embarrassed, while at the same time, also realized that all of the ten people who are inside the cave are not foolish.

"Roar! Roar!"

All those ten people seem to be fighting and scheming against each other, which is actually benefiting the Gold Eater Beast the most, at the latter seizes the chance to control the golden force frantically, making the pressure within the cave to become more and more intense.

Gradually excluding Xie Aoyu, all the people here have no option but to greatly increase the amount of their battle-qi to resist. Around the top of the mountain walls, the golden light is getting more and more concentrated, went from originally tiny specks, to faintly converge to become a tract of land (TN: all those specks of lights come from all direction and merged, become bigger and wider than before), Xie Aoyu also put out an appearance of someone who is trying to resist by using his battle-Qi, "Everyone, once these golden specks of forces merge and become one tract of land, then, it is likely that it will be part of the beast's golden shield, at that time, our strength will be limited to at least 70%, while the Gold Eater Beast's fighting strength will likely be double due to its golden shield. "

"What should we do then?" Feili asked.

"Attack the mountain walls or the ground; destroy any part of the surface and stones that have the metallic element, only by doing so we can break the transformation of the golden force from becoming its golden shield." Xie Aoyu lowers his voice as he said.

As he heard the words, Jowers, looked towards Sorsk.

As a strategist, Sorsk dabbled from all angles and in regard of this he also knows, which later he gave a slight nod.

They communicate with their eyes, and soon afterwards, all of them raised their weapons.

"Roar!"

The Gold Eater Beast roared.

This frantic force of gold suddenly become violent, an extremely frightening pressure comes from all directions, and at the same time, golden lights magnificently flourished from its body, this dazzling golden light which then assumed the appearance of arrows in the mid air.

This is its unique golden Enchantment Golden arrow!

"Swish, Swish, Swish, Swish .."

Dense, concentrated golden arrows looking like drops of rain shrouded within the cave, swiftly moving forward.

"Smash these metallic rocks into pieces!" Xie Aoyu shouted out loud, he was the first to thrust a sword into the ground.

Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword effused boundless amount of battle-qi internally, directly smashed the golden stones which emerges on the ground into pieces, resulting a portion of terrifying force gushing out.

"Ka Ka Ka Ka"

Then one crack after another began to spread everywhere.

A large expanse of golden rocks was destroyed into pieces.

At the same time when countless of crushed rocks flipped and flying in the air, he use them to smash the Golden arrow that was shot swiftly towards him.

The rest of the people were also struck with arrows one after another.

But not everyone can be shot that easily, on Jowers's side, there is Gert with his punch, on Valentine's side there is Feili to punch those, on the rogue's side, there is a knight to undertake the task (TN: to block), while Delle only has to rely on himself.

And so the rest of the people (TN: beside Gert, Feili, the knight guy, and Delle) did not even need to throw their punches.

As the arrows being punched, an immediate effect taken place, as explosives burst of sound was produced.

Those metallic stones had been destroyed, and the almost finished form golden shield was gradually dissipated immediately, the pressure that creates the golden force also suddenly reduces, making everyone to feel calm again.

With the flying debris still in the air, a figure suddenly dashed forward.

Xie Aoyu can see clearly, it was that rogue who was behind him.

He was waiting for the opportunity, relying on his speed at this moment, as he must break through the Gold Eater Beast, and steal the most precious object..... The Golden Life Tree!

His quick speed, even Xie Aoyu could not help but to see him in a new light.

His speed is really quite inconceivable, there is almost no remnants of his figure at all (TN: blur), as he managed to instantaneously breaks through the Gold Eater Beast's defense, and landed behind its body, flushes away to the most inner side.

"Che!"

Sorsk smiled, as if he had been anticipated this in advance, he opened his folded fan, and gently sweeps it, as there are hints of silvery lights released.

Silvery lights flashing, with a sharp sound of breaking throughout the empty air space, as it stopped abruptly at one side where the rogue is.

"Dang dang dang ..."

The rogue shook the pitch-black dagger in his hand, to dismiss those silvery lights.

It gives the Gold Eater Beast a chance, as it roared, targeting the rogue, bowing its head, ready to use its glittering Golden Horn to knock against the former.

It turns around and get out from its position.

"Whoosh!"

Jowers try to be the first to break through the Gold Eater Beast's barrier, he and Sorsk have calculated this beforehand, and so fitting with the remarkable understanding between the two of them, Sorsk become the second person to follow him from behind.

The next person was Valentineez.

Xie Aoyu, Roque, and Delle, in addition of the Knight did not have time to ponder, in order to block Jowers and the other two, these four experts teamed up to attack.

Shua! Shua!

Two cold lights flashed, Feili and Gert also release their attacks, as these two people are blocking Roque and Delle, so leaving only Xie Aoyu and the Knight to rush forward.

As for the knight, he was riding the horse and thus should be the one to have the biggest advantage (TN: in terms of speed), and the space within the cave is actually pretty good (TN: suitable to ride a mount), but because of the golden force, he is unable to ride his

mount properly, so he is somehow looks a little bit clumsy. His aim is naturally to go at Valentine's side.

"Junior Xie's name is famous indeed, I have heard it so many times ah, how about we both measure the gap between the two of us here?" Sorsk moves sideways, obstructing Xie Aoyu's path.

Xie Aoyu sweeps a glance, it seems everyone already had their respective opponents, even that rogue is also in the middle of battle with the Gold Eater Beast (TN: who are trying to squash him with its horn before), the only person without an opponent at the moment is Jowers, "What a good strategy!"

"It's nothing more than just a little trick." Sorsk said as he smiled.

"To be able to calculate even the Gold Eater Beast, this is not just something you should called a little trick." Xie Aoyu look with the corner of his eyes as he catches a glimpse of Jowers rapidly dashed forward, he then shows a faint smile and said "But with just this simple scheme of yours, I am afraid that I cannot let you get what you want." As his voice sink, his body contrary to one's might expect, suddenly fall back.

This sudden way of approach, has cause Sorsk to be taken aback.

At this very moment, Xie Aoyu sweeps away his sword.

The sword curves as it brushed against both Gert and Feili.

These two together with Roque and Delle were in the midst of a battle, and evenly matched, but suddenly a flash of sword attacks, took them by surprise, as such forcing them to retreats hurriedly.

Roque and Delle take this opportunity to soar high in the air.

Both men already make their moves in the midair.

Two Battle-Qi revolves towards Jowers to cut him apart. (TN: it might feel like the sentence a bit off, but this is what in the raw, so I assume these two battle-qi belongs to Roque and Delle, and it should be the most relevant explanation considering the previous sentence)

Sorsk was just about to move, Xie Aoyu chuckled as he said: "You don't want to begin with me."

Although the two people are distance apart, but Xie Aoyu strike his sword, hack it high up in the air, causing him (TN: Sorsk) to have no choice but to deal with this attack first, as he recognized that the sword Xie Aoyu held within his hands is a holy sword.

Sorsk blocked the attack, Roque and Delle also took the opportunity to rush ahead.

Both of them move toward Jowers simultaneously to fight him.

"Sou!"

Meanwhile, the rogue who has been entangled with the Gold Eater Beast as if a stream of light, by relying on his speed alone, he managed to break away easily from the Gold Eater Beast 's attack range .

He too has to continuously endure silently!

"Roar!"

The Gold Eater Beast was enraged, roaring as it attacks.

Xie Aoyu for a second time falls back as he launches his punch.

This blow was launched without any fighting skills behind it, but enough to make the Gold Eater Beast to turn around and face every one of them, as its bloodthirsty nature explodes, the desire to kill rise up frantically.

Xie Aoyu let a haha laughed, as he turns towards Sorsk to hack him with his sword.

Three flashes of light swords appear.

The close combat of the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword.

In the course of facing this top notch fighting skills, as it is so powerful, so much that Sorsk also could not afford to be careless

when he deal with it, Xie Aoyu then jinked away, he turn towards the direction of the inner cave and rush ahead, as he send out a furious attack towards the Gold Eater Beast to claim his place.

But this is precisely a place fills with people of the same pursuit, adding Sorsk, Gert, Valentinez, Feili, together with the knight guy, there are five people who hinder his way .

This thus formed five people who were fighting to be the first person to get the Golden Life Tree, and five people who are giving the Gold Eater Beast a fierce battle's prospect, completely ruined Sorsk's arrangement.

(TN : Sorsk was planning to sneakily snatch the Golden Tree Life with Jowers while everyone is busy to deal with the Gold Eater Beast)

Always known for his schemes, Sorsk's face slightly change, to think that he had been fooled by Xie Aoyu unexpectedly, he gloomily stared at Xie Aoyu's back, sneered as he said: The two of you have already passed, inevitably to cause the other three to join hands, I would like to see now how are you going to obtain the Golden Life Three!"

Chapter 92: Gold Eater Beast, Golden Life Tree (Part 2)

Indeed, everything happens like what Sorsk had been expected.

There are five people that want to obtain the Golden Life Tree, they are respectively Xie Aoyu, Roque, Jowers, Delle and the rogue, in the other hand, Xie Aoyu and Roque are the same side.

While the three other people were from three different parties, so they were fighting against each other.

Looking towards each other, forming a three versus two match. "Roque, it looks like we are going to go all out." Xie Aoyu smiled as he said, "I leave Delle to you, as for the other two, I'll handle it."

He spoke with such a relaxing manner, causing both Jowers and the rogue to raise their eyebrows.

These two people are also quite shrewd, but to being underestimated in such a way, are really making them tremendously depressed, especially Jowers, who flaunt himself so high, but it seems that Xie Aoyu did not even put him in his mind at all.

Delle, and Roque went to the other side, as these two competing fairly.

Jowers, and the rogue looked towards each other.

Both men raised their weapons.

Xie Aoyu is the first one to launch the attack; the attack is precisely this one If I cannot do it, who can!

This fighting skill could even be said to be a fighting skill that Xie Aoyu has mastered very well and his most powerful move, it integrates the Overlord Dragon Fist into the Thunder-Spirit Holy-Sword to unleash its power.

"Roar!"

A sword swung.

A light image projection of an overlord dragon appeared out of thin air.

The light image is very realistic (TN: like a real dragon), as it roared and rushed to kill, a powerful force has exploded in a flash, as if it wanted to tear the space in sort of manner, causing a strong impact.

Jowers, and the rogue shows terror in their eyes, they think that they will not be able to dodge the attack even if they wanted to.

None of them fought recklessly.

When all is said and done these two men themselves had to think of ways (TN: On how to deal with Xie Aoyu), in addition to that, Xie Aoyu's fighting skill is just extremely ferocious.

They dodged, Xie Aoyu then follow along with the frantic force of impact as he charged forward, he passing both of them at once by slipping through the middle, and he contrary to one's expectation had reached at the end of the inner cave.

From this position, he can also see the Golden Life Tree.

Those cracks of the broken eggshell, glistening golden color, like a golden egg, and above it there is a bright green sapling-like existence.

That's, the Golden Life Tree.

Xie Aoyu shook his hand, as a glimpse of white image being ejected.

Have been hiding within Xie Aoyu's bosom all along, Xiao Bai cast its wind Acceleration technique, overall it looks like a snowy light, it is an aberrance of the demonic beast, to possessed seven series of magical power, they capable to completely disregard the golden force, Xie Aoyu already learned all of these from the ancient book.

For instance, the golden force, the force of soil and other magic's existence, although all of it is quite unique, however to have seven series of magic power is equal to have an immunity body itself.

(TN: A body that's immune to all those magical forces)

Xiao Bai is such a perverted existence.

"Shadow Combo Strikes!"

"Golden Light Break!"

The rogue and Jowers teamed up together in the attack, as their both are quite adept with fighting skills.

Shadowy moves, a dagger drawn, and like a phantom killer, turned into an endless series of attacks, the whole stabs of single sword have formed a sea of swords.(TN: Might translated this a bit off一刀一刀的构成一片刀海)

Golden light flashing, a sharp sword flew across to kill, at the sharp end (TN: of the sword) actually contained a sparkling golden ball-like of existence.

Xie Aoyu bellowed in rage, as his body to burst out with the scarlet red electric lights.

Fighting skills Scarlet Exploding Lightning Chop!

"Boom!"

Powerful sound echoes, the three attacks intersect, as an explosion erupted.

This huge reverse jolting force has caused Xie Aoyu to take three steps backwards as he stabilizes himself, while the rogue and Jowers also repeatedly fall back, which took everyone by surprise as these three people, are evenly matched.

The face color of Jowers and the rogue turned into green.

They both had been working together, but were only capable to barely draw with Xie Aoyu unexpectedly, but what's become the issue is their joint attack were using their strongest fighting skill, Xie Aoyu in another hand was in hurry to face the attack head to head, thus the fighting skill that he had used should be slightly inferior than them, which in other words, it means even if they join hands (TN: after this), apparently they are not necessarily will be Xie Aoyu's match.

This is indeed equivalent in giving them a blow on their faces.

Especially for Jowers.

"Come again!"

Xie Aoyu also want to satisfying his craving for battle, he brandished his sword to fight once more, this time he will launch a melee attack of the Indefinite Flying Spinning Sword, as one sword

is equal to three swords to attack, not only its might is so powerful, but also its extremely mysterious qi.

Three light swords have been split to aim at the two people, Xie Aoyu actually use two light swords to deal with the rogue, because the most crucial point here is to press this rogue from slipping away, as his speed is just too fast.

Jowers, as both men were taken aback, are soon launch a counterattack.

Xie Aoyu then tilts to stride over with a single step, and arrive before Jowers, follows with the release of a hollow punch afterwards.

Overlord Dragon Fist!

One heavy punch strikes, as a huge fist was released.

"Boom! Boom!"

The light sword and the shadow punch came one after another.

Jowers was beaten down so much that he sprayed his blood as he then collapse, Xie Aoyu takes advantage of this opportunity to turn around, brandishes his sword to strike and slash the rogue.

"Ding dong ding-dong"

In the blink of an eye, 18 sword slashes to cut were released continuously, forming a series of hitting sounds.

What makes Xie Aoyu to feel surprised, is contrary to what one's might expect, the rogue's dagger was not affected at all by his Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword, it seems that the dagger is also a holy weapon, or at least its workmanship is not as bad than his Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword.

Merely with the strength of 18 sword slashes have caused the rogue to be shaken as he spurting his blood and fall back, his arms became numb and sore, resulting him to be unable to hold his dagger.

Both Xie Aoyu's eyes radiated with a glint of coldness, as he watched Jowers intently.

This man is Pasa Clan's people.

According to Li Chaofeng, Jowers is expected to be the next Patriarch of the Pasa clan and one of the most popular candidates, for such a person, even if he has not become the head of the Pasa clan, he still would become the backbone of the Pasa Clan, and between him and the Pasa Clan there is only hatred, to leave the latter alive would doing him more harm than good.

Xie Aoyu let out his desire to kill.

He gave up in chasing down the rogue, as he put his sword forward and with a quick step, he rushed toward Jowers.

"Fierce Dragon Thrust!"

Jowers, certainly not willing to die, as he holds his double edge sword that looks like a fierce dragon, the sharp end of the double edge sword trembles slightly, the unparallel trenchant turn towards Xie Aoyu's heart before stabbing him.

The speed was extremely fast.

Xie Aoyu's expression looks cold, as he brandished his sword to hack it out.

"Kacha!"

One single edge sword is right in the middle of the end point of the double edge sword; this is indeed a holy sword, as it effortlessly split the double edge sword into half, a powerful force clashing against Jowers, sending him off flying again.

Xie Aoyu, from a distance leisurely swings his sword.

He is going to behead Jowers.

"Shiu Shiu Shiu"

A burst of sharp pointed needle shrilled through the empty air, a morsel of concentrated silvery lights slices that look like raindrops heading towards Xie Aoyu, coming from Sorsk who seizes the opportunity to shoot.

Gold Beast Eater though quite strong, but when facing these five experts, it can do nothing but being beaten to pieces instead.

The Gold Eater Beast had already spent a lot of its strength at the moment, so Sorsk does not have to worry about the probability of being attacked by the Gold Eater Beast.

Xie Aoyu now has no choice but to dodge.

That morsel of silvery lights embedded into the mountain wall, as they turned out to be silver needles (TN: acupuncture-like needles).

"Yiya!"

Then at this very moment, Xiao Bai screamed.

(TN: Interestingly, Xiao Bai which literally known as Little White, is also a pretty boy / bishounen in chinese lol XD)

Xie Aoyu turned around to look hastily, only to discover that the rogue unexpectedly pounced towards him, his heart tightens, it did not occur to his mind at all that the rogue's speed would be this unexpectedly fast, apparently that guy didn't have his highest

speed displayed completely before.

This kind of ghostly attack, the rogue make quite of an attack in order to get out from this situation.

(TN: In raws it says ghostly attack, but I believe it was meant to some kind of ambush / sudden attack, based on the previous passage :))

"Yiya!"

Xiao Bai is actually quite sharp-witted, as it lifted the Golden eggshell to throw it out.

Who would have thought Xiao Bai's strength was so great, after all, the golden eggshell from its external appearance alone, look like thirty or forty jins of weight, a white spirit beast have this kind of strength?

"Kacha!"

The rogue's a little late to avoid it, his dagger (TN: however) is right at the center of the golden eggshell.

The result is that golden eggshell was crushed by his dagger; the dagger is after all a holy weapon, possessed an extraordinary power.

The eggshell shattered into pieces, a small tender green color sapling seems like a Golden Life Tree also fell, Xiao Bai is the first to rush out quickly to seize it, and threw it out at once.

Originally he had planned to rob and so the rogue was enraged and scolded: "Cunning demonic beast! "

"Yiya!" Xiao Bai imitates him by giving a tongue-lashing back and grinned.

The rogue tiptoed out slightly, as he turned back, and stretch his hand forward to grab the little sapling.

Xie Aoyu naturally could not allow him to succeed, he also stretch out his hand forward to snatch it.

Both of them are getting closer with their most extreme speeds.

But just based on the sheer speed alone, the rogue apparently slightly ahead, as his hands approaching the flying little sapling faster, and his fingers will soon touch that little sapling.

Xie Aoyu however was left behind in the distance of a palm.

Chapter 93: Gold Eater Beast, Golden Life Tree (Part 3)

Speed is the key in times like this.

The rogue's biggest advantage is his speed, as his fingertips touching the little sapling, there is a hint of a smile on his face, he must succeed!

"BAM!"

Things turn out unexpectedly, because sometimes there are things that are impossible to avoid.

For example something just like this.

Once the rogue touching the sapling for a moment, soon afterwards there was a fragment of the golden eggshell came flying over, towards the right in the middle of the little sapling, as it hit the small sapling and provide a sudden acceleration. (TN: Like giving it a push to go to another direction)

"Yiya!"

From behind, Xiao Bai's victory cheers coming through.

The rogue somehow has a faint feeling.

Victory slipped through his fingers, and unexpectedly, the damage was done by that one little demonic beast, moreover it was a series of damage (TN: refers to Xiao Bai's action before), he is going to be crazy; as he never met such a wicked demonic beast before.

He is depressed, while Xie Aoyu is happy, but rather than feeling completely elated, it was more being amazed.

The speed of Xiao Bai threw the eggshell was rather too fast, right?

It was faster than the rogue's speed, it is something that must be known that with the rogue's speed, indeed the victory should be within his grasp as he topped Xie Aoyu, so Xie Aoyu himself knew that he would not be able to reach that far, and yet, Xiao Bai had already done it.

Could it have been well thought out in advance, those early shots?

Xie Aoyu does not have time to think of all these things more deeply, as he is now would be able to catch the little sapling, since this is something for his wood attribute, which will provide him unimaginable benefits.

The little sapling come flying.

Xie Aoyu's hand moves fast like a lightning to snatch it.

Brush!

He would never thought, that as his hand was going to grab it, he could only caught the air, the sapling actually goes faster, fortunately as luck would have it hitting him in the pit of his stomach, right on the location where the tricolor ball is located.

Originally this would have been enough to caught Xie Aoyu by surprised.

And yet, it still managed to makes him to feel shocked even more.

It's true that the little sapling is the Golden Life Tree, as it belongs to one of the scarce things, in addition to date it is still not interfere with the tricolor ball's condition. But unknowingly, a portion of faint force come from somewhere, it comes from the little sapling which penetrates through, into the chest.

The tricolor ball suddenly becomes restless.

The familiar feeling spreads once again.

Xie Aoyu felt sort of dizziness, because every time when he felt this way, he would be excited about things that would happen, but this time, he could not help not to feel anxious.

The road of cultivation, to choose (a path) a person must not lack the slightest bit of wisdom. (TN: meaning every time we want to choose which path to be taken, it should have been done with brain, no rushing)

Only by taking one step at a time, only then you would be able to solidify yourself to walk on to a higher realm.

If you always rely on support from the external factor, then in regards to your cultivation, you would benefit nothing, such as these respected families, why the genuinely talented younger generation, would never try to use the elixir to forcefully promote their strength, the reason is once they are at the peak of sage realm level, the power they obtained through the use of elixir, will start showing side effects, thus causing the process to breakthrough to the next realm becomes extremely difficult.

And in this mainland, those who genuinely have the power by simply utter the word would be someone who is at emperor level. (TN: that's why they unwilling to stop on sage realm, everyone want to be an emperor)

This is the reason why Xie Aoyu has this indescribable feeling of anxious.

He worried that once he reaches the highest level of sage realm, his cultivation would possibly bog down, he worried in regard of the tricolor ball, the origin of this thing after all is extremely mystical, no one knows if it has any side effects.

The mysterious force has made the tricolor ball trembles, which later attracted the small sapling in the front.

Xie Aoyu subconsciously holds it down with his left hand, to prevent others from discover his secret of tricolor ball, which is his biggest secret.

Simultaenously a light flashes through Xie Aoyu's mind.

This small green tender sapling which sprouted from the golden eggshell from beginning to the end , apparently have been activated by no one but Xiao Bai , even that rogue who has touched it with his fingertips before , it did not pop up in time for him to utilize his Battle-qi .

(TN: remember that the golden force earlier comes from the Golden Life Tree, the golden force putting pressure on people battle-qi, but Xiao Bai is a demonic beast that is able to completely disregard the golden force)

Xiao Bai!

Xie Aoyu swept a joyful glance of satisfactory towards Xiao Bai, as he keeping this matter firmly in mind.

Having successfully obtained the small sapling, Xie Aoyu then turns around to walk away immediately.

He fully realized that most people in this cave, there are more

attracted to this small sapling, as its function is too big; and thus he pulled his body right away and dashed forward.

"Stop him!" The rogue yelled.

Over there, Delle was about to make his move, but Roque's heavy double-edged sword came sweeping, to stop him.

So out of ten minus two, on top of that, Xie Aoyu is on his own, the eyes of the remaining seven masters were green with envy as they looked towards the small sapling on his chest.

(TN: Roque was busy restraining Delle, so currently Xie Aoyu alone is facing 7 experts)

"Strange, why he did not keep it within his interspatial ring?" Sorsk who are watching, was puzzled.

"Roar!"

The barely alive Gold Eater Beast who was beaten by five experts, when it saw with its own eyes that the small sapling had been snatched, its whole body glowed with golden, looking natural and poised, it seems like the last radiance of the setting sun sort of manner, as it roars, it leaves Sorsk, Valentinez and others, and frantically pounced towards Xie Aoyu.

This makes eight experts who are about to attack Xie Aoyu from all directions.

(TN: The 8 include the beast, as Delle still being held by Roque)

Xie Aoyu gave a faint smile toward Sorsk, as he stomped his feet.

To sink yourself!

This ability is his strongest point.

This Earth-Escaping technique, for now, he was already unable to tell whether there are other people who still do not know, as this (should) have been the knowledge of many people (TN: in regard of his ability to disappear suddenly), however in this cave, it was hard to use it at first, because almost all the surface of the walls and floor of the cave were covered with metals that were later on converted into gold by the Gold Eater Beast, making him unable to use the Earth-Escaping technique, and so at first he proposes to everyone to destroy the golden shield with a purpose, which is to paves the way for his Earth-escaping technique.

The distance of Earth-Escaping technique can go is 14 meters, this is the limit of the upper-level Spirit realm.

"Sou!"

As everyone is still shocked, just then, Xie Aoyu passed through the Gold Eater Beast and emerges on its left side.

As soon as he appears, his hands raised his single-edged sword to hack it.

Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword streak across the air together with a scarlet red lightning, a single-edged sword going to hack the head of the Gold Eater Beast, the defense of the Gold Eater Beast is so powerful indeed, however during its battles with the five experts before, it had been gravely injured, coupled with the sharpness of the Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword, along with those previous injuries, soon afterwards it(the sword) sunk deep within the Gold Eater Beast's head.

"Roarr"

The Gold Eater Beast bellowed in agony, as its lifeless body falls to the ground.

Xie Aoyu then casually put the Gold Eater Beast's corpse into his interspatial ring.

"Fuck!" Feili in response of seeing this, cursed.

The Gold Eater Beast and the Golden Life Tree, all of it had been swept clean by Xie Aoyu, resulting their eyes to become red, especially Sorsk, who is famous for his scheming, but before his own eyes, everything has been snatched away, he was furious; this Xie Aoyu guy is practically muck up his gilded signboard (TN: equal with his well-established reputation).

"Kill!" "

Jowers who had his blood spurted really want to kill Xie Aoyu again and again, even more having his smoldering anger as he launches a psychological attack.

Seven experts waves their weapons in ferocious manner as all of them are working together to kill Xie Aoyu from every direction. At this moment, they show no external differences at all.

"Sorry guys, it seems I won't be able to keep you company!" Xie Aoyu said as he laughed, stomping his feet for one more time, and then disappeared once again.

Escape with just 14 yards away!

He passed through Valentinez, Sorsk, Feili, Gert, the knight and others, and emerges from the rear.

"He's there, go after him!" Jowers shouted loudly.

The rogue's speed is the fastest, as he soars and jump, the holy-level with a dagger swung lightly, as if a black light flashing through, to directly attack Xie Aoyu's heart from behind.

The six other experts also launch their attacks one after another.

Suddenly, there are battle-qi dancing violently everywhere, filled

the air inside the cave.

Xie Aoyu is not stupid, seven experts, and all of them are undoubtedly strong, he also is not comparable to them, so he decided to use the Earth-Escaping the Technique once more, let's escapes first, and put off the discussion (TN: about who is stronger) until later on.

"Hong Hong Hong"

An explosive sound, the cave filled with detritus and dust which has caused Xie Aoyu's figure hidden from view of everyone.

He uses the Earth-Technique Escaping again and again, resulting a lightning quick departure.

"Those who are outside please hear me out, Xie Aoyu has robbed the Gold Beast Eater corpse and Golden Life Tree, blocks him!" Sorsk is actually using his battle-qi, and shouted.

His voice is similar to the startling thunderclap thunders; everyone who is within the surrounding area hundred yards away could hear him.

As the voice falls, the figure belongs to Xie Aoyu then appears outside the cave.

"Xie Aoyu was there!"

"Everyone let's go together!"

"Hurry, he holds the Gold Beast Eater corpse and the Golden Life Tree!"

Outside there were several hundred people, shouts were heard as everyone without exception rushed ahead to go up at once, Bing Wu, Li Chaofeng and others were also being pushed and squeezed on the outside, their strengths are just not enough to contend with so many people.

As for more than 200 mercenaries of the Star Luo Mercenary Group which has been brought by Roque, every one of them in the middle of dealing with more than 200 mercenaries of the Imperial Crown Mercenary Group that was brought by Valentine, at a distance place about a kilometer away from here, because based on a mutually agreed understanding in regard of the competition among the younger generations, they are forbidden to intervene at all.

As Xie Aoyu appears, the situation suddenly became chaotic.

Xie Aoyu also knows that this is not the time to meet with Bing Wu and others, as he was surrounded by people; he then uses the Earth-Escaping Technique, and escapes into the crowd.

"Here."

"Everybody come quickly."

The shouts within the crowd sounded continuously.

Xie Aoyu then launches the Earth-Escaping Technique to change his position unceasingly, resulting the shouts (TN: of his position) also unceasingly, the crowd surges along followed the shouts, as the seven experts within the cave also surged ahead.

Meanwhile, the small sapling is rapidly withering.

His battle-qi strangely has increased.

Up to now, Xie Aoyu has endured not to employ the mysterious qi from coming into the tricolor ball, rather he employ it separately! (TN: I don't think that I mistranslated this passage but still.. 到现在, 谢傲宇已经不用神奇来形容三色圆球了, 而是用的诡异!)

If he was discovered by someone who actually uses their head, although it is unlikely for them to be suspicious of the presence of the tricolor ball, certainly it will attract their attention, so Xie Aoyu checked quickly, and targeting a cave (as a place to hide).

He started consciously to put to use the Earth-Escaping technique to draw near (the cave).

After 3-4 times repeatedly, then he managed to escaped into the cave, after entering the hole, he did not stop for a rest, as he immediately used the Earth-Escaping technique once more, and

crouch on the spot at the very end of the cave, at the same time, he revolved his battle-qi and pour it into the Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword.

This time, he escapes directly under the mountain.(TN: He dives using Earth-Escaping technique once again at the end of cave, and went into underground/mountain belly)

This mountain is certainly not an empty mountain belly, rather it quite solid(TN : hard to break into).

Xie Aoyu emerged, his head knocked against the mountain wall, he brandishes his single-edged sword and cuts continuously.

"Bang bang bang

The solid wall was cut by him to make a room enough for a person to sits cross-legged, as he then immediately starts to exercise control over his increasingly rebellious battle-qi.

In addition, this space may not have sufficient air supply, if he does not hurry, even if he is competent, as the time grow, one will be choked to death. (TN: Basically, he went into the deepest area that located deep inside the mountain, and since he literally dives with his technique and not walking, so he end up at one very narrow space underground, which the reason for the lack of oxygen)

"Everybody calm down, listen to what I want to say. " Outside the

cave, Sorsk stand in the high place, as he shouted loudly, " Xie Aoyu grasped a strange fighting skill that allows him to thread his way through the earth like a demonic moles, he disappeared in the cave, he definitely hiding himself in the mountain, everybody let's attack together, blow up the exit of the caves, to force him to come out!"

Chapter 94: If I Cannot Do It, Who Can (Part 1)

With regard of Xie Aoyu's unpredictable and mysterious fighting skill, Li Chaofeng also to some extent already understand it, however, he did not think that this Sorsk guy was unexpectedly quick to discover at once that the skill was created using demonic moles as its foundation.

"You said that he is within the mountain and even if he really is in the mountain, (how) do you know that this mountain is empty inside?" Li Chaofeng spoke out loudly.

Sorsk sneered: "It is not empty and what about it, he can create a space."

"Ha, you who are Jowers's running dog really think one as infallible, however this is a mountain, (if) you have the ability, first go to the underground, and create a space for me to see." Li Chaofeng shouted, "I think you are a blockhead or an idiot, this mountain has many layers (TN: something like caves, holes to hide), and yet (he choose to) escape to the mountain underground."

"Li Chaofeng, you actually trying to gain time for Xie Aoyu to escape, I already saw (your plan), you are one group with him." Sorsk as the Gold Eater Beast and the Golden Life Tree were snatched by Xie Aoyu right before his eyes, his Qi become a little frantic, unlike previously where he seems to be a very calm person, (as if) he has it all under his palm.

"I do not know whether it was me, or you, who actually are wasting time here, do not know anything but still want to send people to look all over the place blindly." Li Chaofeng's mouth curled as he spoke, completely disregard Sorsk.

This has enraged Sorsk so much that both of his eyes were burning.

In regards of the clans within the Tian Luo Empire, Qin clan, and Pasa clan, and Desai clan, are recognized as the three biggest clans, but the reasons why they belongs to the biggest clan is because they have some connection with the ancient clan, or like the existence of the Qin clan who arre in their current position in the mainland due to having a Ten-Kings (TN: third highest realm), and then the Li clan, a clan which is second only to them, their power is not more nor less, they just do not have the support of an existence of ten kings on their back.

Sorsk is angry, but he did not dare to openly challenge Li Chaofeng. After all, his master Jowers, is only a collateral relative of the Pasa clan.

(TN: collateral relative (descended from a common ancestor but through different lines)

Their confrontation, causing many people began to look all over the place.

Li Chaofeng said inwardly, there is a limit of what ones can do by his own; the rest depends on Xie Aoyu himself.

Meanwhile, the small green sapling in Xie Aoyu's chest has begun to change its color, changing from light green to pale green, light yellow, yellow, and then wither.

This process is extremely fast.

Within the small green light sapling contain gold and wooden mixed dual power attributes which also entered one of the green-colored spheres of the tricolor ball.

It is a pure green, as there is a hint of a golden color.

"Now apparently, these three colors on the tricolor ball are represent three attributes which are thunder, earth and wood, no wonder when I first got it, it was able to flowed into my body, as I am exactly belongs to these three attributes. "Xie Aoyu has clearly recognized the meaning behind the surface of the ball tricolor.

An attribute power is something that bestowed by heaven. (Something that you would naturally have it since birth)

Some people, when cultivate a fighting skill that correspond to an attribute possessed, the might will be much bigger, moreover the ability to master the skill will also run smoothly without a hitch, but an attribute, if it weak, everything will be the opposite, so much that it more or less the same as those who do not have any attributes.

Therefore one can say that in the mainland, what is the most difficult to comprehend is the problem related to the attribute. This pure metal attribute being birth within the wooden attribute (TN: the hint of pure golden being mixed within the green ball), it is indeed the best place to stay in order to change the nature of the weak wooden attribute, as it will allow the wooden attribute to have the ability to launch its most powerful attacks that contains the essence of metal attribute.

Xie Aoyu's wooden attribute is the result of this tender little green sapling having double attributes of metal and wood.

And previously the situation where he absorbed the mysterious wind attribute was also extremely similar.

This time, Xie Aoyu's battle-qi collided with his wooden aberrance attribute and thus gives rise of a tidal wave (on his battle-qi).

It just before this he had never felt (a tidal wave) of this magnitude.

This just makes Xie Aoyu to be stunned; as a hint of stimulation has made the tricolor ball to have an extremely unusual tremor, and a very fine power leaking out from the tricolor ball, seeping through into his battle-qi.

And so this has made his battle-qi to increase dramatically.

His all-around attacking power has leaped across to the Ascension-level realm.

(TN: I'm translating this while reading, so I do not know whether he has breakthrough to Ascension level or he can skip levels like Yun Che of ATG did, but please do note that his previously mentioned level is an upper-level Spirit realm)

Outside, people were lively and bustling with noise and excitement, but yet, they still did not see any trace of Xie Aoyu and thus lead to a chaotic situation.

"Be quiet, be quiet!" Jowers's voice thundered.

At this time, Sorsk had already started to calm down, and once again give people a feeling that everything is still under his control, as he gently waving his fan, and then gave a smile yet not a smile while looking at Li Chaofeng, Bing Wu, and others.

The situation however back into chaos once again and quite a few people that seems to ignores him.

"I know where Xie Aoyu is!" Jowers when he saw that, exclaimed loudly.

The loud voice indeed leaves an impression, as everyone became quiet immediately.

Jowers catch his breathe, as his heavy voice sounded: "I had

determined through special means a moment ago that Xie Aoyu is still hiding within this mountain."

"Ha, Jowers, you better don't play tricks on us." Li Chaofeng sneered as he said.

"If proven to be false, I, Jowers, will assist everyone to get the corpse of the Gold Eater Beast and the Golden Life Tree!" Jowers gave Li Chaofeng a chilling cold stern look, patting his chest and promised, "Everyone just needs to listen to my command, and we will be able to find Xie Aoyu. "

He looked so determined, as the result many people have come to trust him.

Valentinez then said: "So Young Master Jowers, please tell us what should be done."

"Then I will let Sorsk to tell you, because he knows the location where Xie Aoyu hides." Jowers said as he turned toward Sorsk with a slight nod.

"As you see, I am an Earth attribute person, by using some special trick, just when we all were looking for him, I have managed to sniff him out, and that Xie Aoyu is indeed hiding in the mountain." Sorsk spoke with a clear voice, "The location is not exceeding 30 m, straight forward from where I stand, we only need to attack together (striking = digging through underground), allow us in the shortest period of time to get through the channel to find Xie Aoyu. "

When they heard his words, some of them still seem little hesitant.

Li Chaofeng who noticed that, want to add more fire, and make the people to give up.

"If Xie Aoyu indeed is not there, I will assist everyone to get the Gold Eater Beast corpse and the Golden Life Tree!" Jowers, once again throws the tempting statement.

Seeing this situation, Li Chaofeng could do nothing but to shook his head reluctantly.

Hundreds of people, even though they realize that their strength are not sufficient enough, they are still not willing to give up.

And so hundreds of people are waving their weapons, launches an attack. The strength of an individual is limited, but the strength of several hundred people are indomitable, as thunderous explosion resounded, the earth shook, and the entire mountain was swaying.

The strength of battle-Qi which have been combined together, have produced a quite astonishing strength.

Under a wave of powerful impact, a seven-eighteen meters length of tunnel appeared, this is the first wave of attack, so it can be imagined how fearful the strength is.

Sorsk's both interlinked hands began to transform, his fingertip produce a little yellow halo, as if there is a mystical force was sent out from his hand, beneath of short period of time, he opened his eyes suddenly, laughed and then said: "Xie Aoyu is before us, if everyone strikes together again, we would be able to see him."

"It is not that great, but what kind of secret skill used by this despicable guy?" Li Chaofeng continues watching, his brows almost tightly knit together, he naturally still cannot figure out what sort of secret skill used by Sorsk.

Bing Wu, who from the beginning until now never spoke a word, spoke with her charming face and her dignified attitude: "That should be the earth attribute probing type secret skill, you should have heard of this enchanter occupation, although already vanished, but some of these fragmentary of incantation were passed down from generation to generation, however the combination of the incantation and the fighting skill also has been handed down so many times."

Li Chaofeng said, "to have this type of secret skill, this Sorsk indeed someone who is considered valuable to Jowers, to go as far as to handed down the Pasa family's secret skill for him to cultivate, what can Aoyu do right now? In case of him being discovered, in such of situation, even we cannot recklessly rush to the front. "

Bing Wu furrowed her eyebrows, and did not speak further.

She also felt a headache as how to handle situations like this.

They are powerless to stop anyone, let alone their number if mixed all together amounts to ten people, even if there are many of them, it would be still several times useless, you know that these hundreds of people, are spirit-level realm, they alone requires five or six times of the total number of them (to deal with them), so how to compete?

"Attack!" Jowers's voice thundered.

Hundreds of people start to brandishes their weapons again.

Countless of battle-qi comes chopping, each from their facial expression shows that everything should be here is here (idiom), concentrated, as if they are a convergence of raindrops that rained down towards the end of the passage which has just opened.

"Boom boom"

The earth shook once again.

As the rumbling sounds fade away, everything become calm once again; all the eyes in a flash are looking at one sight.

Only to see Xie Aoyu who was sitting inside, as if all that happens in the world outside is not heard by him, as his eyes still closed.

"Everybody, let's work together to kill him!" Valentinez shouted, he wants to lash out against Xie Aoyu, to avenge his older brother.

Li Chaofeng sneered: "Do you take us all like a fool ah, who did not know that the corpse of the Gold Eater Beast and the Golden Life Tree are inside, want to attack together? I think that you are trying to have both items destroyed. "

"I." Valentinez almost choked himself to death.

"You, what you, that being the case, I think it's better if you go inside alone." Li Chaofeng said in a mocking tone.

Under the gaze of countless people, Valentinez only able to endlessly curses inwardly, as he did not want to be a joke, he clenches his teeth, raises his sword and walked towards the inside.

Brush!

As he marched into just three steps, he saw that Xie Aoyu's eyes suddenly opened.

Valentinez has seen with his own eyes that Xie Aoyu alone has defeated Jowers and the rogue, the two great experts, thus his face turned pale with fear, without delay he raised his long sword, and take steps with caution.

Those at the outside actually do not know that Xie Aoyu currently is in the most critical juncture, he has not break through yet, most definitely cannot be disturb.

Chapter 95: If I Cannot Do It, Who Can (Part 2)

That boiling battle-qi is hitting the bottleneck between the spirit level to the Ascension level, so long as it can be re-opened, Xie Aoyu can break through into Ascension-level realm.

But at this critical juncture, Sorsk come and make a mess.

To see Xie Aoyu hunkered down before him, causing a burst of unspeakable joy within Sorsk's heart, he can finally get revenge on the failure of his scheme towards his foe.

"Valentinez, you have nothing to be afraid of, you must not forget to kill your elder brother's enemy, and that enemy is already here, if you cannot do it, just leave it to us." Jowers shouted as he quickly signaled on Sorsk.

Gert also sneers: "He is probably nothing but a coward."

Hundreds of people on the outside were bursting with laughter.

By driving Valentinez like a duck onto a perch * is quite heartless, he raised his single-edged sword and soon afterwards launched an attack through the air from a distance.

(TN: Idiom; to push someone who is lacking in ability into the tiger den)

"Bang Bang Bang"

Xie Aoyu's heartbeat accelerated abruptly.

Currently he has no strength to deal with this attack.

"Yiya!"

In a time of crisis like this, a white shadow emerged from the crowd, which is Xiao Bai, and it waves its small-mammal paw, and then there is a touch of purple light flashing through.

Because he had witnessed Xie Aoyu's strength before, has led Valentine's mind to focus entirely on Xie Aoyu's body, how one would be able to guess that such of little thing would emerge (out of nowhere)?

However no one ever thought that the white spirit beast would use a magic technique.

" Pa Pa Pa"

White lightning strikes between the gaps of Valentine's legs.

This was so entertaining.

Valentinez protect his crotch, as the sound of wailing “Aoao” was heard, how could he strike back?

“Little bastard!” The rogue who also saw Xiao Bai, was totally furious, because this little thing has cost him the Golden Life Tree; he raised his dagger as he is going to launch his attack.

A figure shook.

Bing Wu subsequently appeared on one side, as she stared coldly at the rogue and said, "What are you doing!"

Xiao Bai walked slowly before a sudden it jumped into Bing Wu's bosom.

"I want to kill it, it would be best if Miss Bing Wu did not intervene." The rogue coldly said, "While the others may fear the Butterfly Queen, You Lan Ruo, but I am not afraid at her at all. "

When he saw that the rogue is so powerful, Sorsk's lips overflowed with a little trace of a smile, and then he turned towards Jowers as he throws a signal with his eyes.

Jowers shouted loudly: "Everyone, come with me, the Gold Eater Beast's corpse and the Golden Life Tree inside." He was the first to rush in.

Those who have metal attribute like Feili, and together with the rogue and his company, the knight followed closely from behind.

There are more than ten people, rushed into the inside altogether.

They are getting closer to Xie Aoyu.

Jowers was grinning on his face, as not too long before, he was almost killed by Xie Aoyu, now he can have his revenge (without staining his hand) against Xie Aoyu by making someone else to do it for him.

He increased the speed.

Others are also going full steam ahead.

All eyes focused at Xie Aoyu's interspatial ring.

When he saw all of them, Xie Aoyu feel calm instead, as worrying is useless, and so he slowly closed his eyes, concentrate all his energies on the peak of his battle-qi, to pound against the bottleneck.

To penetrate through the large level, is a different matter than (breaking through) the small level.

Such as for the changes of the three upper, middle, lower levels within a realm, breaking through would not be difficult, there are some people who even have the ability to make a breakthrough on

these three levels in a row, but for a large level to be similar would be very difficult since there is a bottleneck (an obstruction) which lie in front of it.

Those footsteps are getting closer.

Xie Aoyu's heart become more and more serene, he did not seem affected by emotional factors such as pressure, anxiety, or fear, it seems as if everything has nothing to do with him.

His battle-qi on the contrary, come with even more speed, rushed towards the bottlenecks and launched a fierce attack.

"Da, da, da"

Jowers dashed with his swift step forward, as he raised the sharp sword he held within his hand, a majestic metallic attribute of battle-qi poured inside, and the sharp sword exuded a dazzling golden light.

They are also turning their battle-qi on.

Bing Wu launched an attack from the outside, but was stopped by the rogue.

Li Chaofeng and others were unable to even get close.

All eyes are focused on the newly opened passage.

"Sou!"

At the moment, Xie Aoyu still has a distance of 4-5 meters; Jowers suddenly initiate an action, that sharp sword which has been channeled with the battle-qi descended towards Xie Aoyu's head to decapitate it.

As soon as the sword come to strike him down, immediately, it produces an ear-piercing sound.

Xie Aoyu steadily sitting still there, as he maneuvers his battle-qi in the full speed to pounced against the final hurdle, apparently he did not give the slightest attention to Jowers.

The sharp sword fall down at a great speed.

The hearts of all people cannot help but to moves restlessly, as that sharp sword approaching (the target), the palpitations in their heart also increased in each passing minute.

Only Xie Aoyu who are sitting there silently, looking motionless.

His battle-qi has been fully stimulated.

Then he sent out one final spurt.

"Die!" Jowers roared viciously.

The sharp sword descends to kill him in a ferocious manner.

Xie Aoyu's battle-qi also continues frantically sent an all out attack (against the bottleneck).

"Bang!"

The tenacious bottleneck under the battle-qi series of attacks, finally bursts, resulting Xie Aoyu to have a momentary feeling of being overwhelmed as his battle-qi increased by two times dramatically.

This battle-qi surges on and circulates around his meridian throughout his whole body, just as large as the Yangtze River.

The lower-level Ascension (realm)!

As for Xie Aoyu, this is a whole new realm, because when he left the Xie family, he was still in the Advanced-level realm, and yet about a half year later, he actually has broken through the Ascension-level realm, leaving him to felt as if everything that has happened was a dream.

And all of these probably were bestowed by the tricolor ball.

Is this a fortune or a calamity?

He does not know.

Xie Aoyu's calmed closed eyes began to slowly opened, his movement gives the feeling of being very slow to others, contrarily to Jowers's sharp sword as its speed becomes even faster than before.

As the sharp sword almost touches his hair, Xie Aoyu swiftly puts out his hand.

"Bang!"

Xie Aoyu's right hand clasped the sharp sword.

This is precisely an ascension-level realm.

The promotion of strength is not only will witness the increase of the battle-qi, strength and speed, the inner quality of one's body and other aspects will also experience changes significantly, otherwise the bottleneck would not be that difficult to break into.

"Ah!" Jowers was somewhat dumbstruck.

The corners of Xie Aoyu 's mouth twitch, his battle-qi rumbling loudly as it surges from within his body.

"Bang!"

That sharp sword explode as it broke open immediately, Jowers's heart was heavily stricken by the formidable strength, as he have to seize this opportunity to get rid of Jowers.

Not far away, even that knight who has closely followed Jowers from behind was rendered speechless.

(TN : The raw literally said , he was not responded , so I deliberately change it to rendered speechless , which I think means the same thing)

Jowers then let out a miserable shriek as he plunged upside down.

He pounced seven to eight people all at once. (TN: like bowling pins XD)

Xie Aoyu then leisurely got up, as he gradually walked forward; an astonishing imposing manner ripples from his body, forming an invisible powerful pressure.

He took another step forward.

Those who have entered the cave soon afterwards took one step backward.

There is a disparity between their level (and Xie Aoyu), and so they do not have the ability to resist.

One step forward, one step back, as those who were inside the cave moves back and get out, Xie Aoyu felt somewhat a bit surprised that Jowers actually did not die.

The clothes on his chest had been shattered to shreds, however appeared a piece of golden silk hedgehog armor that has a crack in it.

"Little thing,well done, ah." Xie Aoyu pinches the tip of Xiao Bai's nose.

"Yiya!" Xiao Bai got up and gave a smile that mimic humans.

Xie Aoyu then took another two steps forward, as his eyes swept coldly everyone here, "Who wants the Gold Eater Beast, the Golden Life Tree, come and gets it by your own." He shook his wrist, and the Thunder-Spirit Holy Sword then emerged, "But you must ask this sword of mine first!"

"Crazy, you might really are crazy, you seems to attach little importance to us unexpectedly." Valentinez has recovered, after all the might of Xiao Bai's thunder magic is limited.

Xie Aoyu curled his lips, as he did not give any response to him.

"Everybody, let's get rid of him together!" Valentinez shouted loudly.

Previously, no one wanted to follow Valentine in action, but this time it was different, right after he finished his words, Feili became the first person to go forward, standing with him shoulder to shoulder.

Jowers who was almost killed, Sorsk, and Gert also took a step forward one after another.

The rogue and the knight, these two mysterious young experts also stepped forward one by one.

Seven young generation of experts, formed encirclement, as they are all united against Xie Aoyu .

"Bing Wu, you step back." Xie Aoyu turned around as he spoke gently.

Bing Wu knows, she is only a lower-level Spirit realm which cannot be of much help, she only can to secretly vow to redouble her efforts in cultivation, and so she walks away. "You have to be careful ah"

Xie Aoyu smiled as he said: "I guess there is no harm in doing that too! "

To be tangled in the midst of these eight great young experts, Bing Wu fall back as she took Xiao Bai with her, others also withdrew one after another, and thus provides a large space .

Everyone opened their eyes as wide as possible.

It is indeed very unusual to have someone battle with these seven people, ah, even more these guys are the famous figures of the younger generation.

Chapter 96: If I Cannot Do It, Who Can (Part 3)

The encircling qi gave off the chill of death.

The strength of the eight fighters was not to be underestimated. The aura they gave off was enough to suffocate the crowd, forcing many of the weaker ones to draw back.

“A fight against seven? Well, you certainly leave me speechless!” Dao Zei coldly snorted.

This person’s strongest advantage is in his speed! Xie Aoyu recalled their prior confrontation, completely disregard Dao Zei’s words of contempt.

In terms of qi, Xie Aoyu wasn’t his opponent before breaking through, but now he felt much more confident. He was completely unable to explain where this confidence came from, even he himself could no longer determine the limits of his speed. Thus Xie Aoyu decided to start off by finding out exactly how fast he was.

Shadows of Death!

Xie Aoyu lightly stepped forward with his right foot, similar to immaterial smoke as if he had no weight. Both the footwork and power seemed drastically improved, immediately wiping off the smiles on Sorsk, Valentine, et al.’s faces. Immediately a sense of crisis began to befall these individuals. The onlookers stared

shocked, they couldn't even determine his vaguest outline, much less predict where he would step next!

Having achieved cultivation of the Ascension level, Xie Aoyu could be described as having gone through a qualitative change. His body, which had been separated in the Spirit level changed completely. Even his eyesight incomparably more sinister as he stared at the bandits.

With a flash of light, the Lightning Spirit Saint Blade appeared out of the blue. As fast as lightning it slashed forward leaving only an illusory figure in its trail.

Dang!

With a crisp sound, the dagger in Dao Zei's hand broke into two pieces. Dao Zei's entire body trembled violently as he drew back seven to eight steps with a complex look of shock, amazement and fear. "How... How is this possible? His Qi is nearly twice as strong. Why can't I can't contend with him?!?"

"Let me give you a hand," two voices sonorously resounded. These two were none other than Sorsk and Qi Shi. That's right, they had already realized that none of them would be a match for Xie Aoyu individually anymore. The only hope they had was in their numbers, so they needed to exploit that.

The fan in Sorsk's hand vibrated, sprinkling silver lights everywhere while Qi Shi stabbed forward with his spear.

However in the mind of Xie Aoyu, the psychedelic steps of Dao Zei continuously replayed themselves.

While pondering these movements, it was as if he were struck with enlightenment. As the attacks near Xie Aoyu disappears like smoke, completely evading their attacks.

“Impossible!” seeing this scene Dao Zei and Qi Shi call out in alarm. With that single step, all of their prior confidence was shattered. Valentine’s eye flashes with a panic-stricken color. Those steps... that movement... wasn’t this exactly the movement technique Dao Zei had been using?!?!

Regarding these youths, learning skills quickly has never been an issue, but to learn others skills by simply watching their movements was a nearly impossible feat itself, let alone in the middle of combat without any formal teaching!

However, presently Xie Aoyu had done precisely that!

How could they not be frightened?

“Work together and kill him together!” Valentine roared, immediately bringing everyone back to reality.

The relationship between Xie Aoyu and them was already irreconcilable, so naturally seeing Xie Aoyu display such peerless talent only made Valentine want to kill him more. Silently vowing to himself that Xie Aoyu must die, he hardened his resolve.

The other people also attack in unison.

ROAR!!!

From his summoning badge, Qi Shi released his saddle horse, the Great Demon Ape.

Although the ape may seem human in appearance and uncomfortable to ride on, it has a tendency to crawl, thus making it one of the best choices for a saddle horse. Moreover, the Great Strength Demon Ape has incredibly strong resistance towards magic. General magic is rendered completely useless against it, in addition, its pure strength actually puts it in the top five amongst Demon Beasts.

Qi Shi leaps onto the back of the Great Strength Demon Ape urging it forward.

Seven of them attack together.

However Xie Aoyu doesn't even glance at six of them, his eyes are only on Sorsk. This person he must definitely kill! Like smoke he elusively steps forward, the blade in his hands flashing like lightning in every direction.

Sorsk attempts to barely resist the multiple strikes, the fan in his hand quivering violently.

Whiz whiz whiz whiz!

Innumerable silver lights explode forwards.

“Break for me!”

Xie Aoyu shouts as the Lightning Spirit Saint Blade immediately releases a scarlet red colored lightning, bringing with it a fierce uplift of wind from the heavens. The silver lights are cleaved in half, Sorsk's complexion immediately changes. His speed is not enough to support him to safely retreat anymore, so he desperately swings his fan in an attempt to resist the upcoming crisis.

Kacha!

The blade splits apart Sorsk's fan.

Ding ding dang dang!

An incomparably clear sound rings out as the fan in Sorsk's hands breaks into hundreds of needles. These needles immediately surround the entire place, densely packing the cavern, they can be seen everywhere!

Rumbling!

The attacks of the other six people finally arrive. Forcing Xie Aoyu back. His lightning Spirit Saint Blade keeps off the attack

coming from Qi Shi, suppressing the long spear in Qi Shi's hand. Qi Shi immediately calls out, stirring his Douqi to the maximum in this strike.

However Xie Aoyu has simply not resisted the attack, but by using the repelling force, he pushes himself into the air until he is nearly 7-8 meters in the air, safely landing on a megalith. Thus causing all the other attacks miss their target.

“Prepare to die!” Xie Aoyu speaks lightly as a cold glint of killing intent flashes through his eyes.

This single statement immediately causes Sorsk and company's complexions to grow dark.

Even the bystanders are incomparably shocked. Your opponents are seven big masters, yet you claim you can murder people? Alone?!?!

“Brother, this fellow is completely crazy,” on a hilltop several hundred meters away a hooked nose man, who appears to be in his thirties smiles, “but his strength is actually pretty good”.

Next to this man is another middle aged man. On the forehead of this middle aged person is the design of a black lotus, he lightly says “Although he has great strength, the key in this fight is speed. According to our investigation, this child used to be unable to practice Douqi. Until now, it hasn't even been 3 years since he started, he clearly has a tremendous potential.”

The hooked nose man scoffs, “So what if he has a lot of potential? He fights with only these seven people, but can it be he could face our people? Can challenge these seven people now is also not knowing the immensity of heaven and earth, even surviving this is impossible”.

“Indeed, he does not have any stratagem to successfully fend of these seven people.” The middle aged man with the black lotus tattoo spoke softly, “looks like we won’t need to deal with him personally.”

Just as his voice fell, Xie Aoyu jumps down from the megalith.

A tremendous aura presses forward with the indomitable will and sharpness of a dragon emperor rocking the world. The true meaning of If I cannot do it, who can is perfectly portrayed!

Boundless strength overlays itself upon the Lightning Spirit Saint Blade, however it does not violently shoot forward. Instead it is the human and blade unite! A single blade attacks the seven bandits in one fell swoop.

His new Ascension level’s comprehension, power and influence is completely displayed in that one strike.

The seven bandits all attack together in response.

As the eight people’s frontage collides in a fierce explosive sound, the seven bandits are forced back one step. However Xie Aoyu

remain entirely still as the Lightning Spirit Saint Blade flies back into his hand.

No one thinks Xie Aoyu will attack in such an unexpected manner, however they are not given the time to think as a sad and pitiful yell spreads across the room.

Valentinez from the Imperial Crown mercenary Group's bodies collapse, separated with a purple glow. But that purple glow belongs to the hand of Xie Aoyu!

The bystanders are frozen in shock.

He... died!

Xie Aoyu actually does not say anything, only unassumingly draws forward, one step at a time arriving in front of the remaining bandits. With a single sweep of the Lightning Spirit Saint Blade a hurricane of Douqi sweeps across two.

Shocked to their very souls, the remaining people have completely forgotten about face. Who could care about such a thing when facing the options of life or death?

Infinite Spinning Sword!

A blade leaves his hand, as three blades of light circle forward to the people they were projected on. Bringing about their sentence of doom.

Three people immediately step forward with a palm attack before hurriedly retreating.

Xie Aoyu easily dodges as his body rushes forward bearing the attack of Sorsk and appearing in front of the Great Strength Demon Ape.

Roar!

The Great Strength Demon Ape stands to block Xie Aoyu's way.

"Get Lost!" Xie Aoyu flicks his left arm, completely disregarding the Great Strength Demon ape.

That full sized Great Strength Demon ape weighs nearly 800 jin, however with a mere flick of Xie Aoyu's hand, it was sent flying horizontally. One should know that Xie Aoyu's arm protector has a thousand jin earth soul stone! The might of his flick, is incomparable to others around the same level.

Six of the previous standing bandits are now either dead or wounded and drawing back. There was no longer a trace of their previous countenances, only the word pathetic could be used to describe the current versions of them.

In front of Xie Aoyu's abnormal performance, let alone these bystanders, even the two middle aged men from the distance cannot believe their eyes!

“Sorsk!”

Xie Aoyu turns to face the last man standing. The reason he did not hit Sorsk earlier, was because this man dared to start the killing against him.

The fan in Sorsk’s hand breaks apart into two halves. Immediately discarding it he swipes his arms, a soft sword appearing in his hands.

This sword releases a bone chilling light, the malignant aura is incredibly dense around it. Sorsk’s face immediately overflows with his smiles, as if in his hand is a miracle!

The bandits and thief who see that soft sword are shocked. “Whirling Saint Sword!”

Similar to people’s realms of cultivation, weapons are also divided by strength. Emperor level weapons are nearly impossible to find, but as for saint swords although they too are rare, but they are not nearly as uncommon. However this Whirling Saint Sword is actually recognized as one of the top 3 saint swords, for it had actually cut apart another saint sword before!

“Whirling Saint Sword, Whirling King, I stand whirling on the earth,” Sorsk rapidly chants a series of strange phrases.

“Whirling Secret Curse!”

Chapter 97: The Secret Spell VS Red Lightning (Part 1)

Xie Aoyu spared sorsk this seemingly weak guy and didn't treat him as his sole enemy , but he didn't imagine that this guy had such strength.

not only does he have the dancing Saint sword , but he also has the long lost secret spell.

once this secret spell is mastered , i'm afraid right now only a very few will know of it's real power .

(Mirnouch : i thinks there is more than one secret spell or incantation but this one is for that sword maybe .)

“Earth Escape Technique!”

Xie Aoyu escaped 14 meters.

he has seen in many books dancing in the presence of a secret spell ,even so he doesn't know of it's power , but no matter how , if you want to know the best way is to block.

“help him complete the spell ” Jowers roared.

“The elegant dancing Earth guardians of the secret spell! “Sorsk was using his maximum speed to completes the secret spell ,

dancing Saint sword in his hand wielded it suddenly then shouted loudly “dancing protector!”

“Thump”

The earth is shivering.

The mountain peak is swaying.

Everyone was shocked , that almost nobody can stay still , a huge power was coming out of the ground , Xie Aoyu couldn't help but canceling Earth Escape Technique and coming out of the ground.

Four forms emitted from underground.

They were giant with a three meters and four feet in height, all wearing a yellow armor, wielding long handled axes, they were the earth protector summoned by the secret spell .

“Kill!” “Sorsk thundered.

the four earth protectors howled, wielding their great axes they fiercely attacked Xie Aoyu.

Xie Aoyu dropped from a high altitude , while landing he took advantage of the fall power to roll and evade , behind his back sounded a bang , a giant's great axe drop down to where he was blasting the earth open.

he evades and enters the ground.

Comes out!” The sorsk dancing Saint sword suddenly inserted underground.

“Whiz!”.

Xie Aoyu indeed immediately jumped , it’s not sorsk power , because his secret spell’s power hasn’t been transmitted.

Xie Aoyu appeared behind the earth protector , and chopped the blade at its neck.

“Bang!”.

Lightning Spirit Saint Blade hits hard its nape , but a dull sound came out.

That earth protector neck is perfect, but Xie Aoyu amrs were shaken and tingled with numbness.

” Ha Ha , How can my secret spell be so easily broken ” sorsk said while laughing heartily.

the four earth protector roared and moved to besiege Xie Aoyu .

Xie Aoyu Dodged , in his mind he was constantly thinking of how to defeat them , eyeing his timing, separately attacked the four Earth protector's feet, legs, torso, arms, head, but to no avail.

“Bang!”

the great axe falls.

Xie Aoyu moves sideways to avoid , but the second one come at him , they were attacking one after the other , without giving him the opportunity to use his speed.

the four earth protector were using coordinated movement as if they were human.

“Whiz! Whiz! ”

Xie Aoyu twice ducked away from the attack, the fourth axe was coming, and this time he did not Dodge, but to chop out.

“Dang”

a deafening sound transmitted .

Xie Aoyu body turns up, sending up one foot, kicking that Earth protectors face , on which the latter used his helmet to fight back.

“Bang!”

his feet tread heavily on it.

The earth protector backs up backward one step , Xie Aoyu seemed like a meteor heading to The earth protectors way.

“Block him!” sorsk shouted loudly.

hearing him the other three earth protector attack with full power.

Xie Aoyu laughed , than disappeared into the ground.

Earth Escape Technique!

before the earth protectors force him out , in the blink of an eye he came out already 8 meters away .

after he fought them , he seemed accustomed to their speed and attack range.

after coming out of the ground he immediately jumped up .

a five meters leap.

“sorsk meet my blade”Xie Aoyu already far from the attack

scopes of four earth protectors.

“Not good!” say sorsk startled.

Xie Aoyu wouldn't allow him to display his secret spell again he attacked at full power.

He brandished a blade and cut down.

the startled sorsk suddenly smiled , he waved his dancing Saint sword.

“Thump!”

the four earth protector suddenly disappear.

But above that dancing Saint sword actually a strange brown halo appears, at the back of sorsk a ten meters super giant emerge , its has the same appearance of those four earth protectors.

Dies!” Sol Skjod ferociously said with a smile , dancing Saint sword attacked fully.

Saint Blade VS Saint sword.

both Unable to avoid them.

“Dang”

The Xie Aoyu whole body trembled, as if an indescribable boundless strengths transmitted from the dancing Saint sword, shook his five main internal organs , his arm arm tingled with numbness , he almost could not hold Lightning Spirit Saint Blade anymore ,he tasted a something sweet in his throat , blood almost spurted out , he suppressed the urge to spat the blood , and flew backward while upside down.

Sorsk in contrast just took a step backwards.

however sorsk gasped , he was using the secret spell.

“you could block an attack while i’m using the secret spell , you didn’t live in vain” sorsk killing intent erupted like a volcano , he is determined to kill Xie Aoyu no matter what.

he was used the saint sword and the secret spell , but still Xie Aoyu could resist , that meant that in the younger generation , Xie Aoyu Holds a great position.

sorsk couldn’t think.

the bystander stared in daze , in the mainland , such word spread , the power will recede only to those strong cultivators , only them could establish there own spell.

the so called establish a new spell , it has to be a an spell-caster ,

and that has a powerful meaning.

an enchanter is a respected occupation , but in the ten billions of people only a thousand or so could be an enchanter bu the other occupation could have survival millions.

that is a spell-caster.

although the spell-caster skills are unique , they're lost , after a few command , the common people understood the fearfulness of a spell caster , and sorsk here is spell-caster.

his skill maybe different from the one who made that spell ,but to understand the secret spell of the dancing saint , his powerful .

“brother , i remember that is a spell-caster's view , a spirit level spell-caster can destroy an ascension level master completely with his hands down right?” hook-nosed man said.

The black lotus man said ” indeed , in addition he using the dancing saint sword to with the spell and that will reduce the consumption rate of qi , he will win without a doubt”.

“when Xie Aoyu dies , his saint blade will be ours , and all his battle technique , look at his flight technique , even a casual one is so formidable” hook-nosed man said.

” it's the first time i hear you envy someones martial art technique ” Black Lotus said with a smile “but i think in his spatial

ring there should be at least one or two good martial art technique , according to our investigations , this boy didn't have any good martial art techniques , so if there are two we can divide between us two brothers”

hook-nosed man eyes shone and said with a smile “good i cant wait for him to die”.

The black lotus man said with a smile “he can't contend against that secret spell , he will die without a doubt”.

sorsk killing intent soared as he wielded his dancing saint sword again.

spark of brown halo suddenly filled the air between heaven and Earth.

giant stood high in the sky Like a tower, attacked with a huge palm that seemed seems to be able to smash a whole mountain , it excluded a suffocating invisible pressure.

“Scarlet Electric Fulminating cut” Xie Aoyu shouted loudly.

His body burst with an innumerable electric lights , a grand energy focused on a single point.

“Bang!”.

red light and brown light clashed .

a powerful explosive spread.

Xie Aoyu took two steps back , and couldn't stay still , that burst of yellow light appears again as a small sword, a sharp sound came out of the blue.

it hits Xie Aoyu.

Xie Ao Yu was shot out, falling heavily to the ground.

“HA HA, big brother, we went to the martial art techniques , Gold Eater Beast corpse,gold Shengmu, Lightning Spirit Saint Blade, Ha Ha, it's like a dream ” hook-nosed man said excitedly .

the black lotus man nodded while smiling .

both came from afar.

when he saw Bing Wu face dimly , he saw her with a mournful face , her charming eyes float towipe tears , his heart ached .

“dying under my secret spell of the dancing saint sword is your honor”sorsk says with a sneer.

“Bang bang bang”.

the strength of that spell is as strong as a sharp blade , and it was hammering on Xie Aoyu crazily, with incomparable quick speed , he want to kill him through his heart.

The heart is the basis of person. (Mirnouch : u don't say !-_-)

Once the heart was destroyed, then Xie Aoyu will die without doubt.

the secret spell is unusually strong but when it got there it met with the tri-colored sphere .

the purple part of the sphere that symbolize the the scarlet red lightning overflowed, the secret spell instantaneously shattered .

Xie Aoyu circulated The red lightning through his eight arteries , his lost qi recovered quickly , the strength once more return to him , than he stood slowly.

Chapter 98: The Secret Spell VS Red Lightning (Part 2)

Xie Aoyu stands up , cracked his while doing some stretching .

“Come!”

reaching out his hands toward Lightning Spirit Saint Blade while gasping the void.

Lightning Spirit Saint Blade shivers slightly, rises straight from the ground, then flies into his hand directly.

burst of red lightning flew from Xie Aoyu to enter the Lightning Spirit Saint Blade , the blade as if he was excited shivers violently.

“Clank”.

Blade cry!

“Roar”

After stretching a bit , Xie Aoyu face upwards and let out a long loud cry.

red light around Xie Aoyu Rippled back and forth , his uncombed hair formed waves as if dancing , the red luster of the lightning

radiated .

This is true red lightning.

when his Shadow Demon Spirit Fire and Earth Pulmonary Heart Flame fused , they became a wonderful profound mutation its foundation is the fire, blends rupturing of fire, actually changes into the electricity, the set thunder verve.

“it’s so wonderful”

“so cool”.

Many women in the crowd of onlookers, were captured by Xie Aoyu cool look, screams.

Li Chaofeng looking at this , curled his lips and said “Xie Aoyu can seduce women too but this appearance is so wild” there was blood stains in his palm from pressing his fingernails too much on it.

“do you envy him?”he didn’t know when Luo Ke appeared by his side.

“i also want to have an out break like this” Li Chaofeng said while laughing dryly”so when other did , i can only envy them”.

not far away standing De Lei the one who fought several hundred

rounds with Luo Ke, his couldn't determine who will win and who will lose emits six characters, "difficult, it is very difficult! truly Very difficult!".

red thunder and lightning kept on coming out of the tri-colored sphere ,making Xie Aoyu feels as if he can destroy the heavens with one fist.

He isn't such heroic spirit.

Lightning Spirit Saint Blade raises up , the red lightning spread toward the central location of the blade , it was like a red dragon.

Purple blade scarlet electricity!

"it's an honor"Sorsk surface dew different color " rumors that this world has odd fire, and different water, two different profound existences , they can contend against the spell powers , the water spirit are in the sea , most are in the sea clan has , other so-called winds, earth, thunder and light, dark, is only the speculation exists, never anyone obtained them,i didn't thought that you Xie Aoyu has a thunder spirit".

sorsk secret spell against Xie Aoyu thunder spirit.

Different secret, similar terror!

under the thunder spirit the mutation qi became instill , Xie Aoyu strength fully recovered , , his not clear about his battle

efficiency , but he does understand that without the thunder spirit he can defeat an ascension level master , with the thunder spirit , he can have final say with cloud level expert.

the Thunder spirit is his strongest strength.

Infinite Spinning Sword of Fights Technique farfight!

Xie Aoyu stands and aim for the kill.

Lightning Spirit Saint Blade howls , it drown an arc with a purple cold glow , red halo ,sorsk high speed operation of the secret spell made him confident , a cold flash surfaced in his eyes , locking Lightning Spirit Saint Blade , he could easily catch it.

dancing saint secret spell.

sorsk is holding up dancing Saint sword with a single hand , this time much more violent than before using cruel methods.

“Bang!”.

the secret spell resisting the thunder spirit successfully .

Both strength counter-balances mutually.

Sorsk sneer the skill turns, the dancing Saint sword uses the

skillful vigor , he wanted to offload the strength contained in the Lightning Spirit Saint Blade so he can capture it.

This is a Saint Blade!

“Whiz!”.

The dancing Saint sword just shivered,the Lightning Spirit Saint Blade that is similar to a controlling general , is actually surrounding dancing Saint sword , the sharp blade point scratch sorsk across the nose.

The chilly blade point made sorsk so shocked that he broke out in a cold sweat.

he didn't thought that Xie aoyu Blade skills are so exquisite , regarding the concealed or hidden weapon, or some strange towing saber plays , but throwing blade , he didn't hear anything about a skill like that.

Lightning Spirit Saint Blade circled around, with the strength of dancing Saint sword, it flew back and returned to Xie Aoyu's hand.

first the blade attacks and now the humans attacks.

Infinite Spinning Sword of close combat!

the blade in hand turn to three.

“Dang Dang Dang”.

Three bangs, sorsk draws back continually three steps, although his secret spell is strong, it was actually counter-balanced by Spirit Thunder, he couldn't display his full power, but in term of qi his no better than Xie Aoyu.

Xie Aoyu was getting the upper hand, he didn't give him the opportunity

Earth Escape Technique!.

A retreat five meters, he comes out on the left side of sorsk.

(Mirnouch : i couldn't understand who moved beside who i hope this is rigth)

“Whiz!”.

Sorsk is smart, he disappeared for a moment, then also move, avoiding Xie Aoyu attack, while his body suffused with a golden light.

„Strength of replenishment my body dancing king!” sorsk lifts the dancing Saint sword up high , then shouted loudly.

“!”

a dark space appeared tearing the sky .

A yellow beam from within that space storms out, falls above the dancing Saint sword, quickly spread to sorsk's body.

The sorsk whole body emits dazzling golden light, as if there is a layer of Golden Armor forming around his body , that dancing Saint sword also projects together the swift and fierce sword Qi, his imposing manner inflates unceasingly.

“De Lei, you and him are very similarly crazy.” The Li Chaofeng peak said.

De Lei Lightly said “a little similar , since our secret spell , definitively have big differences” His eyes were squinting, dead stare at sorsk, as if he could see through his soul.

sorsk eyes radiate with strength and shot out two golden beam.

Secret spell : the sword.

surreptitious sword incantation still what causes heavy losses to Xie Aoyu's Qi.

“Scarlet Electric Fulminating cuts!”

Xie Aoyu didn't restrain himself , and that's what suited fighting

with the thunder spirit best.

Not a myriad of Red lightning flashes, only then Spirit Thunder submerges in Lightning Spirit Saint Blade , together with Xie Aoyu wielding , Thunder Spirit also changes to a projecting scarlet red cold brightness .

“brother , who did you say will win ” the hook nosed man said.

The black lotus man said “i don’t know”.

the hook nosed man looked at black lotus flower man , they were certain before that Xie Aoyu will loose miserably , who knows people always making mistake , this might be one , this time he can only smile bitterly while saying “i can’t look”.

Two strengths collide instantaneously.

“Bang!”.

the powerful collision forced them 34 meter backward respectively before they steadied themselves .

“Earth protector! “ sorsk didn’t think that there unique skill used , he used the dancing king spell to replenish his energy , he couldn’t expect the thunder spirit and his secret spell are equally matched , he couldn’t help but be shocked.

How could he know that Xie Aoyu Spirit Thunder is not formed from Thunder and Lightning, but a two fire fused, it gathered the power of fire and thunder, its might is far greater than normal thunder spirit they couldn't be compared.

“Thump”.

Earth tremor.

Six earth protectors stood up from the ground.

With the dancing king spell, his strength has also been promoted, even his earth protector quality has been increased.

Chapter 99: The Secret Spell vs. Red Lightning (Part 3)

Just now that earth protector made Xie Aoyu suffer loss , he managed to escape again , he was so close to kill sorsk , but he saw it again (the earth protector) so he won't let it go easily.

his Lightning Spirit Saint Blade attacked without waiting for the earth protector to begin his attack.

four scarlet red electric light shot out.

“Bang bang bang bang bang bang”

Six dull thumping sound came out.

The body of that six big earth protectors was covered by the scarlet red electric light immediately, the brown ray scatters unceasingly all around.

As the brown ray scatters in all directions, that three meters high stature also crumbled rapidly .

“!”.

sorsk emitted a painful cry , he was on one knee, the dancing saint sword on the ground , a touch of blood flow from it.

That sword is life-like, so strange.

“break!!”

Xie Aoyu inserted the Lightning Spirit Saint Blade backhandedly at the ground.

the thunder spirit injected to the ground , Xie Aoyu as the center , under his foot radiates the innumerable scarlet red electric lights , each as thick as a fist.

“Rumble”

Six big earth protectors blasted open immediately.

They rupture, sorsk also let out a shrill scream and suddenly stood up from the ground, he got a wound between the eyebrows, blood gurgling streams.

The dancing Saint sword has been also incarnadine by the blood.

” you pushed me to this ” sorsk fiercely says .

Xie Aoyu sneers saying: “pushed you? I must kill you!”.

“Ha Ha”.

sorsk laughed wildly , with his laughter , the dancing Saint sword fiercely tremored , the above blood quickly gathered at the sharp point of the sword , other areas show what they really are , and the wound between his eyebrows healed at a fast speed , his golden aura replaced by a red one.

“No, sorsk,don’t! ” Jowers cried loudly .

sorsk as if he didn’t hear, exclaimed crazily: “secret spell : Blood dances !”

His unreal mail-armor and helmet changes into the blood red suddenly, along with it disappearance, but the dancing Saint sword actually spreads a sad and shrill roaring sound , likes the howl of million of ghosts.

” it seems that the dancing sword saint secret record didn’t hold one or two skills only , good stuff”Xie Aoyu said with a smile.

“you are smart , i will tell you anyway , in the record of the dancing sword saint there is 18 kind of spell , and you are about to suffer the worst spell mentioned blood secret spell ” sorsk laughed fiercely while smiling.

Xie Aoyu shows a faint smile , then disappeared , he was nowhere to be found .

Earth Escape Technique!

Sorsk ears erect, his eyes shot out cold bursts.

Brush!

A person's shadow flashes, Xie Aoyu appears in his right.

sorsk stab his sword backhandedly , his blood secret spell still not complete , Xie Aoyu Earth Escape Technique after all is extremely mysterious , he didn't dare to pull ranks , even if it's only 50% , it's still fearful.

Who would have thought facing the dancing Saint sword, Xie Aoyu is actually using his left hand to grasp it.

” ”

The scarlet red electric light is glittering on the left hand of Xie Aoyu, his palm like eagle claw, “bang”, seized the dancing Saint sword.

the thunder spirit shakes the secret spell.

both resists , Xie Aoyu's Lightning Spirit Saint Blade also moves , cuts slantingly.

he must cut sorsk down.

This move is too risky.

has he been slightly careless , the dancing saint sword might cut his hands , after all his a saint sword and in addition to the secret spell , but unexpectedly , also to sorsk surprise , when he responded with the powerful attack of the blood secret spell , the Lightning Spirit Saint Blade fell.

Abandoning the sword, may maintain his life.

keep the sword , lose his life.

he hated this change of aspect, the move that he made with determined effort didn't come to play , he couldn't use his blood secret spell.

facing this life and death situation, sorsk could only hatefully choose to live.

he didn't want to die .

to live he can only give up the dancing sword , because that dancing Saint sword was covered by the finger of Xie Aoyu, the thunder spirit pulling hard, he couldn't retreat with it.

hatefully sorsk loosened his hand , then fled to distant place.

he let go of it , the dancing saint sword vibrate and the blood that surge to secret spell also dissipated , the sword descended into Xie Aoyu hands.

“you don’t have The dancing saint sword anymore, so how will you fight me now ?”said Xie Aoyu with a sneer.

“Right?” sorsk said with a smile.

Xie Aoyu face darkened .

Sorsk, he was the only known today, but from Luo Ke mouth he had known that is the fellow who likes to playing tricks , in addition before , the performance in Gold Eater Beast cave, has proven this person sinister and deceitful.

was his Dancing saint sword given to me intentionally ?

This idea just braved, sees the blood light fast circulation on dancing Saint sword sword point, he knows the issue, he has to throw that sword right away.

“Bang!”

That dancing Saint sword shoot in the air a light more than two metres long , half meter wide blood red sword glow,that pierced a hill.

“duo!”

dancing sword inserted into the ground.

Xie Aoyu called darkly , he really was about to be deceived by sorsk , this fellow was too sinister , he must kill him.

Xie Aoyu Brandished his sword ready to kill.

Sol Skjod saw with own eyes that the scheme has not succeeded, he must take back the dancing saint sword and retreat , and give up resisting.

“Whiz!”

Infinite Spinning Sword of farfight.

Xie Aoyu has used the strongest strength.

sorsk almost had his nose cut off , he was resisting hardly , the thunder spirit shaking off the secret spell , he then lowered his head and moved aside.

“Careful behind!” Jowers was startled and called out.

Sharp breaking the wind coming from behind, hum sorsk head almost blew up, he didn't expect Lightning Spirit Saint Blade

didn't rotate back into the hands of Xie Aoyu, but reversed it back again, sorsk felt the crisis and tried to twist the body.

“!”

blood red light come out of the Lightning Spirit Saint Blade.

An arm departs from sorsk's body .

Xie Aoyu holds Lightning Spirit Saint Blade.

“SORSK” Jowers is calling out in alarm overrunning.

Sorsk pain called out with a broken left arm, eyes, lost consciousness, but his right hand still tightly seize the dancing saint sword.

The Xie Aoyu quick steps forward.

he must kill the two of them , especially sorsk , his schemes are pretty deep , he couldn't keep him alive , he must kill him now.

